

THE ROBBER BRIDE

Margaret Atwood

Book Jacket Information

WINNER OF THE 2000
BOOKER PRIZE

Even Zenia's name is enough to provoke the old sense of outrage, of humiliation and confused pain. The truth is that at certain times - early mornings, the middle of the night -

she finds it hard to believe that Zenia is really dead.'

Zenia is beautiful, smart and greedy; by turns manipulative and vulnerable, needy and ruthless; a man's dream and a woman's nightmare. She is also dead. Just to make absolutely sure Tony, Roz and Charis are there for the funeral. But five years on, as the three women share a sisterly lunch, the impossible happens: 'with waves of ill will flowing out of her like cosmic radiation', Zenia is back ...

Margaret Atwood was born in Ottawa in 1939 and spent much of her early life in northern Ontario and Quebec. She is Canada's most eminent novelist and poet and has published more

than thirty books of fiction, poetry and critical essays. Her novels include *The Handmaid's Tale*,

Cat's Eye and *Alias Grace*, all of which were shortlisted for the Booker Prize and *The Blind Assassin*, which won the 2000 Booker Prize. Her work has been translated into thirty-three languages and she is the recipient of many literary awards and honours, including the Sunday

Times Author of the Year in 1993 and the Arthur C. Clarke Award for Science Fiction.

Margaret Atwood lives in Toronto with the writer Graeme Gibson.

Also by Margaret Atwood

FICTION

The Edible Woman *Surfacing* *Lady Oracle* *Life Before Man* *Bodily Harm* *The Handmaid's Tale* *Cat's Eye* *Alias Grace* *The Blind Assassin*

SHORT FICTION *Murder in the Dark* *Good Bones* *Bones and Murder*

SHORT STORIES *Dancing Girls* *Bluebeard's Egg* *Wilderness Tips*

POETRY

Eating Fire: Selected Poetry 1965-1995

A rattlesnake that doesn't bite teaches you nothing.

- JESSAMYN WEST

Only what is entirely lost demands to be endlessly named: there is.; a mania to call the lost thing until it returns.

- GLTNTER GRASS

Illusion is the first of all pleasures.

- OSCAR WILDE

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to thank the following for their help: my agents Phoebe Larmore and Vivienne Schuster; my editors Ellen Seligman, Nan A. Talese, and Liz Calder; David Kimmel, for helping with some of the historical details; Barbara Czarnecki, Judi Levita, Marly Rusoff Sarah Beale, and Claudia Hill-Norton; Joan Sheppard, Donya Peroff, and Sarah Cooper; Michael Bradley, Garry Foster, Kathy Minialoff; Gene Goldberg, and Alison Parker; Rose Tornato. Thanks also to Charles and Julie Woodsworth, to Dorris Heffron, and to John and Christine O'Keefe, for premises rendered. ,
John Keegan's *The Face of Battle* and *The Mask of Command* were most useful for

background, as were *None Is Too Many* by Irving Abella and Harold Troper and *The War Against the Jews*, by Lucy S. Dawidowicz; and also for specific battles and events, Richard Erdoes's *A.D. 1000* and *The Unknown South of France* by Henry and Margaret Reuss. The assassination of ballistics expert Gerald Bull is dealt with in *Bull's Eye*, by James Adams, and in *Wilderness of Mirrors*, by Dale Grant.

The image of the body as a lampshade is courtesy Lenore Mendelson Atwood; the expression "brain snot" is courtesy E J.A. Gibson. The red-and-white footprints recall a story told to me by Earle Birney; the toboggan incident and the black-painted apartment from Graeme Gibson; the ghost as dry rice was suggested by an episode recounted by P K. Page; the notion of a flesh dress came from James Reaney's poem "Doomsday, or the Red-Headed Woodpecker"; the tale of the heroic German aunt was suggested partly by Thomas Karl Maria Schwarz; and the professor who disallowed military essay topics for women from an anecdote related by Susan Crean.

Zenia is pronounced with a long e, as in seen; Charis with a hard c as in karma. The Teutones (second century B.C.) are distinct from the Teutons (tenth century A.D.).

For Graeme and Jess, and for Ruth, Phoebe, Rosie, and Anna

And Absent Friends

CONTENTS

Onset 3 The Toxique 7 Black Enamel 129 Weasel Nights 231 The Robber Bride
345 The
Toxique 477 Outcome 553

ONSET

The story of Zenia ought to begin when Zenia began. It must have been someplace long ago

and distant in space, thinks Tony; someplace bruised, and very tangled. A European print, hand-tinted, ochre-coloured, with dusty sunlight and a lot of bushes in it - bushes with thick leaves and ancient twisted roots, behind which, out of sight in the undergrowth and hinted at only by a boot protruding, or a slack hand, something ordinary but horrifying is taking place. Or this is the impression Tony has been left with. But so much has been erased, so much has been bandaged over, so much deliberately snarled, that Tony isn't sure any longer which

of Zenia's accounts of herself was true. She can hardly ask now and even if she could, Zenia

wouldn't answer. Or she would he. She would lie earnestly, with a catch in her voice, a quaver

of suppressed grief, or she would he haltingly, as if confessing; or she would lie with a cool, defiant anger, and Tony would believe her. She has before.

Pick any strand and snip, and history comes unravelled. This is how Tony begins one of her more convoluted lectures, the one on the dynamics of spontaneous massacres. The metaphor

is of weaving or else of knitting, and of sewing scissors. She likes using it: she likes the faint

shock on the faces of her listeners. It's the mix of domestic image and mass bloodshed that does it to them; a mix that would have been appreciated by Zenia, who enjoyed such turbulence, such violent contradictions. More than enjoyed: created. Why is still unclear.

Tony doesn't know why she feels compelled to know. Who cares why, at this distance? A disaster is a disaster; those hurt by

it remain hurt, those killed remain killed, the rubble remains rubble. Talk of causes is beside the

point. Zenia was a bad business, and should be left alone. Why try to decode her motives?

But Zenia is also a puzzle, a knot: if Tony could just find a loose end and pull, a great deal would come free, for everyone involved, and for herself as well. Or this is her hope. She has a historian's belief in the salutary power of explanations. Where to start is the problem, because nothing begins when it begins and nothing's over when it's over, and everything needs a preface: a preface, a postscript, a chart of simultaneous events. History is a construct, she tells her students. Any point of entry is possible and all choices are arbitrary. Still, there are definitive moments, moments we use as references, because they break our sense of continuity, they change the direction of time. We can look at these events and we can say that after them things were never the same again. They provide beginnings for us, and endings too. Births and deaths, for instance, and marriages. And wars. It's the wars that interest Tony, despite her lace-edged collars. She likes clear outcomes. So did Zenia, or so Tony thought once. Now, she can hardly tell. An arbitrary choice then, a definitive moment: October 23, 1990. It's a bright clear day, unseasonably warm. It's a Tuesday. The Soviet bloc is crumbling, the old maps are dissolving, the Eastern tribes are on the move again across the shifting borders. There's trouble in the Gulf, the real estate market is crashing, and a large hole has developed in the ozone layer. The sun moves into Scorpio, Tony has lunch at the Toxique with her two friends Roz and Charis, a slight breeze blows in over Lake Ontario, and Zenia returns from the dead.

THE TOXIQUE

TONY

Tony gets up at six-thirty, as she always does. West sleeps on, groaning a little. Probably in his dreams he's shouting; sounds in dreams are always louder. Tony inspects his sleeping face, his angular jaw-line relaxed to softness, his unearthly blue hermit's eyes so gently closed. She's happy he's still alive: women live longer than men and men have weak hearts, sometimes they just keel over, and although she and West aren't old - they're hardly old at all - still, women her age have awakened in the morning to find dead men beside them. Tony does not consider this a morbid thought. She's happy in a more general way, too. She's happy that West is on this earth at all, and in this house, and that he goes to sleep every night beside her and not somewhere else. Despite everything, despite Zenia; he's still here. It seems a miracle really. Some days she can't get over it. Quietly, so as not to wake him, she gropes for her glasses on the night-table, then slides down

out of the bed. She pulls on her Viyella dressing gown and her cotton socks and her grey wool work socks over them, and stuffs her bundled feet into her slippers. She suffers from cold feet, a sign of low blood pressure. The slippers are in the form of raccoons, and were given to her by Roz, many years ago, for reasons best known to Roz. They're the duplicates of the slippers Roz gave her eight-year-old twins at the time; they're even the same foot size. The raccoons are somewhat ratty by now and one of them is missing an eye, but Tony has never been good at throwing things out.

On her insulated feet she makes her way stealthily down the hall to her study. She prefers to spend an hour in there first thing every morning; she finds it concentrates her mind. There's an eastern exposure, so she catches the sunrise when there is one. Today there is.

Her study has new green curtains in a palm-tree-and-exoticfruit print, and an easy chair with matching cushions. Roz helped her choose the print, and talked her into paying the price,

which was higher than what Tony would have paid if she'd been alone. Listen to me, sweetie,

said Roz. Now this - this! is a bargain. Anyway, it's for the place where you think! It's your mental

environment! Get rid of those dull old navy blue sailboats! You owe it to yourself. There are days when

Tony is overwhelmed by the trumpet vines and the orange mangoes, or whatever they are; but

she's intimidated by interior decoration, and finds Roz's expertise hard to resist.

She feels more at home with the rest of the study. Books and papers are stacked in piles on

the carpet; on the wall there's a print of the Battle of Trafalgar, and another one of Laura Secord, in unlikely white, driving her mythical cow through the American lines to warn the British during the War of 1812. Armfuls of dog-eared war memoirs and collections of letters and foxed volumes of front-line reportage by long-forgotten journalists are stuffed into the olive green bookcase, along with several copies of Tony's two published books, Five Ambushes

and Four Lost Causes. Meticulously researched; a refreshing new interpretation, say the reviews quoted

on the quality paperbacks. Sensationalistic; overly digressive; marred by obsessive detail, say those

not quoted. Tony's face, owl-eyed and elf-nosed and younger than her face is now, goggles out from the back covers, frowning slightly in an attempt to look substantial.

In addition to a study desk she has an architect's drawing board with a high swivelling stool that renders her instantly taller. She uses it for marking student term papers: she likes to

perch up

there on the stool, swinging her short legs, with the papers on a slant in front of her, and correct

from a judicious distance, as if painting. The truth is that she's getting far-sighted as well as the

near-sighted she's always been. Bifocals will soon be her fate.

She marks with her left hand, using different-coloured pencils, which she holds between the

fingers of her right hand like brushes: red for bad comments, blue for good ones, orange for spelling mistakes, and mauve for queries. Sometimes she reverses hands. When each paper is

finished she drops it onto the floor, making a satisfying flurry. To combat boredom she occasionally reads a few sentences out loud to herself, backwards. Seigolonhcet gnitepmoc fo ecneics

eht si raw fo ecneics eht. How true. She has said it herself, many times.

Today she marks quickly, today she's synchronized. Her left hand knows what her right hand is doing. Her two halves are superimposed: there's only a slight penumbra, a slight degree of

slippage.

Tony marks papers until quarter to eight. Sunlight floods the room, made golden by the yellow

leaves outside; a jet flies over; the garbage truck approaches along the street, clanking ,-like a

tank. Tony hears it, slippers hastily down the stairs and into the kitchen, lifts the plastic sack from

its bin, twist-ties it, runs to the front door with it, and scampers down the porch steps, hiking up

her dressing gown. She has to sprint only a short distance before catching up with the truck.

The

men grin at her: they've seen her in her dressing gown before. West is supposed to do the garbage, but he forgets.

She goes back to the kitchen and makes the tea, warming the pot, measuring the leaves carefully, timing the steeping with her big-numbers wristwatch. It was Tony's mother who taught

her about making tea; one of the few useful things she did teach her. Tony has known how to

make tea since she was nine. She can remember standing on the kitchen stool, measuring, pouring,

carrying the cup upstairs, tenderly balanced, to where her mother was lying in bed under the sheet, a rounded mound, white as a snowdrift. How lovely. Put it there. And finding the cup later,

cold, still full.

Begone, Mother, she thinks. Rehtom, enogeb. She banishes her, not for the first time.

West always drinks the tea that Tony makes. He always accepts her offerings. When she goes

upstairs with his cup he's standing by the back window, looking out over the neglected and derelict autumn yard. (Both of them say they will plant' things in it, soon, later. Neither of them

does.) He's already dressed: jeans, and a blue sweatshirt that says Scales & Tails and has a turtle

on it. Some organization devoted to the saving of amphibians and reptiles, which - Tony imagines - doesn't have a very large membership, yet. There are so many other things, these days,

that require saving.

"Here's your tea:" she says.

West bends in several places, like a camel sitting down, in order to kiss her. She raises herself

on tiptoe.

"Sorry about the garbage," he says.

"It's all right," she says, "it wasn't heavy. One egg or two?" Once, during the morning garbage

race, she tripped on her dressing gown and took a header down the front steps. Luckily she landed on the bag itself, which burst. She didn't mention= this to West, though. She's always careful with him. She knows how frangible he is, how subject to breakage.

While boiling the eggs Tony thinks of Zenia: Is it a premonition? Not at all. She frequently thinks

of Zenia, more frequently than when Zenia was alive. Zenia dead is less of a

10

threat, and doesn't have to be shoved away, shoved back into the spidery corner where Tony

keeps her shadows.

Though even Zenia's name is enough to evoke the old sense of outrage, of humiliation and confused pain. Or at least an echo of it. The truth is that at certain times - early mornings, the

middle of the night - she finds it hard to believe that Zenia is really dead. Despite herself, despite the rational part of herself, Tony keeps expecting her to turn up, stroll in through some

unlocked door, climb through a window carelessly left open. It seems improbable that she would simply have evaporated, with nothing left over. There was too much of her: all that malign vitality must have gone somewhere.

Tony slides two slices of bread. into the toaster, then rummages in the cupboard for the jam. Zenia is dead, of course. Lost and gone forever. Dead as a cinder. Every time Tony thinks

this, the air goes into her lungs, then out in a long sigh of relief.

Zenia's memorial service was five years ago, or four and a half. It was in March. Tony can recall the day perfectly, a wet grey day that turned, to sleet later. What surprised her at the time

was that there were so few people there. Men, mostly, with their coat collars turned up. They avoided the front row and kept trying to get behind one another, as if they didn't want to be seen.

None of these men was Roz's runaway husband Mitch, Tony noted with interest and some disappointment, though she was glad for Roz. She could sense Roz craning her neck, riffing

through the faces: she must have expected him to be there, and then what? Then there would

have been a scene.

Charis was looking too, in a less obtrusive way; but if any of these men was Billy, Tony wouldn't have been able to tell, because she'd never met Billy. He'd arrived, then vanished, during the interval when she hadn't been in touch with Charis.

True, Charis had shown her a photo, but the focus was bad and the top of Billy's head was cut

off; and he'd had a beard then. Men's faces changed more than women's did, over time. Or they could change them more, at will. Add facial hair and subtract it.

There was no one at all that Tony knew; except Roz and Charis, of course. They wouldn't have missed it for anything, said Roz. They wanted to see the end of Zenia, make sure she was

now fully (Tony's word) inoperational. Charis's word was peaceful. Roz's was kaput.

The service was unsettling. It seemed a patched-up affair, held at a funeral parlour chapel of a

lumpy, magenta clumsiness that would have filled Zenia with scorn. There were several bunches of flowers, white chrysanthemums. Tony wondered who could have sent them. She hadn't sent any flowers herself.

A blue-suited man who identified himself as Zenia's lawyer - the same man, therefore, who had called Tony to tell her about the service - read out a short tribute to Zenia's good

qualities,

among which courage was listed foremost, though Tony didn't think the manner of Zenia's death had been particularly courageous. Zenia had been blown up during some terrorist rampage or other, in Lebanon; she hadn't been a target, she'd just been in the way. An innocent

bystander, said the lawyer. Tony was sceptical about both words: innocent was never Zenia's

favourite adjective for herself, and bystander was not her typical activity. But the lawyer did not say what she'd really been doing there, on that unnamed street in Beirut. Instead he said she would be long remembered.

"Damn right she will be," Roz whispered to Tony. "And by courage he meant big tits."

Tony felt this was tasteless, as the size of Zenia's tits was surely no longer an issue. In her opinion Roz sometimes went too far.

Zenia herself was present only in spirit, said the lawyer, and

12

also in the form of her ashes, which they would now proceed to the Mount Pleasant Cemetery

to inter. He actually said inter. It had been Zenia's wish, as stated in her will, that the ashes should be interred under a tree.

Interred was very unlike Zenia. So was the tree. In fact, it seemed unlike Zenia to have made a will, or to have had a lawyer at all. But you never knew, people changed. Why, for instance, had Zenia put the three of them on the list of people to be informed in the event of her death? Was it remorse? Or was it some kind of last laugh? If so, Tony failed to get the point.

The lawyer had been no help: all he had was the list of names, or so he'd claimed. Tony could hardly expect him to explain Zenia to her. If anything it should be the other way around.

"Weren't you her friend?" he'd said, accusingly.

"Yes," said Tony. "But that was so long ago:"

"Zenia had an excellent memory," said the lawyer, and sighed. Tony had heard sighs like that before.

It was Roz who insisted they go on to the cemetery after the service. She drove them in her car, her large one. "I want to see where they're putting her, so I can walk the dogs there," she

said. "I'll train them to widdle on the tree. "

"It's not the tree's fault," said Charis indignantly. "You're being uncharitable."

Roz laughed. "Right, sweetie! I'm doing it for you!"

"Roz, you don't have any dogs," said Tony. "I wonder what kind of a tree it is:"

"I'll get some, just for this," said Roz.

"Mulberry," said Charis. "It was in the vestibule, with a label on.

"I don't see how it can possibly grow," said Tony. "It's too cold."

"It'll grow," said Charis, "as long as the buds aren't out yet:"

13

"I hope it gets blight," said Roz. "No, really! She doesn't deserve a tree."

Zenia's ashes were in a sealed metal canister, like a small landmine. Tony was familiar with such canisters, and they depressed her. They did not have the grandeur of coffins. She thought

of the people inside them as having been condensed, like condensed milk.

She thought there would be some sprinkling involved, of what the lawyer had referred to as the cremains, but the canister was not opened up and the ashes weren't sprinkled.

(Afterwards

- after the service, and after her October-morning egg-cooking as well - Tony had occasion to

wonder what had really been in there. Sand, probably, or something disgusting, like dog

turds

or used condoms. That would have been the sort of gesture Zenia would have made, once, when Tony first knew her.)

They stood around in the fine cold drizzle while the canister was planted, and the mulberry tree on top of it. Earth was tamped down. There were no final words said, no words of dismissal. The drizzle began to freeze, and the men in their overcoats hesitated, then wandered

off towards their parked cars.

"I have the uneasy feeling that we've left something out," said Tony, as they walked away.

"Well, there wasn't any singing," said Charis.

"So, like what?" said Roz. "A stake through her heart?" "Maybe what Tony meant was that she was a fellow human being," said Charis.

"Fellow human being, my fat fanny," said Roz. "If she was a fellow human being, I'm the Queen of England."

What Tony meant was less benevolent. She was thinking that for thousands of years, when people died - especially powerful people, especially people who were feared - the survivors had

gone to a lot of trouble. They'd slit the throats of their best

14

horses; they'd buried slaves and favourite wives alive, they'd poured blood into the earth. It hadn't been mourning, it had been appeasement. They'd wanted to show their good will, however spurious, because they'd known the spirit of the dead one would be envious of them

for still being alive.

Maybe I should have sent flowers, thought Tony. But flowers wouldn't have been enough, for Zenia. She would have sneered at flowers. What was needed was a bowl of blood. A bowl

of blood, a bowl of pain, some death. Then maybe she would stay buried.

Tony didn't tell West about the memorial service. He might have gone to it, and fallen to pieces. Or else he might not have gone and then felt guilty, or been upset that she'd attended

without him. He knew Zenia was dead though, he'd seen it in the paper: a small oblong, hidden

in the middle. Canadian Killed in Terrorist Blast. When they'd been young, blast had been a name for a party He hadn't said anything to Tony, but she'd found that page with the piece cut

out of it. They had a tacit agreement never to mention Zenia.

Tony presents the eggs in two ceramic eggcups shaped like chickens that she picked up in France a few years ago. The French liked to make dishes in the shapes of the things that were

going to be served in them; when it came to eating they rarely beat about the bush. Their menus read like a vegetarian's nightmare - hearts of these, brains of that. Tony appreciates this

directness. She has a French fish platter too, in the shape of a fish.

Shopping in general is not her thing, but she has a weakness for souvenirs. She bought these eggcups near the site of the battlefield where General Marius of Rome wiped out a hundred thousand Teutones - or two hundred thousand, depending on who was doing the chronicling - a century before the birth of Christ. By dangling a small advance contingent of his

forces in

15

front of the enemy like bait, he'd decoyed them to his chosen slaughtering-ground. After the battle, three hundred thousand Teutones were sold into slavery, and ninety thousand others

may or may not have been thrown into a pit on Mont Sainte Victoire at the urging of a possibly Syrian prophetess, whose name may or may not have been Martha. She was said to have worn purple robes.

This clothing detail has been passed down through the centuries with firm authority, despite the vagueness of other parts of the story. The battle itself, however, definitely took place: Tony has inspected the terrain: a flat plain, hemmed in on three sides by mountains.

A bad place to fight if you were on the defensive. Pourrieres is the name of the nearby town; it's

still called that, after the smell of the rotting corpses.

Tony does not mention (and has never mentioned) this eggcup connection to West. He would be dismayed, not so much by the rotting Teutones as by her. She once remarked to him

that she could understand those kings of old who used to have their enemies' skulls made into

wine cups. This was a mistake: West likes to think of her as kind and beneficent. And forgiving, of course.

Tony has made coffee, grinding the beans herself she serves it with cream, in defiance of cholesterol. Sooner or later, as their arteries fill with sludge, they will have to give up cream, but

not just yet. West sits eating his egg; he's absorbed in it, like a happy child. The bright primary

colours - the red cups, the yellow tablecloth, the orange plates - give the kitchen a playground

air. His grey hair seems a fluke, some unaccountable transformation that's been worked upon

him overnight. When she first knew him he was blond.

"Good egg," he says. Small things like good eggs delight him, small things like bad eggs depress him. He's easy to please, but difficult to protect.

West, Tony repeats to herself: She says his name from time to

16

time, silently, like a charm. He didn't use to be West. Once - thirty? thirty-two years ago? - he was

Stewart, until he told her how much he hated being called Stew; so she reversed him, and he's

been West ever since. She cheated a little, though: strictly speaking, he should have been Wets.

But that's what happens when you love someone, thinks Tony. You cheat a little.

"What's on your agenda for today?" says West.

"Want some more toast?" says Tony. He nods and she gets up to tend the toaster, pausing to

kiss the top of his head, inhaling his familiar scent of scalp and shampoo. His hair up there is

thinning: soon he'll have a tonsure, like a monk's. For the moment she's taller than he is: it isn't

often she gets such a bird's-eye view.

There's no need for West to be told who she's having lunch with. He doesn't like Roz and Charis. They make him nervous. He feels - rightly - that they know too much about him.

"Nothing very exciting;" she says.

IV

After breakfast West goes up to his third-floor study to work, and Tony changes out of her

dressing gown, into jeans and a cotton pullover, and marks more papers. From upstairs she can hear a rhythmical thumping, punctuated by what sounds like a mixed chorus of mating hyenas, cows being hit with sledgehammers, and tropical birds in pain.

West is a musicologist. Some of what he does is traditional - influences, variants, derivations -

but he's also involved in one of those cross-disciplinary projects that have become so popular

lately. He's mixed up with a bunch of neurophysiologists from the medical school; together they're studying the effects of music on the human brain - different kinds of music, and different

17

kinds of noises, because some of the things West comes up with can hardly be thought of as

music. They want to know which part of the brain is listening, and especially which half of it. They think this information may be useful to stroke victims, and to people who have lost parts of

their brains in car accidents. They wire people's brains up, play the music - or noises - and watch

the results on a coloured computer screen.

West is very excited about all of this. He says it's become clear to him that the brain itself is a

musical instrument, that you can actually compose music on it, on someone else's brain; or you

could, if you had free rein. Tony finds this idea distressing - what if the scientists want to play

something that the person with the brain doesn't want to hear? West says it's only theoretical.

But he has a strong urge to wire up Tony, because of her lefthandedness. Handedness is one

of the things they study. They want to attach electrodes to Tony's head and then have her play

the piano, because the piano is two-handed and the hands both work at the same time, but on

different notations. Tony has avoided this so far by saying she's forgotten how to play, which is

mostly true; but also she doesn't want West peering in at anything that might be going on in her

brain.

She finishes the set of papers and goes back to the bedroom to change for lunch. She looks

into her closet: there isn't a lot of choice, and no matter what she wears, Roz will narrow her eyes

at it and suggest they go shopping. Roz thinks Tony goes in for too much floral-wallpaper print,

although Tony has carefully explained that it's camouflage. Anyway, the black leather suit Roz

once tried to convince her was her real self just made her look like an avant-garde Italian umbrella stand.

She finally settles on a forest green rayon outfit with small white polka dots that she bought in

the children's section at Eaton's. She buys quite a few of her clothes there. Why not? They

fit,

and there's less tax; and, as Roz is never tired of

18

remarking, Tony is a miser, especially when it comes to clothes. She would much rather save the

money and spend it on airplane tickets for visits to the sites of battles.

On these pilgrimages she collects relics: a flower from each site. Or a weed rather, because

what she picks are common things - daisies, clovers, poppies. Sentimentalities of this kind seem

reserved, in her, for people she does not know. She presses the flowers between the pages of the

Bibles left by proselytizing sects in the dresser drawers of the cheap hotels and pensions where she

stays. If there's no Bible she flattens them under ashtrays. There are always ashtrays.

Then, when she gets home, she tapes them into her scrapbooks, in alphabetical order:

Agincourt. Austerlitz. Bunker Hill. Carcassonne. Dunkirk. She doesn't take sides: all battles are bat-

tles, all contain bravery, all involve death. She doesn't talk about this practice of hers to her colleagues, because none of them would understand why she does it. She isn't even sure herself.

She isn't sure what she's really collecting, or in memory of what.

In the bathroom she adjusts her face. Powder on the nose, but no lipstick. Lipstick is alarming on

her, extra, like those red plastic mouths children stick onto potatoes. Comb through the hair. She

gets her hair cut in Chinatown because they don't charge the earth, and they know how to do

straight black short hair with a few straggly bangs over the forehead, the same every time. A pixie

cut, it used to be called. With her big glasses and her big eyes behind them and her too-skinny

neck, the effect is street urchin crossed with newly hatched bird. She still has good skin, good

enough; it offsets the grey strands. She looks like a very young old person, or a very old young

person; but then, she's looked that way ever since she was two.

She bundles the term papers into her oversized canvas tote bag and runs up the stairs to wave goodbye to West. Headwinds,

19

says the sign on his study door, and that's what his answering machine says too - Third floor,

Headwinds. It's what he'd call his high-tech recording studio if he had one. West has his ear-

phones on now, he's hooked up to his tape deck and his synthesizer, but he sees her and waves back. She leaves by the front door, locking it behind her. She's always careful about the

door. She doesn't want any drug addicts getting in while she's away, and bothering West.

The wooden porch needs repairing; there's a rotting board. She'll have it fixed next spring, she promises herself it will take at least that long to get such a thing organized. Someone

has

tucked a circular under her doormat: another tool sale. Tony wonders who buys all these tools - all these circular saws, cordless drills, rasps, and screwdrivers - and what they do

with

them really. Maybe tools are substitute weapons; maybe they're what men go in for when they aren't waging war. West is not the tool-using type, though: the only hammer in the house belongs to Tony, and for anything other than simple nailpounding she looks in the Yellow Pages. Why risk your life?

There's another tool circular cluttering the tiny front lawn, which is weed-ridden and needs cutting. The lawn is a neighbourhood blot. Tony knows this, and is embarrassed by it from time to time, and vows to have the grass dug up and replaced with some colourful but hardy shrubs, or else gravel. She has never seen the point of lawns. Given the choice she'd prefer a moat, with a drawbridge, and crocodiles optional.

Charis keeps making vague mewling noises about re-doing Tony's front lawn for her, transforming it into a miracle of bloom, but Tony has fended her off. Charis would make a garden like Tony's study drapes, which she calls "nourishing" - rampant blossoms, twining vines, blatant seed pods - and it would be too much for Tony. She's seen what happened to the strip of ground beside Roz's back walk when Roz gave in to similar pleas. Because Charis

has done it, Roz can't possibly

20

have it re-done, so now there's a little plot of Roz's yard that will be forever Charis.

At the street corner Tony turns to look back at her house, as she often does, admiring it.

Even after twenty years it still seems like a mirage that she should own such a house, or any house at all. The house is brick, late Victorian, tall and narrow, with green fish-scale shingles on

its upper third. Her study window looks out from the fake tower on the left: the Victorians loved

to think they were living in castles. It's a large house, larger than it looks from the street. A solid

house, reassuring; a fort, a bastion, a keep. Inside it is West, creating aural mayhem, safe from

harm. When she bought it, back when the neighbourhood was more run down and the prices

were low, she didn't expect anyone would ever live in it except her.

She goes down the subway steps, drops her token into the turnstile, boards the train, and sits on

the plastic seat, with her tote bag on her knees like a visiting nurse. The car isn't crowded, so

there are no heads of tall people blocking her view and she can read the ads. Hcnurc! says a

chocolate bar. Pleh uoy nac? pleads the Red Cross. Elas! Elas! If she were to say these words out

loud people would think it was another language. It is another language, an archaic language, a

language she knows well. She could speak it in her sleep, and sometimes does.

If the fundamentalists were to catch her at it, they'd accuse her of Satan worship. They play popular songs in reverse, claiming to find blasphemies hidden in them; they think you can invoke

the Devil by hanging the cross upside down or by saying the Lord's Prayer backwards. All nonsense. Evil doesn't require such invocations, such childish and stagy rituals. Nothing so complicated.

Tony's other language isn't evil, however. It's dangerous only to her. It's her seam, it's where she's sewn together, it's where she _could split apart. Nevertheless, she still indulges in it. A

21

risky nostalgia. Aiglatsen. (A Viking chieftain of the Dark Ages? An up-market laxative?)

She gets off at St. George and takes the Bedford Road exit, makes it past the handout men and the street flower-seller and the boy playing the flute on the corner, avoids getting run over while she crosses at the green light, and heads along past Varsity Stadium and then across the

grassy circle of the main campus. Her office is down one of the dingy old side streets and around the corner, in a building called McClung Hall.

McClung Hall is a solemn block of red brick, darkened to purple-brown by weather and soot. She lived in it once, as a student, for six years straight, when it was still a women's resi-

dence. She was told it was named after somebody or other who'd helped get the vote for women, but she didn't much care about that. Nobody did, back then.

Tony's first memories of the place are of an ancient fire-trap, overheated but drafty, with creaking floors and a lot of wornout but stolid wood in it: massive banisters, heavy window seats, thickly panelled doors. It smelled - it still smells - like a damp pantry suffering from dry rot, with sprouting potatoes forgotten in it. At the time it also had a lingering, queasy odour that filtered up from the dining room: lukewarm cabbage, leftover scrambled eggs, burnt grease. She used to duck the meals-there and smuggle bread and apples up to her room.

The Comparative Religion people got hold of it in the seventies, but since then it's been turned into makeshift offices for the overflow from various worthy but impoverished departments - people who are thought to use mostly their minds rather than pieces of glossy equipment, and who don't contribute much to modern industry, and who are therefore considered to be naturally adapted to seediness. Philosophy has established a bridgehead on

the ground floor, Modern History has claimed the second. Despite some half-hearted attempts

at
22

repainting (already in the past, already fading), McClung is still the same dour, circumspect building it always was, virtuous as cold oatmeal and keeping itself to itself.

Tony doesn't mind its shabbiness. Even as a student she liked it here - compared, that is, with where she could have been. A rented room, an anonymous studio apartment. Some of the

other, more blase students called it McFungus, a name that has been passed down over the

years, but for Tony it was a haven, and she remains grateful.

Her own office is on the second floor, just a couple of doors down from her old room. Her old room itself has become the coffee room, a wilfully cheerless place with a chipped press-board table, several mismatched straight chairs, and a yellowing Amnesty poster of a man tied

up in barbed wire and stuck full of bent nails. There's a drip coffee machine that spits and drib-

bles, and a rack where they are all supposed to keep their environmentally friendly washable

mugs, with their initials painted on them so they won't get one another's gum diseases.

Tony

has gone to some trouble with her own mug. She's used red nail polish, on black: it says Gnissapsert On. People occasionally use one another's mugs, by mistake or from laziness, but

nobody uses hers.

She pauses at the coffee room, where two of her colleagues, both dressed in fleecy jogging suits, are having milk and cookies. Dr. Ackroyd, the eighteenth-century agriculture expert, and

Dr. Rose Pimlott, the social historian and Canadianist, who by any other name, would still be a pain in the butt. She wonders if Rose Pimlott and Bob Ackroyd are having a thing, as Roz would say. They've been putting their heads together quite frequently in recent weeks. But most likely it's just some palace plot. The whole department is like a Renaissance court: whisperings, gangings-up, petty treacheries, snits, and umbrage. Tony tries to stay out of it but succeeds only sometimes. She has no particular allies and is therefore suspected by all.

23 Especially by Rose. Tony continues to resent the fact that, two years ago, Rose accused one

of Tony's graduate courses of being Eurocentric.

"Of course it's Eurocentric!" Tony said. "What do you expect in a course called Merovingian Siege Strategy?"

"I think," said Rose Pimlott, attempting to salvage her position, "that you might teach the course from the point of view of the victims. Instead of marginalizing them:"

"Which victims?" said Tony. "They were all victims! They took turns! Actually, they took turns trying to avoid being the victims. That's the whole point about war!"

What Dr. Rose Pimlott knows about war you could stick in your ear. But her ignorance is willed: mainly she just wants war to get out of her way and stop being such a nuisance.

"Why

do you like it?" she said to Tony recently, wrinkling her nose as if talking about snot or farts: something minor and disgusting, and best concealed.

"Do you ask AIDS researchers why they like AIDS?" said Tony. "War is there. It's not going away soon. It's not that I like it. I want to see why so many other people like it. I want to see how it works:" But Rose Pimlott would rather not look, she'd rather let others dig up the mass

graves. She might break a nail.

Tony considers telling Rose that Laura Secord, whose portrait on the old chocolate boxes that bore her name had turned out, under X-ray, to be that of a man in a dress, really had been

a man in a dress. No woman, she would tell Rose, could possibly have shown such aggressiveness, or - if you like - such courage. That would stick Rose on the horns of a dilemma! She'd have to maintain that women could be just as good at war as men were, and

therefore just as bad, or else that they were all by nature lily-livered sissies. Tony is filled with

curiosity to see which way Rose would jump. But there isn't time today.

She nods in at Rose and Bob, and they look at her askance, which is the peer-group look she's used to. Male historians

24

think she's invading their territory, and should leave their spears, arrows, catapults, lances, swords, guns, planes, and bombs alone. They think she should be writing social history, such as

who ate what when, or Life in the Feudal Family. Female historians, of whom there are not many, think the same thing but for different reasons. They think she ought to be studying birth;

not death, and certainly not battle plans. Not routs and debacles, not carriages, not slaughters.

They think she's letting women down.

On the whole she fares better with the men, if they can work their way past the awkward preliminaries; if they can avoid calling her "little lady," or saying they weren't expecting her to be

so feminine, by which they mean short. Though only the most doddering ones do that any more.

If she weren't so tiny, though, she'd never get away with it. If she were six feet tall and built like a blockhouse; if she had hips. Then she'd be threatening, then she'd be an Amazon. It's the

incongruity that grants her permission. A breath would blow you away, they beam down at her

silently. You wish, thinks Tony, smiling up. Many have blown.

She unlocks her office door, then locks it behind her to disguise the fact that she's in there. It's

not her office hours but the students take advantage. They can smell her out, like sniffer dogs;

they'll seize any opportunity to suck up to her or whine, or attempt to impress her, or foist upon

her their versions of sulky defiance. I'm just a human being, Tony wants to say to them. But of

course she isn't. She's a human being with power. There isn't much of it, but it's power all the

same.

A month or so ago one of them - large, leather jacketed. red-eyed, second-year undergraduate

survey course - stuck a clasp knife into the middle of her desk.

"I need an A" he shouted. Tony was both frightened by him and angry. Kill me and you won't even pass! she wanted to shout

25

back. But he might have been on something. Doped up or crazy, or both, or imitating those other berserk, professorslaughtering students he'd seen on the news. Luckily it was only a knife.

"I appreciate your directness," she said to him. "Now, why don't you sit down, in that chair right over there, and we can discuss it?"

"Thank God for Psychiatric Services," she said to Roz on the phone, after he'd left. "But what gets into them?" "Listen, sweetie," said Roz. "There's just one thing I want you to remember. You know those chemicals women have in them, when they've got PMS? Well, men

have the very same chemicals in them all the time:"

Maybe it's true, thinks Tony. Otherwise, where would sergeants come from?

Tony's office is large, larger than it would be in a modern building, with the standard-issue scratched desk, the standard sawdusty bulletin board, the standard dust-laden venetian blinds.

Generations of thumbtacks have woodwormed the pale green paint; leftover shards of cellophane tape glint here and there, like mica in a cave. Tony's second-best word

processor is

on the desk - it's so slow and outmoded she hardly cares if anyone steals it - and in her bookcase are a few dependable volumes, which she lends out to students sometimes:

Creasy's Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World, a necessary chestnut; Liddell Hart; Churchill, of

course; The Fatal Decisions; and, one of her own favourites, Keegan's The Face of Battle.

On one wall there's a bad reproduction of Benjamin West's "The Death of Wolfe," a lugubrious picture in Tony's opinion, Wolfe white as a codfish belly, with his eyes rolled

piously upwards and many necrophiliac voyeurs in fancy dress grouped around him. Tony keeps it in her office as a reminder, both to herself and to her students, of the vainglory and

martyrologizing

26

to which those in her profession are occasionally prone. Beside him is Napoleon, thoughtfully crossing the Alps.

On the opposite wall she's hung an amateurish pen-and-ink cartoon entitled "Wolfe Taking a Leak." The general is shown turned away from the viewer, with only his weak-chinned profile

showing. He's wearing a peevish expression, and the balloon coming out of his mouth says, "Fuck These Buttons:" This cartoon was drawn by one of her students, two years ago, and was

presented to her by the whole class at the end of term. As a rule her students are mostly men:

not a lot of women find themselves deeply attracted to such courses as Late Medieval Tactical

Blunders or Military History as Artefact, which is what her graduate courses are entitled, this time around.

As she'd unwrapped the package, they'd all eyed her to see how she'd respond to the word fuck. Men of their age seem to think that women of her age have never heard such words before. She finds this touching. She has to make a conscious effort to stop herself from calling

her students "my boys." If she doesn't watch it, she'll turn into a hearty, jocular den mother; or worse, a knowing, whimsical old biddy. She'll start winking, and pinching cheeks.

The cartoon itself is in honour of her lecture on the technology of fly-front fastenings, which - she's heard - has been dubbed "Tender Buttons," and which usually attracts in over----

flow crowd. Writers on war - she begins - have tended to concentrate on the kings and the generals, on

their decisions, on their strategy, and have overlooked more lowly, but equally important factors, which can,

and have, put the actual soldiers - those on the sharp edge - at risk. Disease-carrying lice and fleas, for

instance. Faulty boots. Mud. Germs. Undershirts. And fly-front fastenings. The drawstring, the

overlap, the buttoned flap, the zipper, have all played their part in military history through the ages; not to mention the kilt, for which, from a certain point of view, there is much to be said.

Don't laugh, she tells them. Instead, picture

27

yourself on the battlefield, with nature calling, as it frequently does in times of stress. Now picture

yourselves trying to undo these buttons. She holds up a sketch of the buttons in question, a nine-

teenth-century set that would surely have required at least ten fingers and ten minutes each.

Now picture a sniper. Less funny?

An army marches on its stomach, but also on its fly-front fastenings. Not that the zipper - although improving the speed of opening - has been entirely blameless. Why not? Use your heads -

zippers get stuck. And they're noisy! And men have developed the dangerous habit of striking

matches on them. In the dark! You might as well set a flare.

Many have been the crimes committed - she continues - on helpless enlisted men by the designers of military clothing. How many British soldiers died needlessly because of the red-

ness of their uniforms? And don't think that sort of thoughtlessness went out with the

nineteenth century. Mussolini's criminal failure to provide shoes - shoes! - for his own troops

was just one case in point. And, in Tony's opinion, whoever dreamed up those nylon pants for North Korea should have been court-martialled. You could hear the legs whisking together a mile away. And the sleeping bags - they rustled too, and you couldn't undo them easily from inside, and they froze shut! During night raids by the enemy, those men got butchered like kittens in a sack.

Murder by designer! She can get quite worked up about it. All of which, in a more sedate and footnoted form, will be good for at least one chapter of her book-in-progress: *Deadly Vestments: A History of Inept Military Couture*.

Charis says it's bad for Tony to spend so much of her time on something as negative as war. She says it's carcinogenic.

Tony searches through her accordion file for the class list, locates it under B, for Bureaucracy,

and enters the grade for

28

each paper in the little square provided. When she's finished she drops the marked papers into

the heavy manila envelope thumbtacked to the outside of her door, where the students can pick

them up later today, as promised. Then she continues to the end of the hall, checks for mail in

the squalid cubbyhole of a departmental office where there is sometimes a secretary, finds nothing but a renewal notice for *Jane's Defence Weekly* and her latest copy of *Big Guns*, and tucks

both into her bag.

Next she makes a rest stop in the overheated women's washroom, which smells of liquid soap, chlorine, and partly digested onions. One of the three toilets is clogged, as is its long-stand-

ing habit, and the other two stalls lack toilet paper. There's some hidden in the non-functioning

one, however; so Tony requisitions it. On the wall of the cubicle she prefers - the one next to the

pebble-glass window - someone has scratched a new message, above *Herstory Not History and*

Herstectomy Not Hysterectomy: FEMINIST DECONSTRUCTION SUCKS. The sub-text of this, as Tony

well knows, is that there's a move afoot to have McClung Hall declared a historic building and

turned over to Women's Studies. *HISTORIC NOT xERSTOxrc*, someone has added off to the side.

Omens of a coming tussle Tony hopes to avoid.

She leaves a note on the secretary's desk: *The Toilet is Clogged. Thank you. Antoraia Fremont.*

She does not add, *Again*. There is no need to be unpleasant. Nothing will come of this note, but--

she has done her duty. Then she hurries out of the building and back to the subway, and heads

south.

The lunch is at the *Toxique*, so Tony gets off at Osgoode and walks west along Queen Street,

past *Dragon Lady Comics*, past the *Queen Mother Cafe*, past the *BamBoo Club* with its hot

29 graphics. She could wait for a streetcar, but in streetcar crowds she tends to get squashed,

and
sometimes pinched. She's done enough shirt-button and belt-buckle surveys to last her for
a
while, so she chooses the more random hazards of the sidewalk. She's not very late,
anyway; no
later than Roz is, always.

She keeps to the outside of the sidewalk, away from the walls and the ragged figures who
lean against them. Ostensibly they want small change, but Tony sees them in a more
sinister
light. They are spies, scouting the territory before a mass invasion; or else they are
refugees, the
walking wounded, in retreat before the coming onslaught. Either way she steers clear.
Desperate people alarm her, she grew up with two of them. They'll hit out, they'll grab at
anything.

This part of Queen has settled down a little. Several years ago it was wilder, more risky, but
the rents have gone up and a lot of the second-hand bookstores and scruffier artists are
gone.

The mix is still fringe fashion, Eastern European deli, wholesale office furniture, country-and-
western beer drinkers' bars; but there are brightly lit doughnut shops now, trendy nightspots,
clothes with meaningful labels.

The Recession however is deepening. There are more buildings for sale; there are more
closed-out boutiques, and saleswomen lurk in the doorways of those still open, aiming
defeated, pleading stares at the passers-by, their eyes filled with baffled rage. Prices
Slashed, say

the windows: that would have been unheard of at this time last year, two months before
Christmas. The glistening dresses on the blank-faced or headless mannequins are no
longer

what they seemed, the incarnation of desire. Instead they look like party trash. Crumpled
paper

napkins, the rubble left by rowdy crowds or looting armies. Although nobody saw them or
could say for certain who they were, the Goths and the Vandals have been through.

So thinks Tony, who could never have worn those dresses anyway. They are for women
with long legs, long torsos, long

30

graceful arms. "You're not short," Roz tells her. "You're petite. Listen, for a waist like that I'd
kill."

"But I'm the same thickness all the way down," says Tony. "So, what we need is a blender,"
says Roz. "We'll put in your waist and my thighs, and we'll split the difference. Fine by you?"

If they had been younger such conversations might have pointed to serious dissatisfactions
with their own bodies, serious longings. By this time they're just repertoire. More or less.

There's Roz now, waving to her outside the Toxique. Tony comes up to her and Roz stoops,
and Tony stretches up her face, and they kiss the air on both sides of each other's heads,
as

has lately become the fashion in Toronto, or in certain layers of it. Roz parodies the ritual by
sucking in her cheeks so her mouth is a fish-mouth, and crossing her eyes. "Pretentious?
Moi?" she says. Tony smiles, and they go in together.

The Toxique is one of their favourite places: not too expensive, and with a buzz; though
it's a little arch, a little grubby. Plates arrive with strange textures sticking to their
undersides,

the waiters may have eye shadow or nose rings, the waitresses tend to wear fluorescent
leg-

warmers and leather mini-shorts. There's a long smoked-glass mirror along one side,
salvaged

from some wrecked hotel. Posters of out-of-date alternativetheatre events are glued to the walls, and people with pallid skin and chains hanging from their sombre, metal-studded clothing slouch through to the off limits back rooms or confer together on the splintering stairs that lead down to the toilets. The Toxique specials are a chevre-and-roasted-pepper sandwich, a Newfoundland cod-cake, and a sometimes mucilaginous giant salad with a lot of walnuts and shredded roots in it. There's baklava and tiramisu, and strong, addictive espresso.

They don't go there at night, of course, when the rock groups and the high decibels take over. But it's good for lunch.

31

It cheers them up. It makes them feel younger, and more daring, than they are.

Charis is already there, sitting in the corner at a red formica table with gold sprinkles baked into it and aluminum legs and trim, which is either authentic fifties or else a reproduction.

She's

got them a bottle of white wine already, and a bottle of Evian water. She sees them and smiles,

and airy kisses go round the table.

Today Charis is wearing a sagging mauve cotton jersey dress, with a fuzzy grey cardigan over top and an orange-and-aqua scarf with a design of meadow flowers draped around her

neck. Her long straight hair is grey-blonde and parted in the middle; she has her reading glasses

stuck up on top of her head. Her peach lipstick could be her real lips. She resembles a slightly

faded advertisement for herbal shampoo - healthful, but verging on the antique. What Ophelia

would have looked like if she'd lived, or the Virgin Mary when Middle-aged - earnest and distracted, and with an inner light. It's the inner light that gets her in trouble.

Roz is packed into a suit that Tony recognizes from the window of one of the more expensive designer stores on Bloor. She shops munificently and with gusto, but often on the run. The jacket is electric blue, the skirt is tight. Her face is carefully air-brushed, and her hair

has just been re-coloured. This time it's auburn. Her mouth is raspberry.

Her face doesn't go with the outfit. It isn't insouciant and lean, but plump, with cushiony pink milkmaid's cheeks and dimples when she smiles. Her eyes, intelligent, compassionate, and

bleak. seem to belong to some other face, a thinner one; thinner, and more hardened.

Tony settles into her chair, parking her big tote bag under it where she can use it as a footstool. Short kings once had special foot cushions so their legs wouldn't dangle as they sat

on their thrones. Tony sympathizes.

32

"So," says Roz after the preliminaries, "we're all in our places, with bright shiny faces.

What's new? Tony, I saw the cutest outfit in Holt's, it would be so good for you. A mandarin collar - mandarin collars are back! - and brass buttons down the front." She lights her usual cigarette, and Charis gives her usual tiny cough. This part of the Toxique is not a smoke-free

zone.

"I'd look like a bellhop," says Tony. "Anyway, it wouldn't fit." "You ever consider spike heels?" says Roz. "You'd add four inches: "

"Be serious," says Tony. "I want to be able to walk."

"You could get a leg implant, " says Roz. "A leg enhancement. Well, why not? They're doing

everything else."

"I think Tony's body is appropriate the way it is," says Charis. "I'm not talking about her body, I'm talking about her ward"robe," says Roz.

"As usual," says Tony. They all laugh, a little boisterously. The wine bottle's now half empty. Tony's had only a few squirts of wine, mixed with Evian water. She's wary of alcohol in any form.

The three of them have lunch once a month. They've come to depend on it. They don't have much in common except the catastrophe that brought them together, if Zenia can be called a

catastrophe; but over time they've developed a loyalty to one another, an esprit de corps.

Tony

has come to like these women; she's come to consider them close friends, or the next thing to

it. They have gallantry, they have battle scars, they've been through fire; and each of them knows things about the others, by now, that nobody else does.

So they've continued to meet regularly, like war widows or aging vets, or the wives of those missing in action. As with such groups, there are more people present around the table than

can be accounted for.

They don't talk about Zenia, though. Not any more, not

33

since they buried her. As Charis says, talking about her might hold her on this earth. As

Tony

says, she's bad for the digestion. And as Roz says, why give her the air time?

She's here at the table all the same, thinks Tony. She's here, we're holding her, we're giving her the air time. We can't let her go.

The waitress comes for their order. Today she's a dandelionhaired girl in leopard-pattern tights

and calf-high lace-up silver boots. Charis has the Rabbit Delite - for rabbits, not of them - with

grated carrots, cottage cheese, and cold lentil salad. Roz has the Thick-cut Gourmet Toasted

Cheese Sandwich, on Herb and Caraway Seed Bread, with Polish Pickle; and Tony has the

Middle East Special, with felafel and shashlik and couscous and hummus.

"Speaking of the Middle East," says Roz, "what's happening there? That thing with Iraq.

Your specialty, I guess, Tony." The two of them look at Tony. "Actually, it's not," says Tony.

The whole point about being a historian, she's tried to tell them, is that you can successfully avoid the present, most of the time. Though of course she's been following the situation; she's

been following it for years. Some interesting new technology will be tested, that much is certain.

"Don't be coy," says Roz.

"You mean, is there going to be a war?" says Tony. "The short answer is yes:"

"That's terrible," says Charis, dismayed.

"Don't shoot the messenger," says Tony. "I'm not doing it, I'm just telling you."

"But how can you know?" says Roz. "Something could change."

"It's not like the stock market," says Tony. "It's already been decided. It was decided as soon as Saddam crossed that border. Like the Rubicon."

34

"The what?" says Charis.

"Never mind, sweetie, it's just something historical," says Roz. "So is this really bad, or what?"

"Not in the short run," says Tony. "In the long run - well, a lot of empires have folded because they overextended themselves. That could go for either side. But right now the States

isn't thinking about that. They love the idea. They'll get a chance to try out their new toys, drum up some business. Don't think of it as a war, think of it as a market expansion."

Charis forks up the grated carrot; she has a shred of it on her upper lip, an endearing

orange whisker. "Well, anyway, it won't be us doing it," she says.

"Yes it will," says Tony. "Our attendance will be required. If you take the king's shilling, you kiss the king's ass. We'll be there, us and our falling-apart, rusty old navy. Now that's a disgrace." Tony is in fact indignant about this: if you're going to make men fight, you ought to give them decent equipment. "Maybe he'll back down," says Roz. "Who?" says Tony.

"Uncle

Sam?" "Uncle Saddam, pardon the pun," says Roz.

"He can't," says Tony. "He's gone too far. His own folks would murder him. Not that they haven't tried:"

"This is depressing," says Charis.

"You bet," says Tony. "The lust for power will prevail: Thousands will die needlessly.

Corpses will rot. Women and children will perish. Plagues will rage. Famine will sweep the land. Relief funds will be set up. Officials will siphon off the cash from them. It's not all bad, though - the suicide rate will fall. It always does during wars. And maybe women soldiers will get a crack at front-line combat, strike a blow for feminism. Though I doubt it. They'll probably just be doing bandages-asusual. Let's order another bottle of Evian."

"Tony, you are so cold-blooded," says Roz. "Who's going to win?"

35

"The battle, or the war?" says Tony. "For the battle, it'll definitely be technology.

Whoever's got air superiority. Now who could that be?"

"The Iraqis have some kind of a giant gun," says Roz. "I read something about it:"

"Only part of one," says Tony, who knows quite a lot about this because it interests her.

Her, and Jane's Defence Weekly, and persons unknown. "The Supergun. It would have been a

technological breakthrough all right; done away with medium-range aircraft and expensive rockets, cut down on the cost. Guess what they called it? Project Babylon! But the guy who was making it got himself murdered. A mad weapons genius - Gerry Bull. Best ballistics man

in the world - one of ours, by the way. He'd been warned, sort of. Stuff kept moving around inside his apartment when he wasn't there. More than a hint, I'd say. But he kept right on building the gun, until bang - five bullets in his head."

"That's awful," said Charis. "I hate that."

"Take your choice," says Tony. "Think how many people the Supergun would have killed:"

"Well anyway, I hear they're dug in," says Roz. "I hear they have deep cement bunkers. Bomb-proof."

"Only for the generals," says Tony. "Wait and see."

"Tony, you're such a cynic," says Charis, with a pitying sigh. She keeps hoping for Tony's spiritual improvement, which =would consist, no doubt, of a discovery of previous lives, a partial

lobotomy, and an increased interest in gardening.

Tony looks at her, sitting in front of her pretty dessert, the Assorted Sorbets, a ball of pink, a ball of red, a ball of curranty purple, spoon at the ready like a kid at a birthday party. Such innocence pains Tony, two ways at once. She wants to console Charis; also to shake her.

"What do you want me to say? That we should all try for a more positive attitude?"

"It might help," says Charis solemnly. "You never know. If everyone did it:"

36

Sometimes Tony would like to take Charis by the lily-white hand and lead her to the piles of skulls, to the hidden pits filled with bodies, to the starved children with their stick arms and ballooning stomachs, to the churches locked up and then burned with their sizzling prisoners

howling inside, to the crosses, row on row on row. Century after century, back and back; as far

as you can go. Now tell me, she'd say to Charis. What do you see?

Flowers, Charis would say. Zenia would not have said that.

Tony feels a chill. The door must have opened. She looks up, and into the mirror.

Zenia is standing here, behind her, in the smoke, in the glass, in this room. Not someone who looks like Zenia: Zenia herself.

It's not a hallucination. The leopard-skinned waitress has seen her too. She's nodding, she's going over, she's indicating a table at the back. Tony feels her heart clench, clench like a fist,

and plummet.

"Tony, what's wrong?" says Roz. She clutches Charis's arm. "Turn your head slowly," says Tony. "Don't scream."

"Oh shit," says Roz. "It's her." "Who?" says Charis. "Zenia," says Tony.

"Zenia's dead," says Charis.

"God," says Roz, "it really is. Charis, don't stare, she'll see you:" "And after putting us through that idiotic service," says Tony. "Well, she wasn't at it," says Roz. "There was only that

tin can, remember?"

"And that lawyer," says Tony. After the first shock, she finds she is not surprised:

"Yeah," says Roz. "Lawyer, my fanny." "He looked like a lawyer," says

Charis.

37

"He looked too much like a lawyer," says Roz. "Face it, we were had. It was one of her numbers."

They're whispering, like conspirators. Why? thinks Tony. We have nothing to hide. We should march up to her and demand - what? How she could have the brass-plated nerve to still

be alive?

They ought to go on talking, pretending they don't see her. Instead they're gazing at the tabletop, where the remains of their Assorted Sorbets have melted in pink and raspberry smears, floating on the white plates like the evidence of a shark attack. They feel caught out,

they feel trapped, they feel guilty. It should be Zenia who feels like that.

But Zenia strides past their table as if they aren't there, as if nobody is. Tony senses them all

fading in the glare that spreads out from her. The perfume she's wearing is unrecognizable: some-

thing dense and murky, sullen and ominous. The smell of scorched earth. She goes to the back of

the room and sits down, and lights a cigarette and stares above their heads, out the window.

"Tony, what's she doing?" Roz whispers. Tony is the only one with a clear view of Zenia.

"Smoking," says Tony. "Waiting for someone." "But what's she doing here?"

says Roz. "Slumming," says Tony. "The same as us."

"I don't believe this," says Charis plaintively. "I liked this day until now"

"No, no," says Roz. "I mean this city. Shit, I mean this entire country. She's burnt all her

bridges. What's left for her?" "I don't want to talk about her," says Tony.

"I don't even want to think about her," says Charis. "I don't want her messing up my head." But there is no hope of thinking about anything else.

Zenia is as beautiful as ever. She's wearing black, a tight outfit with a scoop neck that shows the

tops of her breasts. She looks,

38

as always, like a photo, a high-fashion photo done with hot light so that all freckles and wrinkles are bleached out and only the basic features remain: in her case, the full red-purple mouth, disdainful and sad; the huge deep eyes, the finely arched eyebrows, the high cheekbones tinged with terracotta. And her hair, a dense cloud of it, blown around her head by

the imperceptible wind that accompanies her everywhere, moulding her clothes against her body, fitfully moving the dark tendrils around her forehead, filling the air near her with the sound of rustling. In the midst of this unseen commotion she sits unmoving, as still as if she were carved. Waves of ill will flow out of her like cosmic radiation.

Or this is what Tony sees. It's an exaggeration, of course; it's overdone. But these are the emotions that Zenia mostly inspires: overdone emotions.

"Let's leave," says Charis.

"Don't let her frighten you," says Tony, as if to herself.

"It's not fear," says Charis. "She makes me sick. She makes me sick of myself."

Roz says, reflectively, "She does have that effect."

The two others gather their purses and begin the ritual of dividing up the bill. Tony is still looking at Zenia. It's true she's as beautiful as ever; but now Tony can detect a slight powdery

dullness, like the bloom on a grape - a slight contracting of the pores, a shrinkage, as if some of

the juice has been sucked out from under her skin. Tony finds this reassuring: Zenia is mortal

after all, like the rest of them.

Zenia blows out smoke, lowers her gaze. She stares,, at Tony. She stares right through her. But she sees her all right. She sees all three of them: She knows how they feel. She's enjoying it.

Tony stops looking. Her heart inside her is cold and dense, packed together like a snowball.

At

the same time she's excited,

39

tense, as if waiting for a short word, a command, dipped and deadly. Forward! Charge!

Fire! Or

something of the sort.

But also she's tired. Maybe she no longer has the energy for Zenia. She may not be up to her, this time. Not that she ever has been.

She focuses on the slick red tabletop, the black ashtray with its crumpled butts. The name of the restaurant is stamped on it in silver script: Toxique.

Euqixot. It looks Aztec.

What is she up to? thinks Tony. What does she want? What is she doing here, on this side of the mirror?

vi

The three of them troop out the door, one by one. Beating a retreat. Tony resists the impulse

to walk out backwards: the casualty rates go up when you turn tail.

It's not as if Zenia has a gun. Still, Tony can sense the contemptuous ultramarine gaze drilling through the back of her flimsy little dotted-rayon dress like a laser. Pathetic, Zenia

must be thinking. She must be laughing; or, smiling, with the corners of her lush mouth upcurled. The three of them aren't major enough for a laugh. Shorn, Tony murmurs, to herself:

As in armour, as in dignity, as in hair.

Tony felt safe this morning, safe enough. But she doesn't feel safe now. Everything has been called into question. Even in the best of times the daily world is tenuous to her, a thin iridescent skin held in place by surface tension. She puts a lot of effort into keeping it together, her willed illusion of comfort and stability, the words flowing from left to right, the routines of love; but underneath is darkness. Menace, chaos, cities aflame, towers crashing down, the anarchy of deep water. She takes a breath to

40

steady herself and feels the oxygen and car fumes rushing into her brain. Her legs are wavery, the facade of the street ripples, tremulous as a reflection on a pond, the weak sunlight blows away like smoke.

Nevertheless, when Roz offers to drive her home, or wherever she's going, Tony says she'll walk. She needs the interlude, she needs the space, she needs to ready herself for West. This time the three of them don't kiss the air. Instead they hug. Charis is shivering, despite her attempt at serenity. Roz is flippant and dismissive, but she's holding back tears. She'll sit in

her car and cry, blotting her eyes on her bright jacket sleeve, until she's ready to drive back to

her penthouse office. Charis on the other hand will amble down to the Island ferry dock, peering into store windows and jay-walking. On the ferry she'll watch the gulls and visualize being one, and try to put Zenia out of her mind. Tony feels protective towards the two of them. What do they know about the hard dark choices? Neither one of them is going to be a whole lot of help in the coming struggle. But then, they have nothing to lose. Nothing, or nobody. Tony does.

She makes her way along Queen, then turns north on Spadina. She wills her feet to move, she

wills the sun to shine. He either fears his fate too much, Or his deserts are small, Who puts it not untv

the touch, To win, or lose it all, she repeats in her head. A bracing verse, a general favourite, a

favourite of generals. What she needs is some perspective. Some evitcepsrep. A medicinal word.

Gradually her heart settles. It's soothing to be among strangers, who require from her no efforts, no explanations, no reassurances. She likes the mix on the street here, the mixed skins.

Chinatown has taken over mostly, though there are still some Jewish delicatessens, and, further

up and off to the side, the Portuguese and West Indian shops of the Kensington Market.

Rome

in the second century, Constantinople in the

41

tenth, Vienna in the nineteenth. A crossroads. Those from other countries look as if they're trying hard to forget something, those from here as if they're trying hard to remember. Or maybe it's the other way around. In any case there's an inturned, preoccupied cast to the eyes, a

sideways glancing. Music from elsewhere.

The sidewalk is crowded with lunchtime shoppers; they avoid bumping into one another without seeming to look, as if they're covered with cat whiskers. Tony weaves in and out,

past

the vegetable stores with their star fruit and lichees and long crinkly cabbages set out on stands

at the front, the butchers with their glazed reddish ducks dangling in the windows, the linen shops with their cutwork tablecloths, their silk kimonos with good-luck dragons embroidered

on the backs. Among Chinese people she feels the right height, although she is not unaware of

how she might be viewed by some of them.. A hairy white foreign devil; though she is not very

hairy, as such things go, or very devilish either. Foreign, yes. Foreign here.

It's nearly time for her to get her hair cut, at Liliane's, two blocks up and around the corner.

They make a fuss of her there: they admire, or pretend to admire, her small feet, her tiny mole-

paw hands, her flat bum, her heart-shaped mouth, so out of date among the pouty bee-stung

lips of the fashion magazines. They tell her she is almost Chinese.

Only almost, though. Almost is what she has always felt; approximate. Zenia has never been almost, even at her most fraudulent. Her fakery was deeply assumed, and even her most superficial disguises were total.

Tony walks and walks, up Spadina, past the old Victory Burlesque - which victory, whose victory, she wonders - now stuck with posters advertising films in Chinese, past Grossman's Tavern and across College Street, where the Scott Mission

42

offers Christian soup, to more and more people with less and less money. She can walk all the

way home, she has no classes today. She needs to regroup her forces, she needs to ponder, she

needs to plan her strategy. Though how much strategy can you plan with so little to go on?

For

instance, why has Zenia chosen to resurrect herself. Why did she go to the trouble of blowing

herself up in the first place? For her own reasons, perhaps; nothing to do with the three of them. Or with the two of them, with her and West. Still, it's bad luck that Zenia spotted her in the Toxique.

Maybe Zenia has forgotten all about West by now. He's small game, pleads Tony silently. A tiny fish. Why bother? But Zenia likes hunting. She likes hunting anything. She relishes it.

Imagine your enemy, say the experts. Put yourself in his place: Pretend you are him. Learn to predict

him. Unfortunately, Zenia is a bugger to predict: It's all in the old children's game - scissors, paper, stone. Scissors cut paper, but break on stone. The trick is to know what your opponent

is concealing, what fist or nasty surprise or secret weapon he's hiding behind his back. Or hers.

The sun declines and Tony walks along her own quiet street, scuffing through the fallen leaves

of the maple and chestnut trees, back to her own house. Her stronghold. In the waning light the house is no longer thick, solid, incontrovertible. Instead it looks provisional, as if it's about

to be sold, or to set sail. It flickers a little, sways on its moorings. Before unlocking the door Tony runs her hand over the brickwork, reassuring herself that it exists.

West hears her come in, and calls down to her. Tony checks her face in the hall mirror, settling it into what she hopes is her normal expression.

"Listen to this," says West, when she's climbed the third-floor stairs.

43

Tony listens: it's another noise, much the same - as far as she can tell - as yesterday's. Courting male penguins bring rocks, held between their rubber-boot feet; West brings noises.

"That's wonderful," she says. It's one of her more minor lies.

West smiles, which means he knows she can't hear what he hears but likes her for not saying so. She smiles back, scanning his face anxiously. She cheeks each wrinkle; each lift and

inflection. All is as usual, from what she can tell.

Neither of them feels like cooking, so West goes around the corner for Japanese take-out - barbecued eel, yellowtail, and salmon sushi - and they eat it sitting on cushions; in front of the

television set in West's third-floor study, with their shoes off, licking their fingers.

West has the TV in there so he can play videos on it in which sounds are rendered as colours and wavy lines, but they also use it for watching old movies and junky late-night crime

series. West usually prefers the movies, but tonight it's Tony's turn to choose, and they settle on a rerun of a cop show, high on the offensive-and-tacky scale and punctuated with bursts of

gratuitous violence.

Tony's students would smile if they caught her doing this; they're under the illusion that their elders and teachers can't possibly be as frivolous and lazy-minded as they are themselves:

Tony watches as a woman brushes her freshly washed hair, and as another extols a new sanitary napkin, curved to catch the drips. She continues to watch as, for the hundredth, for the thousandth time, one man prepares to kill another.

Such men always have something appropriate to say before throwing the knife or breaking the neck or pulling the trigger. This may be just a screen phenomenon, a fantasy of scriptwrit-

ers; or maybe men really do say such things, under such circumstances. How would Tony know? Is there an urge to warn, to gloat, to intimidate the foe, to boost oneself into

44

action? Dieu et mon droit. Noli me impune lacessit. Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori.

Don't mess with

me. Challenges, battle cries, epitaphs. Bumper stickers.

This man says. "You're history."

Tony has compiled a mental list of these televised synonyms for death. You're toast, you're fried, you're wasted, you're steak, you're dead meat. It's odd 'how many of them have to do with

food, as if being reduced to nutrients is the final indignity. But you're history has long been one

of her favourites. It makes such an exact equation between the past - any of the past, all of the

past - and a deserved and shoddy oblivion. That's history, the young announce, with self-righteous scorn. This is now.

There's a close-up of the bug-eyed fear on the face of the man who will soon be history if things go the way they're going, and then the scene shifts to a view of nasal passages, with smile-button medicated orange bubbles percolating through them.

"This is awful," says West. Tony doesn't know whether he means the cop show or the cross-sectioned nose. She mutes the sound, and takes up his large hand; holding two of his soysauced fingers: "West," she says. What is it she would like to convey? You're so large?

No. I

don't own you? No. Please stay?

Mutt and Jeff; he sometimes calls them. Ttum and Ff~j, Tony replies. Cut that out, says West.

When they go walking together, they always look as if one of them is on a leash; but which one? A bear and its handler? A poodle and its trainer? "Want a beer?" says West.

"Applejuice," says Tony, "please," and West unfolds himself from his cushion and pads down the stairs in his sock feet. Tony sits watching a new car scream around, silently, in the mountainous desert, overlooked by flat-topped buttes. Good ambush country. She has only one decision to make right now: whether or not to tell West. How could she put it? Zenia lives.

And then what? What would West do? Run from the house,

45

without his coat, without his shoes? It's possible. Tall people's heads are too far from the ground,

their centre of gravity is too high. One shock and they topple. As Zenia said once, West is a pushover.

On a hunch, she gets up and tiptoes over to West's- desk, where he keeps his phone. He has

nothing so coherent as a phone pad, but on the back of a discarded sheet of musical notations

she finds what she's afraid of. Z. - A. Hotel. Ext. 1409.

The Z floats on the page as if scrawled on a wall, as if scratched on a window, as if carved in

an arm. Z for Zorro, the masked avenger. Z for Zero Hour. Z for Zap.

It's as if Zenia has already been here, leaving a taunting signature; but the handwriting is West's. How sweet, she thinks; he just left it there for anyone to see, he doesn't even know enough to flush it down the toilet. What is not so sweet is that he hasn't told her. He is less transparent than she thought, less candid; more perfidious. The enemy is already within the walls.

The personal is not political, thinks Tony: the personal is military. War is what happens when

language fails.

Zenia, she whispers, trying it out. Zenia, you're history. You're dead meat.

CHARIS

Charis gets up at dawn. She makes her bed neatly, because she respects this bed. After working

her way through time from one bed to another - a mattress on the floor, or several mattresses on

several floors, a second-hand box bed with screw-on tapered wooden legs that kept breaking, a

spine-wrecking futon, a

46

chemical-smelling foam pad - she has finally achieved a bed that pleases her: firm, but not too

firm, with a wrought-iron bedstead painted white. She bought it cheap from Shanita, at work,

who was getting rid of it in one of her periodic transformations. Anything from Shanita is good luck, and this bed is good luck too. It's clear, it's fresh, like a mint candy.

Charis has covered the bed with a beautiful print spread, dark pink leaves and vines and grapes, on white. A Victorian look. Too fussy, says her daughter Augusta, who has an eye for

leather chairs as smooth as the backs of knees, for tubularchrome-and-glass coffee tables, for

nubbly-cotton designer sofas with pillows in greys and ivories and milky-tea browns: minimalist opulence like that in corporate lawyers' offices. Or so Charis imagines; she doesn't in

fact know any corporate lawyers. Her daughter cuts pictures of these intimidating chairs and

tables and sofas out of magazines and pastes them into her furniture scrapbook, and leaves

the scrapbook lying around, open, as a reproach to Charis and her slovenly ways.

Her daughter is a hard girl. Hard to please, or hard for Charis to please. Maybe it's because she has no father. Or not no father. an invisible father, a father like a dotted outline,

which has had to be coloured in for her by Charis, who didn't have all that much to go on herself, so it's no wonder his features have remained a little indistinct. Charis wonders

whether it would have been better for her daughter to have a father. She wouldn't know, because she never had one herself. Maybe Augusta would go easier on Charis if she had

two

parents she could find inadequate, and not just one.

Maybe Charis deserves it. Maybe she was the matron of an orphanage in a previous life - a Victorian orphanage, with gruel for the orphans and a cosy fire and a warm four-poster bed

with a down-filled quilt for the matron; which would account for her taste in bedspreads.

She remembers her own mother calling her hard, before she

47

was Charis, when she was still Karen. You're hard, you're hard, she would cry, hitting Karen's

legs with a shoe or a broom handle or whatever was around. But Karen wasn't hard, she was

soft, too soft. A soft touch. Her hair was soft, her smile was soft, her voice was soft. She was

so soft there was no resistance. Hard things sank into her, they went right through her; and if she made a real effort, out the other side. Then she didn't have to see them or hear them, or touch them even.

Maybe it looked like hardness. You can't win this fight, said her uncle, putting his meaty hand

on her arm. He thought she was fighting. Maybe she was. Finally she changed into Charis, and

vanished, and reappeared elsewhere, and she has been elsewhere ever since. After she became

Charis she was harder, hard enough to get by, but she's continued to wear soft clothes: flowing

Indian muslins, long gathered skirts, flowered shawls, scarves draped around her.

Whereas her own daughter has gone for polish. Lacquered nails, dark hair gelled into a gleaming helmet, though not a punk look: efficient. She's too young to be so shiny: she's

only

nineteen. She's like a butterfly hardened into an enamelled lapel pin while still half out of the chrysalis. How will she ever unfold? Her brittle suits, her tidy little soldiers' boots, her neat

lists

in crisp computer printout just break Charis's heart.

August, Charis named her, because that's when she was born.-Warm breezes, baby powder,

languorous heat, the smell of mown hay. Such a soft name. Too soft for her daughter, who has

added an a. Augusta, she is now - a very different resonance. Marble statues, Roman noses,

tight-lipped commanding mouths. Augusta is in first year in the business course at Western,

on

scholarship, luckily, because Charis could never have afforded to pay for it; her vagueness about money is another source of complaint, for Augusta.

But despite the lack of cash Augusta has always been well fed. Well fed, well nourished, and every time Augusta comes

48

home for a visit Charis cooks her a nutritious meal, with leafy greens and balanced proteins.

She gives Augusta small presents, sachets stuffed with rose petals, sunflower-seed cookies to

take back to school with her. But they never seem to be the right things, they never seem to be enough.

Augusta tells Charis to straighten her shoulders or she'll be a bag lady in old age. She goes through Charis's cupboards and drawers and throws out the candle ends Charis has been saving to make into other candles, sometime when she gets around to it, and the partly used

soaps she's been intending to cook into other soaps, and the twists of wool destined for Christmas tree decorations that got moths in them by mistake. She asks Charis when she last

cleaned the toilet, and orders her to get rid of the clutter in the kitchen, by which she means the bunches of dried herbs grown so lovingly by Charis every summer, and dangling - somewhat dusty, but still usable - from the nails of different sizes that stud the top of the window frame, and the hanging wire basket for eggs and onions where Charis tosses her gloves and scarves, and the Oxfam oven mitts made by mountain peasant women, somewhere far away, in the shape of a red owl and a navy blue pussycat.

Augusta frowns at the owl and the pussycat. Her own kitchen will be white, she tells Charis, and very functional. with everything stored in drawers. She's already cut out a picture of it, from Architectural Digest.

Charis loves Augusta, but decides not to think about her right now. It's too early in the morning. Instead she will enjoy the sunrise, which is a more neutral way to begin the day. She goes to the small bedroom window and flings aside the curtain, which is a piece of the same print that covers her bed. She hasn't got around to herriiing it, but she will, later.

Several

of the thumbtacks holding its top end to the wall pop out and scatter on the floor. Now she will have to remember, and avoid

49

stepping on them in her bare feet. She should get a curtain rod, or something, or two hooks with a piece of string: that wouldn't be very expensive. In any case the curtain has to be washed before Augusta comes home again. "Don't you ever u)asla this thing?" she said the last time she was here. "It looks like poor people's underpants:" Augusta has a graphic way of

putting things that makes Charis wince. It's too sharp, too bright, too jagged: shapes cut from

tin.

Never mind. The view from her bedroom window is there to soothe her. Her house is the end one in the row, and then comes the grass and then the trees, maple and willow, and through a gap in the trees the harbour, with the sun just beginning to touch the water, from which, today, a vapoury mist is rising. So pink, so white, so softly blue, with a slice of moon and the gulls circling and dipping like flights of souls; and on the mist the city floats, tower and tower and tower and spire, the glass walls of different colours, black, silver, green, copper, catching the light and throwing it back, tenderly at this hour.

From here on the Island, the city is mysterious, like a mirage, like the cover on a book of science fiction. A paperback. It's like this at sunset too, when the sky turns burnt orange and

then

the crimson of inner space, and then indigo, and the lights in the many windows change the darkness to gauze; and then at night the neon shows up against the sky and it gives off a - glow,

like an amusement park or something safely on fire. The only time Charis doesn't care to look at

the city is noon, in the full glare of the day. It's too clear-cut, too brash and assertive. It juts, it pushes. It's just girders then, and slabs of concrete.

Charis would rather look at the city than go there, even at dusk. Once she's in it she can no longer see it; or she sees it only in detail, and it becomes harsher, pockmarked, crisscrossed

with grids, like a microscopic photograph of skin. She has to go into it every day, however; she has to work. She likes her job well enough as jobs go, but it's a job, and every job has shackles

50

attached to it. Square brackets. So she tries to plan a small respite for each day, a small joy,

something extra.

Today she's having lunch at the Toxique, with Roz and Tony. In a way they are inappropriate friends for her to have. It's odd to think that she's known them so long, ever since McClung Hall. Well, not known. She didn't truly know anybody back then, just their appearances. But Tony and Roz are friends now, that's beyond a doubt. They're part of her pattern, for this life.

She steps away from the window, and pauses to remove a thumbtack from her foot. It doesn't hurt as much as she would have expected. She flashes briefly on the image of a bed of

nails, with herself lying on it. It would take some getting used to, but it would be good training.

She pulls off her white cotton nightgown, drinks the glass of water she leaves beside her bed every night to remind herself about drinking enough water, and does her yoga exercises in

nothing but her underpants. Her leotard is in the wash, but who cares? Nobody can see her. There are some good things about living alone. The room is cool, but cool air tones up the skin. One nice thing about her job is that it doesn't start until ten, which gives her a long morning, time to grow slowly into her day.

She cheats a little on the exercises because she doesn't feel like lying down on the floor right now. Then she goes downstairs and has her shower. The bathroom is off the kitchen, because it was added on after the house was built. A lot of the Island houses are like that;

at

first they would have had outhouses, because they were just summer cottages then. Charis has

painted her bathroom a cheerful shade of pink, but that's done nothing to improve the slanting

floor. Possibly the bathroom is coming away from the rest of the house, which would account

for the cracks, and the drafts in winter. She may have to get it propped up.

51

Charis washes herself with Body Shop shower gel, the Dewberry flavour: her arms, her neck, her legs with their nearly invisible scars. She likes to be clean. There's clean outside and

there's clean inside, her grandmother used to say, and clean inside is better. But Charis is not

altogether clean inside: shreds of Zenia cling to her still, like dirty spangled muslin. She sees

the

name Zenia in her head, glowing like a scratch, like lava, and draws a line through it with a thick black crayon. It's too early in the morning to think about Zenia.

She scrubs her hair in the shower, then gets out and toweldries it and parts it in the middle. Augusta is pestering her to get it cut. Coloured also. Augusta doesn't want an old washedout

mother. Washed-out is her phrase. "I like myself the way I am," Charis tells her; but she wonders if that's altogether true. However, she refuses to dye her hair, because once you begin

you have to keep on doing it, and that's just one more heavy chain. Look at Roz.

She does her breast self-examination in the bathroom mirror - she has to do it every day, or she'll forget and never do it - and doesn't find any lumps. Maybe she should start wearing a brassiere. Maybe she should always have worn one; then she wouldn't have become so floppy.

Nobody tells you about aging, in advance. No, that's not right. People tell you but you don't hear them. "Mum's on another channel," August used to say to her friends, before she added

the a.

Charis takes her quartz pendulum out of its blue Chinese silk drawstring bag - silk conserves the vibrations, says Shanita - and holds it over her head, watching it in the mirror. "Will this be a good day?" she asks it. Round and round means yes, back and forth means no.

The pendulum hesitates, begins to swing: a sort of ellipse. It can't make up its mind.

Normal,

thinks Charis. Then it gives a sort of jump, and stops. Charis is puzzled: she's never seen it do

that before. She decides to ask Shanita; Shanita will know. She tucks the pendulum back into

its bag.

52

To get another angle, she takes down her grandmother's Bible, closes her eyes, and pokes at

the pages with a pin. She hasn't done this for a while, but she hasn't lost the knack. Her hand is

drawn down, and she opens her eyes and reads: For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face

to face. First Corinthians, and, as a daily forecast, not one whole lot of help.

For breakfast she has muesli, with yogourt mixed in and half an apple cut up in it. When Billy was here they used to have eggs, from the long-vanished hens, and bacon. Or Billy would have

bacon. He liked it.

Charis quickly wipes from her mind - Wipe it! Like a video! says Shanita - the image of Billy,

and of the things he liked. She considers bacon instead. She stopped eating bacon when she

was seven, but other kinds of meat went later. The Save Your Life Cookbook advised her, back

there, back then, to visualize what any given piece of fat would look like in her stomach. A pound of butter, a pound of lard, a strip of bacon, uncooked, white and limp and flat like a tapeworm. Charis is all too good at visualizing; she hasn't been able to stop with fat. Every time she puts something into her mouth she's likely to see it in living colour, as it makes its way

down her esophagus into her stomach, where it churns unpleasantly and then inches

through

her digestive tract, which is the shape of a long snarled garden hose covered inside with little

rubbery fingers, like foot massage sandals. Sooner or later it will come out the other end.

This

is what her concentration on healthy eating can lead to: she sees everything on her plate in the

guise of a future turd.

Wipe the bacon, she tells herself sternly. It's sunny outside now, she should think about that.

She sits at her kitchen table, a round oak one she's had ever since August was born, in her Japanese cotton kimono with the bamboo shoots on it, and eats her muesli, giving it the recommended number of chews and looking out the kitchen window. She used to be able to

see the

53

henhouse from here. Billy built that himself and she left it there as a sort of monument, even though there were no hens in it any more, until August changed into Augusta and made her

take it down. The two of them did it with crowbars, and she cried afterwards, on her white bedspread with the vines. If only she knew where he'd gone. If only she knew where they'd

taken him. He must have been taken somewhere, by force, by someone. He wouldn't have just

gone away like that, without telling her, without writing ...

Pain hits her in the neck, right across the windpipe, before she can stop it. Wipe the pain.

But

sometimes she just can't. She bangs her forehead softly on the edge of the table.

"Sometimes I just can't," she says out loud.

All right then, says Shanita's voice. Let it wash. Let it just wash over you. It's only a wave. It's like

water. Think about what colour that wave is.

"Red," says Charis out loud.

Well then, says Shanita, smiling. That can be a pretty colour too, can't it? Just hold that. Just hold that

colour.

"Yes," says Charis meekly. "But it hurts."

Well of course it hurts! Who ever said it wouldn't hurt? If it hurts, that means you are still alive!

Now -

what colour is that hurt? Charis breathes in, breathes out, and the colour fades. It works with headaches, too. She once tried to explain this to Roz, when Roz was in deep pain, a deeper and

more recent pain than Charis's. Though maybe not deeper. "You can heal yourself," she told Roz, keeping her voice level and confident, like Shanita's. "You can control it."

"That is such horseshit," said Roz angrily. "It is absolutely no use saying you should stop loving someone. It doesn't work like that!"

"Well, you should, if you know it's bad for you," said Charis. "Bad for you has nothing to do with it," said Roz.

"I like hamburgers," said Charis, "but I don't eat them:"

54

"Hamburgers are not an emotion," said Roz. "Yes they are," said Charis.

Charis gets up to put on the kettle. She'll make some Morning Miracle tea, a special blend from work. To light the gas stove she stands sideways, because at some times - and this is one of them - she doesn't like to turn her back to the kitchen door.

The kitchen door has a glass panel in it, at head height. A month ago, when she came home

for the weekend, Augusta gave Charis a scare. Not in the morning, but at night, at dusk. It was drizzling, a fine Scotch mist; the city and part of the lake were blotted out, and there was no light from the hidden sunset. Charis wasn't expecting Augusta until later, or possibly not until the next day; she was expecting her to phone, from the mainland, though she didn't know just

when. Augusta has become fairly offhand about her comings and goings.

But suddenly there was a woman's face framed in the glass panel of the door. A white face, indistinct in the murkiness, in the cloudy air. Charis turned away from the stove and caught sight of it, and the back of her neck bristled.

It was only Augusta, but that's not what Charis thought. She thought it was Zenia. Zenia, with her dark hair sleeked down by the rain, wet and shivering, standing on the back step as she had done once before, long ago. Zenia, who had been dead for five years.

The worst thing, thinks Charis, was that she'd confused Zenia with her own daughter, who is nothing like Zenia at all. What a terrible thing for her to have done.

No. The worst thing was that she hadn't really been all that surprised.

VIII

Not surprised, because people don't die. Or so Charis believes. Tony asked her once what she

meant by die, and Charis - who is made nervous by Tony's way of pinning her down, and frequently gets out of it by pretending she hasn't heard the question - had to admit that they did go through a process that everyone was in the habit of calling death: Certainly some fairly terminal things happened to the body, things that Charis would rather not dwell on because she hasn't decided whether it would be better to mingle with the earth, or - through cremation

- with the air. Each of these possibilities is appealing as a sort of general idea, but when it comes right down to it, to particulars such as her own fingers, toes, and mouth, then less. But death was just a stage, she tried to say. It was just a sort of state, a transition; it was - well, a learning experience.

She isn't very good at explaining things to Tony. She usually stutters to a halt, especially with Tony's huge and slightly chilly eyes fixed on her, magnified by those glasses, and with Tony's little pearly-toothed mouth slightly open. It's as if Tony is amazed by everything Charis

says. But amazement is not - she suspects - what is really going on in that delicate head of Tony's. Though Tony never laughs at her, not up front.

"What do you learn?" said Tony.

"Well, you learn - how to be better, next time. You join the light," said Charis. Tony leaned forward, looking interested, so Charis fumbled on. "People have after-death experiences, and

that's what they say, that's how we know. When they come back to life again:"

"They come back to life?" said Tony, her eyes enormous. "People pound their chests. And breathe into them, and warm them up, and, and, bring them back," said Charis. "She means

near-death," said Roz, who often tells Tony what

56

Charis means. "You must have read those articles! It's a number lately. You're supposed to get a

sort of son et lumiere. Tunnels and fireworks and baroque music. My father had one, when he

had the first heart attack. His old bank manager showed up, lit like a Christmas tree, and told my

father he couldn't die yet because he had unfinished business:"

"Ah," said Tony. "Unfinished business:'

Charis wanted to say that this wasn't what she meant, she did mean after death. "Some people don't get as far as the light," she said. "They get lost. In the tunnel. Some of them don't even know they're dead:" She did not go on to say that these sorts of people could be quite dangerous because they could get into your own body, more or less move into it, like squatters, and then it could be difficult to get them out again. She didn't go on to say this, because it would have been futile: Tony was a proof addict.

"Right," said Roz, who was made very uncomfortable by this sort of conversation. "I know people like that. My own bank manager, for instance. Or the government. Dead all right, but do they know it?" She laughed, and asked Charis what could be wrong with her delphiniums, because they were turning black. "It's a mildew," said Charis. That was how Roz handled the afterlife: perennial borders. It was the one subject about which Charis had a good deal more hard data than Tony did.

But when Zenia appeared at the back door, in the rain, this is what Charis thought. She thought, Zenia is lost. She can't find the light. Maybe she doesn't even know she's dead. What would be more natural than for her to show up at Charis's house, to ask for help? Help was what she had come for, at first.

Then of course it turned out that Zenia wasn't Zenia at all, but only Augusta, home for the weekend and slightly forlorn, because - Charis suspected - some other plan of hers had

fallen through, something involving a man. There are men in Augusta's life, Charis divines this; though they are not produced, they are not presented to Charis. Most likely they are in the business course too, fledgling entrepreneurs who would take one look at Charis in her not yet fully organized house and run like crazy. Most likely Augusta heads them off. Maybe she tells them her mother is ill, or in Florida or something.

But Augusta is not completely lacquered yet; she does have moments of soft guilt. That time, she'd brought a loaf of bran bread with her as a peace offering, and some dried figs. Charis

gave her an extra hug and made her some zucchini muffins, and a hot-water bottle for her bed, as she used to do when Augusta was little, because she was so thankful that Augusta was not Zenia after all.

Still, it's almost as if Zenia really has been here. As if she came and then went away without getting what she wanted. As if she'll be back.

When she materializes the next time, Charis will be expecting her. Zenia must have something she wants to say. Or no. Maybe it's Charis who has something to say; maybe this is

what's holding Zenia to this earth. Because Zenia's around, she's around somewhere, Charis has

known it ever: since that funeral. She looked at the canister with Zenia's ashes in it, and she

knew. The ashes might be in there, but ashes were not a person. Zenia was not in that canister, or with the light either. Zenia was loose, loose in the air but tethered to the world of appearances, and it's all the fault of Charis. It's Charis who needs her to be here, it's Charis who won't cut her free.

Zenia will appear, her white face looming in the glass oblong, and Charis will open the door. Come in, she will say, because the dead can't cross your threshold unless you invite
58

them. Come in, she will say, risking her own body, because Zenia will be searching for a new

flesh dress. Come in, she will say, for the third and crucial time, and Zenia will drift through the

doorway, her eyes cavernous, her hair like cold smoke. She will stand in the kitchen and the light will darken, and Charis will be afraid.

But she won't back down, she won't back away this time. What did they do with Billy? she'll ask her. Zenia is the only one who knows.

Charis goes back upstairs and gets dressed for work, trying not to look over her shoulder. Sometimes she thinks it's not such a great idea for her to live alone. The rest of the time she

likes it, though. She can do what she wants, she can be who she is, and if she talks out loud to

herself there's nobody to stare. Nobody to complain about the dustballs, except maybe Augusta, who gets out the broom and sweeps them up.

She steps on another thumbtack and this one hurts more, so she puts on her shoes. When she has all of her clothes on she goes in search of her reading glasses, because she'll need them

at work, when she's making out invoices, and to read the menu at the Toxique.

She looks forward to that lunch. She wills herself to look forward to it, although there's something tugging at her, some intuition ... a sinking feeling. Not something violent, like an explosion or a fire. Something else. She often has these feelings, but since nothing ever comes

of half of them they aren't dependable. Shanita says it's because she has a Solomon's Cross on

her palm but it's fuzzed over; too many wispy hairlines. "You are picking up a lot of stations," is what Shanita says. "Cosmic static:"

She finds the reading glasses under the tea cosy in the kitchen; she doesn't remember putting them there. Objects have a life of their own, and the ones in her house move around
59

at night. They've been doing it more, recently. It's the ozone layer, probably. Unknown energies

are getting through.

She has twenty minutes to walk to the ferry. That's ample. She goes out the back door as a matter of course; the front one is nailed shut, with plastic sheeting on the inside for insulation

and an Indian hand-woven bedspread over top of it, in a paisley green-and-blue print. The insulation is for winter. In the summers she takes it down, except last summer she didn't get around to it. There's always a bunch of dead flies underneath the plastic, and she doesn't enjoy

them a lot.

The air on the Island is so good. Compared, that is. At least there's usually a breeze. She pauses outside her back door, breathing in the comparatively good air, feeling its crispness fill

her lungs. Her vegetable garden is still pushing up the Swiss chard, there are still carrots and green tomatoes; a rusty-orange chrysanthemum blooms in one corner. The soil is rich here; traces of henschit still linger, and she digs in compost from her compost heap every spring and

fall. It's almost time to do it, now, before the first frost comes.

She loves her garden; she loves kneeling in the dirt, with both hands deep in the ground, rummaging among the roots with the earthworms slipping away from her groping fingers, enveloped in the smell of mudpies and slow ferment and thinking about nothing. Helping things grow. She never uses gardening gloves, much to Augusta's despair.

Shanita says her grandmother used to eat dirt, a handful or two every spring. She said it was

good for you. (Although it's been impossible for Charis to figure out exactly which grandmother she means: Shanita seems to have more than two.) But eating dirt is the sort of

thing that Charis's own grandmother might have done, because that grandmother, grubby and

terrifying though she had been, was a woman who knew about such things. Charis hasn't got

around to trying it herself yet, but she's working up to it.

60

At the front of her house there's more to be done. She pulled out the lawn last spring, and tried for a sort of English cottage effect, which she thought would go well with the house itself,

with its white clapboard and slightly falling-apart look; but she planted too many species and

didn't thin out, nor did she weed - as much as she should have, and what resulted was a sort of

scramble. Mostly the snapdragons won; they're still blooming, some of the tall spikes fallen over

(she should have staked them), with leggy offshoots coming up from them. Next year she'll put

the tall things in the back, and have fewer colours.

If there is a next year, that is. Next year she may not even have a house. The Island's war with the city is still going on. The city wants to tear down all these houses, level everything, turn it into a park. A lot of the houses here went that way, years ago, before people dug in their heels. Charis sees it as envy: if the city people can't live here themselves they don't want

anyone else to be able to do it either. Well, it kept the property prices low. If not for that, where would Charis be?

And if no one lived on the Island, who would ever be able to look at the city from a distance, the way Charis does every morning at sunrise, and find it so beautiful? Without such

a vision of itself, of its loveliness and best possibilities, the city would decay, would crack apart, would collapse into useless rubble. It's only sustained by belief; belief, and meditation,

the meditation of people like her. Charis knows this for a certainty, but so far she has been unable to put it that way, exactly, in her frequent letters to the city councillors, only two of which she has actually got around to mailing. But just writing it down helps. It beams out the message, which gets into the city councillors' heads without their awareness. It's like radio waves.

When she reaches the dock the ferry is already boarding. People are going on, singly and in twos;

there's something processional about their entrance, in the way they step from land to

61

water. Right here was where she last saw Billy; and also Zenia, in the flesh. They were already

aboard, and as Charis came heavily running, gasping, hands on her belly to hold it attached to

her, it was dangerous for her to run like that, she could have fallen and lost the baby, the ferry

men were hoisting up the gangway, the ferry was hooting and backing out, the deep water churning to a whirlpool. She couldn't have jumped.

Billy and Zenia were not touching. There were two strange men with them; or there were two strange men standing nearby. Men in overcoats. Billy saw her. He didn't wave. He turned

away. Zenia didn't move. Her aura was deep red. Her hair blew out around her head. The sun

was behind her, so she had no face. She was a dark sunflower. The sky was hugely blue.

The

two of them got smaller, going away.

Charis doesn't remember the sound that came out of her. She doesn't want to. She tries to hold the image of the two of them receding, a moment of time stilled and devoid of content, like a postcard with nothing written on the back.

She walks to the main deck and settles herself for transition. In her cardigan pocket she has a

crust of bread; she will feed it to the gulls, who are already circling, eyeing her, crying like hungry spirits.

Maybe you don't enter the light through a tunnel, she:thinks: Maybe it's a boat, as the ancients said it was. You pay your fare, you cross, you drink of the River of Forgetfulness. Then you are reborn.

The place where Charis works is called Radiance. It sells crystals of all kinds, big and small,

made into pendants and earrings

62

or just raw, and seashells; and essential oils imported from Egypt and southern France, and incense from India, and organic body creams and bath gels from California and England, and

sachets of bark and herbs and dried flowers, from France mainly, and Tarot cards in six different patterns, and Afghan and Thai jewellery, and tapes of New Age music with a lot of harp and flute sounds in them, and CDs of seashores, waterfalls, and loon calls, and books on

Native Indian spirituality and Health Secrets of the Aztecs, and mother-of-pearl inlaid chopsticks and lacquered bowls from Japan, and tiny carvings of Chinese jade, and recycled

handmade-paper greeting cards with arrangements of dried weeds stuck onto them, and packets of wild rice, and non-caffeine teas from eight different countries, and necklaces of cowries, dried plant seeds, polished stones, and carved wooden beads.

Charis remembers this place from the sixties. It was called The Blown Mind Shoppe then, and had hash pipes and psychedelic posters and roach clips and tie-dyed undershirts and dashikis. In the seventies it was called Okkult, and had books on demonology, as well as on women's ancient religions and Wicca and the lost kingdoms of Atlantis and Mu, and some unappealing bone artefacts, and smelly - and in Charis's opinion, fraudulent - bundles of ground-up animal parts. There was a stuffed alligator in its window then, and for a while it even sold fright wigs and horror makeup kits, with fake blood and glue-on scars. That was a low point for it, although popular with the punk set.

It changed again in the early eighties. That was when Shanita took over, when it was still Okkult. She quickly got rid of the stuffed alligator and the bones and the demonology books

- why borrow trouble, she says, and she didn't want any run-ins with the animal-rights folks, or any Christian weirdos spray-painting the window. It was her idea to start up the crystals, and to change the name to Radiance.

63

It was the name that attracted Charis. First she was just a customer: she came in for the herbal teas. But then the sales position came open, and since she was tired of her job filing reports at the Ministry of Natural Resources - too impersonal, too much pressure, and besides she wasn't very good at it - she applied. Shanita hired her because she had the right

look, or so Shanita told her.

"You won't bug the customers," said Shanita. "They don't like to be pushed. They like to just sort of float around in here, know what I mean?"

Charis did. She likes to float around in Radiance herself. She likes the way it smells, and she likes the things in it. Sometimes she does a trade, taking goods - at a discount price - instead of pay, much to Augusta's disgust. More of that junk? she says. She does not see how

many more Japanese lacquered bowls and tapes of loon calls Charis really needs. Charis says

it isn't a matter of need, material need that is. It's a matter of spiritual need. Right now she has her eye on a truly lovely amethyst geode, from Nova Scotia. She will keep it in her bedroom, to ward off bad dreams.

She can picture Augusta's response to this geode. Mom! What's this hunk of rock doing in your

bed? She can picture Tony's interested scepticism - Does it really work? - and Roz's maternal

indulgence - Honey, if it makes you happy I'm all for it! This has been her problem all her life: picturing other people's responses. She's too good at it. She can picture the response of anyone

- other people's reactions, their emotions, their criticisms, their demands - but somehow they

don't reciprocate. Maybe they can't. Maybe they lack the gift, if it is one.

Charis walks away from the ferry dock, up to King and then Queen, sniffing the turgid city air,

so different from the air on the Island. This air is full of chemicals, and also of breath, the breath of other people. There are too many people breathing in

64

this city. There are too many people breathing on this planet; maybe it would be beneficial if a

few million of them would make the transition. But this is an appallingly selfish thought, so Charis stops thinking it. Instead she thinks about sharing. Every single molecule that Charis is

taking into her lungs has been sucked in and out of the lungs of countless thousands of other

people, many times: Come to that, every single molecule in her body has once been part of someone else's body, of the bodies of many others, going back and back, and then past human

beings, all the way to the dinosaurs, all the way to the first planktons. Not to mention vegetation. We are all a part of everybody else, she muses. We are all a part of everything. That's a cosmic insight, if you can keep it at arm's length. But then Charis has an

unpleasant

idea. If everyone is part of everyone else, then she herself is a part of Zenia. Or the other way

around. Zenia may be what she's breathing in. The part of Zenia that went up in smoke, that is.

Not her astral body, which is still hovering near earth, and not the ashes either, which are safely in that canister under the mulberry tree.

Maybe that's what Zenia wants! Maybe she's bothered by her partial state, some of her energy in the canister and some wafting around. Maybe she wants to be let out. Maybe Charis

should go to the cemetery some night, with a shovel and a canopener, and dig her up and sprinkle her. Mingle her with the Universe. That would be a kindly thing to do.

She reaches Radiance at ten to ten, early for once, and lets herself in with her key, and puts on

the mauve-and-aqua smock that Shanita designed for them so the customers will know they aren't customers themselves.

Shanita is already there. "Hi, Charis, how're you doing?" she calls out, from the stockroom at the back. It's Shanita who does all the ordering. She has a knack for it; she goes to crafts fairs and takes trips to little-known corners, and finds things,

65

wonderful things that no other store in town has. She seems to know in advance what people will

want.

Charis admires Shanita a lot. Shanita is smart and practical, as well as being psychic. Also she's

strong, and also she's one of the most beautiful women Charis has ever seen. Though she isn't

young - she must be well over forty. She refuses to tell her age - the one time Charis asked her,

she only laughed, and said age was in the mind and in her mind she was two thousand - but she's

getting a white streak in her hair. That's another thing Charis admires: Shanita doesn't dye. The hair itself is black, neither curly nor frizzy but wavy, thick and shining and luscious, like pulled taffy or lava. Like hot black glass. Shanita coils it, and winds it here and there on her head:

sometimes on top, sometimes on one side. Or else she lets it hang down her back in one thick

curl. She has wide cheekbones, a trim high-bridged nose, full lips, and large darkly fringed eyes,

which are a startling shade that shifts from brown to green, depending on what colour she's wearing. Her skin is smooth and unwrinkled, an indeterminate colour, neither black nor brown

nor yellow. A deep beige; but beige is a bland word. Nor is it chestnut, nor burnt sienna, nor umber. It's some other word.

People coming into the store frequently ask Shanita where she's from. "Right here," she says,

smiling her ultra-bright smile. "I was born right in this very city!" She's nice about it to their faces,

but it's a question that bothers her a lot.

"I think they mean, where were your parents from," says Charis, because that's what Canadians usually mean when they ask that question.

"That's not what they mean," says Shanita. "What they mean is, when am I leaving."

Charis cannot see why anyone would want Shanita to leave, but when she says so, Shanita

laughs. "You," she says, "have led one damn sheltered life." Then she tells Charis about the rudeness

66

of white streetcar conductors towards her. "Move to the back, they tell me, like I was dirt!"

"Streetcar conductors are all rude! They say Move to the back to everybody, they're rude to me!"

says Charis, intending to console Shanita - although she's being slightly dishonest, it's only some

streetcar conductors, and she herself hardly ever takes the streetcar - and Shanita throws her a

glance of contempt, for being unable to acknowledge the racism of almost everybody, almost

everybody white, and then Charis feels bad. Sometimes she thinks of Shanita as a dauntless

explorer, hacking her way through the jungle. The jungle consists of people like Charis.

So she stops herself from being too curious, from asking too much about Shanita, about her

background, about where she's from. Shanita teases her, though; she throws out hints, changes her

story. Sometimes she's part Chinese and part black, with a West Indian grandmother; she can do

the accent, so maybe there's something to it. That might be the grandmother who used to eat

dirt; but there are other grandmothers too, one from the States and one from Halifax, and one

from Pakistan and one from New Mexico, and even one from Scotland. Maybe they are step-

grandmothers, or maybe Shanita moved around a lot. Charis can't sort them out: Shanita has

more grandmothers than anyone she knows. But sometimes she's part Ojibway, or else part

Mayan, and one day she was even part Tibetan. She can bewhatever she feels like, because who

can tell?

Whereas Charis is stuck with being white. A white rabbit. Being white is getting more and more exhausting. There are so many bad waves attached to it, left over from the past but spreading through the present, like the killing rays from atomic waste dumps. There's so much

to expiate! It gives her anemia just to think about it. In her next life she's going to be a mixture,

a blend, a vigorous hybrid, like Shanita. Then no one will have anything on her.

67

The store doesn't open till eleven, so Charis helps take stock. Shanita goes through the shelves,

counting, and Charis writes down the numbers on a clipboard. It's a good thing she found her

reading glasses.

"We'll have to bring down the prices," says Shanita, frowning. "Stuff is not moving. We'll have to do a sale:"

"Before Christmas?" says Charis, astonished.

"It's the Recession," says Shanita, pursing her lips: "That's reality. This time of year, we usually, have to re-order for Christmas, right? Now, just look at all this!"

Charis peers: the shelves are upsettingly full. "You know what's moving?" says Shanita.

"This thing:"

Charis is familiar with it, because she's sold a lot of them lately. It's a little pamphlet-like book, a cookbook, done on grey recycled paper with black-and-white fine drawings, a do-it-yourself home publishing effort: Pot Luck: Penny-Pinching Soups & Stews. It doesn't appeal to her, _ personal.ly. Pennypinching as a concept she finds very blocking. There's something

hard and grinding about it, and pinching is a hurtful word. True, she saves candle ends and pieces of wool, but that's because she wants to, she wants to create things with them, that's an

act of love towards the earth.

"I need more stuff like this," says Shanita. `Fact is, I'm thinking of changing the store.

Changing the name, the concept, everything."

Charis's heart sinks. "What would you change it to?" she asks. "I was thinking, Scrimpers," says Shanita.

"Scrimpers?" says Charis.

"You know. Like the old five-and-dime, all cheap stuff," says Shanita. "Only more creative.

It could work! A few years ago, you could trade on the impulse buy. Mad money, you know? Folks were flinging it around. But the only way you make it through a recession is by getting people to buy stuff about how not to buy stuff, if you know what I mean."

68

"But Radiance is so lovely!" cries Charis unhappily.

"I know," says Shanita. It was a lot of fun while it lasted. But lovely is luxury goods. How many of these dinky toys you think people are going to buy, right now? Maybe some, but only

if we keep the price down. In these times you cut your losses, you cut your overheads, you do

what you have to. This is a lifeboat, you know? It's my lifeboat, it's my life. I have worked damn hard, I know which way the wind is blowing, and I do not intend to go down with the sinking ship:'

She's defensive. She looks at Charis, her gaze level - her eyes are green today - and Charis

realizes that she herself is an overhead. If things get much worse, Shanita will cut her, and run

the store by herself, and Charis will be out of a job.

They finish taking stock and open the door for the day, and Shanita's mood changes. She's friendly now, almost solicitous; she makes them both some Morning Miracle, and they sit at the front counter drinking it. There is not exactly a stampede of customers, so Shanita passes

the time by asking Charis all about Augusta.

To Charis's discomfort, Shanita approves of Augusta; she thinks Augusta is smart to be taking a business course. "A woman needs to be prepared to make her own way," she says.

"Too many lazy men around:" She even approves of the furniture scrapbook, which Charis herself finds so grasping, so materialistic. "That's a girl with a head on her shoulders," Shanita

says, pouring them out more tea. "Wish I'd had one, at her age. Would've saved myself a lot of

trouble." She has two daughters of her own, and two sons, grown up. She's a grandmother, even; but she doesn't talk much about that part of her life. By now she knows a great deal about Charis, whereas Charis knows almost nothing about her.

"My pendulum went funny this morning," says Charis, to get off the subject of Augusta.

69

"Funny?" says Shanita. The pendulums are sold in the store, five different models, and

Shanita is an expert at interpreting their movements.

"It just stopped," says Charis. "Stock-still, right over my head."

"That's a strong message," says Shanita. "That's something real sudden, something you weren't looking for. Maybe it's some entity, trying to get a message through. Today is the cusp

of Scorpio, right? It's like, the pendulum is pointing a finger and saying, watch out!"

Charis is apprehensive: could it be Augusta, an accident? That's the first thing she thinks, of, so she asks.

"It's not what I get," says Shanita reassuringly, "but let's just see." She takes the Tarot she keeps under the counter, the Marseilles deck she favours, and Charis shuffles and cuts.

"The Tower," says Shanita. "Sudden, like I said. The Priestess. An opening, something hidden is revealed. The Knight of Swords - well, that could be interesting! The Knights all bring messages. Now, the Empress. A strong woman! Not you, though. Somebody else. But I

wouldn't say this is Augusta, no. The Empress is not a young girl."

"Maybe it's you," Charis says, and Shanita laughs and says, "Strong! I am a broken reed!"

She puts down another card. "Death," she says. "A change. Could be a renewal." She crosses-

that card again. "Oh. The Moon:"

The Moon, with its baying dogs, its pool, its lurking scorpion. Just then the bell tinkles and a customer comes into the store; she asks Charis for two copies of Pot Luck, one for herself,

one for a gift. Charis agrees with her that it's very useful and not too expensive, and that the hand-done illustrations are sweet, and tells her that yes, Shanita is truly stunning but she's not

from any place except just plain old Toronto, and takes the money and wraps the books, her mind elsewhere.

The Moon, she thinks. Illusion:

70

At noon Charis takes off her flowered smock and says goodbye to Shanita - it's her half-day,

Tuesday, so she won't be back after lunch - and heads out into the street, trying not to breathe

too much. She has seen bicycle messengers wearing white paper nose masks, like nurses. It's a

trend, she thinks; maybe they should order some for the store, only coloured and with some nice patterns printed on.

As soon as she walks into the Toxique her head starts to crackle. It's as if there's a thunderstorm around somewhere, or a loose connection. Ions are bombarding her, wavelets of

menacing energy. She brushes her forehead, then shakes her fingers to get rid of them.

She cranes her neck, looking around for the source of the disturbance. Sometimes it's the people who come in to deal drugs on the stairs going down to the washrooms, but none of them seem to be around right now. The waitress comes up to her, and Charis asks for the corner near the mirror. Mirrors deflect.

The Toxique is Roz's latest discovery. Roz is always discovering things, especially restaurants. She likes eating in places where no one from her office would ever eat, she likes

being' surrounded by people wearing clothes she'd never wear herself. She likes to think she's

mingling with real life, real meaning poorer than her. Or that's the impression Charis sometimes gets. She's tried telling Roz that all life is equally real, but Roz doesn't appear to understand what she means; though maybe Charis doesn't put it clearly enough.

She glances at the leopard-skin tights of the waitress, wrinkles her nose - these clothes are too tough for her - tells herself not to be judgmental, orders a bottle of Evian and some white wine, and settles down to wait. She opens the menu, squints at

71

it, rummages in her bag for her reading glasses, can't find them - has she left them at the store?

- and finally locates them on top of her head. She must have walked along the street like that.

She puts them on her nose and scans the daily specials. At least they always have something

vegetarian; though who knows where the vegetables come from? Probably off some irradiated

chemical-saturated agro-business maxi-farm.

The truth is that she doesn't much like the Toxique. It's partly the name: she considers it damaging to the neurons to spend time around such a poisonous name. And the clothes on the

waiters, the servers, remind her of some of the things they used to sell in Okkult. At any moment there could be rubber scars and fake blood. But she's willing to eat here once in a while for the sake of Roz.

As for Tony, who knows what she thinks of this place? Tony's hard for Charis to read; she always has been, ever since they first met, back in the McClung Hall days. But most likely Tony

would have exactly the same attitude if it were the King Eddie, or else McDonald's: a kind of

goggle-eyed, incredulous note-taking, like a Martian on a time-travel holiday. Collecting specimens. Freeze-drying them. Sticking everything into labelled boxes. Leaving no space, no

space for the unsayable.

Not that she doesn't like Tony. No, wrong. There are quite a few times when she doesn't like Tony. Tony can use too many words, can grate on her, can rub her electrical field the wrong way. But she loves Tony all the same. Tony is so calm, so clearheaded, so grounded.

If

Charis ever hears any more voices telling her to slit her wrists, Tony is the one she'd call, to come over on the Island ferry and take charge of her, to defuse her, to tell her not to be an idiot. Tony would know what to do, step by step, one thing at a time, in order.

She wouldn't call Roz at first, because Roz would freak out, would cry and sympathize and agree with her about the unbearability of it all, and would be late for the ferry as well.

72

But afterwards, after she felt safe again, she would go to Roz for the hug.

Roz and Tony come in together, and Charis waves at them, and there's the flurry there always

is when Roz enters a restaurant, and the two of them sit down and Roz lights a cigarette, and

they start talking at once. Charis tunes out because she isn't that interested in what they're saying, and just lets their presences wash over her. Their presences are more important to her

anyway than what comes out of their mouths. Words are so often like window curtains,* a decorative screen put up to keep the neighbours at a distance. But auras don't lie. Charis herself doesn't see auras as often as she used to. When she was little. when she was

Karen, she

saw them effortlessly; now it's only at moments of stress. But she can sense them, the way blind people can sense colour through the ends of their fingers.

What she senses about Tony today is coolness. A transparent coolness. Tony reminds her

of a snowflake, so tiny and pale and fastidious, but cold; a mind like an ice cube, clear and square; or cut glass, hard and sharp. Or ice, because it can melt. In the school play, Tony would

have been a snowflake: one of the smallest children, too little for a speaking part but taking it

all in. Charis herself was usually cast as a tree or a shrub. She wasn't given anything that involved moving around because she would have bumped into things, or that's what the teachers said. They didn't realize that her clumsiness was not the ordinary kind, not poor coordination. It was just because she wasn't sure where the edges of her body ended and the

rest of the world began.

What would Roz have been? Charis visualizes Roz's aura - so golden and many-coloured and spicy - and her air of command, but also that undercurrent of exile, and casts her in the role of one of the Three Kings, wearing brocade and jewels, carrying a splendid gift. But would

Roz ever have been in

73

such a play? Her early life is such a jumble, with all those nuns and rabbis in it. Maybe she wouldn't have been allowed. Charis herself gave up Christianity a long time ago. For one thing,

the Bible is full of meat: animals being sacrificed, lambs, bullocks, doves. Cain was right to offer

up the vegetables, God was wrong to refuse them. And there's too much blood: people in the

Bible are always having their blood spilled, blood on their hands, their blood licked up by dogs.

There are too many slaughters, too much suffering, too many tears.

She used to think some of the Eastern religions would be more serene; she was a Buddhist for

a while, before she discovered how many Hells they had. Most religions are so intent on punishment.

She realizes that she's halfway through her lunch without having noticed. She's having the grated

carrot and cottage cheese salad, a wise choice; not that she can remember having ordered it, but

sometimes it's useful to have an automatic pilot like that, to take care of the routines. For a moment she watches Roz eat a piece of French bread; she likes to watch Roz eat French bread,

cracking it open, burying her nose in it - This is so good, Oeis is so good! - before sinking her

firm white teeth into it. It's like a small prayer, a miniature grace, what Roz does with bread.

"Tony," says Charis, "I could really make something good, with your back garden." Tony has a great space back there, but there's nothing in it except patchy lawn and some diseased trees.

What Charis has in mind would be fixing up the trees, and making a sort of woodland, with jack-

in-the-pulpits, violets, mayapples, Solomon's seal, things that grow in shade. Some ferns.

Nothing

that Tony would have to weed, she could never be depended on for that. It would be special!

Perhaps a fountain? But Tony doesn't answer her, and after a moment Charis realizes it's because she hasn't spoken out loud. Sometimes it's

74

hard for her to remember whether she's actually said a thing or not. Augusta has

complained

about this habit of hers, among others.

She tunes back in to the conversation: they're talking about some war. Charis wishes they wouldn't get going on war, but they often do these days. It seems to be in the air, after a long time of not being there much at all. Roz starts it; she asks Tony questions, because she likes to

ask people questions about things they're supposed to know about.

One of their lunches a few months ago was all about genocide, and Roz wanted to talk about

the Holocaust, and Tony launched into a detailed thing about genocides through the ages, Genghis Khan and then the Cathars in France, and then the Armenians being butchered by the

Turks, and then the Irish and the Scots and what the English did to them, death after horrible death, until Charis thought she was going to throw up.

Tony can deal with all of that, she can handle it, maybe to her it's just words, but for Charis the words are pictures and then screams and moans, and then the smell of rotting meat, and of

burning, of burning flesh, and then physical pain, and if you dwell on it you make it happen, and

she can never explain this to Tony in a way that Tony will understand, and also she's afraid they'll

decide she's being silly. Hysterical, a nitwit, a flake. She knows they both think that sometimes.

So she'd got up and gone down the dark splintery stairs to the washroom, where there was a

Renoir poster on the wall, a rounded pink woman drying herself leisurely after the bath, with blue

and mauve highlights on her body, and that was peaceful; but when she'd gone back upstairs

Tony was still in Scotland, with the Highland women and children being hunted down in the hills

and spitted like pigs and shot like deer.

"The Scots!" said Roz, who wanted to get back to the Holocaust. "They've done very well for themselves, look at all those bankers! Who cares about them?"

75

"I do," said Charis, surprising herself as much as she did the two of them. "I care:" They looked at her in amazement, because they were used to her taking mental time off when they

talked about war. They thought it didn't interest her.

"You do?" said Roz. her eyebrows up. "Why, Charis?" "You should care about everybody," said Charis. "Or maybe it's because I'm part Scottish. Part Scottish, part English. All those people who used to kill one another so much." She leaves out the Mennonites because she doesn't want to upset Roz, although the Mennonites don't count as real Germans. Also they never kill people; they only get killed, instead.

"Sweetie, I'm sorry," said Roz, contrite. "Of course! I keep forgetting. Stupid moi, thinking of you as pure creme de la wAsp." She patted Charis's hand.

"Nobody's killed them recently, though," said Charis. "Not all at once. But I guess that's how we ended up here:" "Ended up here?" said Tony, looking around. Did Charis mean the Toxique, or what?

"Because of wars," said Charis, unhappily; it's an insight she doesn't like much, now that she's had it. "In this country. Wars of one sort or another. But that was then. We should try to live in the now- don't you think? Or at least, I try to:"

Tony smiled at Charis with affection, or the closest she usually got to it. "She's absolutely

right," she said to Roz, as if this were a noteworthy event.

Right about what though, Charis wonders. The wars, or the now? Tony's standard response to

the now would be to tell Charis how many babies are being born per minute, in the now she's so

fond of, and how all that excess birth will inevitably lead to more wars. Then she would add a

footnote about the crazed behaviour of overcrowded rats. Charis is grateful she isn't doing that

today.

But she has it at last, the thread: it's Saddam Hussein and the

76

invasion of Kuwait, and what will happen next. "It's already been decided," says Tony, "like the

Rubicon," and Charis says, "The what?"

"Never mind, sweetie. it's just something historical," says Roz, because she at least does understand that this is not Charis's favourite topic of conversation, she's giving her

permission

to drift off.

But then it comes to Charis what the Rubicon is. It's something to do with Julius Caesar, they took it in high school. He crossed the Alps with elephants; another of those men who

got

famous for killing people. If they stopped giving medals to such men, thinks Charis, if they stopped giving them parades and making statues out of them, then those men would stop

doing it. Stop all the killing. They do it to get attention.

Maybe that's who Tony was, in a previous life: Julius Caesar. Maybe Julius Caesar has

been

sent back in the body of a woman, to punish him. A very short woman, so he can see what it's

like, to be powerless. Maybe that is the way things work.

The door opens, and Zenia is standing there. Charis goes cold all over, then takes a breath.

She's ready, she's been readying herself, though lunch at the Toxique is the last place she would have expected this, this manifestation, this return. The Tower;thinks Charis. A sudden

event. Something you weren't looking for. No wonder the pendulum stopped dead, right over her

head! But why did Zenia bother opening the door? She could have walked right through it.

Zenia is in black, which is no surprise, black was her colour. But the strange thing is that

she's fatter. Death has filled her out, which is not the usual way. Spirits are supposed to be thinner, hungry-looking, parched, and Zenia appears to be quite well. Especially, her

breasts

are larger. The last time Charis saw her in the flesh, she was skinny as a rake, a shadow practically, her

77

breasts almost flat, like circles of thick cardboard stuck against her chest, the nipples buttoning

them on. Now she's what you would call voluptuous.

She's angry, though. A dark aura swirls out from around her, like the corona of the sun in eclipse, only negative; a corona of darkness rather than of light. It's a turbulent muddy green,

shot through with lines of blood red and greyish black - the worst, the most destructive

colours, a deadly aureole, a visible infection. Charis will have to call on all her own light, the white light she's been working so hard at, storing up, for years and years. She will have to do

an

instant meditation, and what a place for it! Zenia has chosen the ground well for this

encounter: the Toxique, the chattering voices, the cigarette smoke and wine fumes, the thick breath-filled air of the city, all are working for Zenia. She stands in the doorway, scanning the room with a scornful rancorous glance, pulling off a glove, and Charis closes her own eyes and

repeats to herself. Think about the light.

"Tony, what's wrong?" says Roz, and Charis opens her eyes again. The waitress is moving towards Zenia.

"Turn your head slowly," says Tony. "Don't scream:" Charis watches with interest, to see if the waitress will walk right through Zenia; but she doesn't, she stops short. She must sense something. A coldness.

"Oh shit," says Roz. "It's her."

"Who?" says Charis, doubt beginning to form. Roz hardly ever says "Oh shit:" It must be important.

"Zenia," says Tony. So they can see her too! Well, why not? They have enough to say to her, each one of them. It isn't only Charis.

"Zenia's dead," says Charis. I wonder what she's come back for, is what she thinks. Who she's come back for. Zenia's aura has faded now, or else Charis can no longer see it: Zenia

appears to be solid, substantial, material, disconcertingly alive.

78

"He looked like a lawyer," says Charis. Zenia is coming towards her, and she concentrates all her forces for the moment of impact; but Zenia strides right past them in her richly textured

dress, with her long legs, her startling new breasts, her glossy hair nebulous around her shoulders, her purple-red angry mouth, trailing musky perfume. She's refusing to notice Charis,

refusing deliberately; she's passing a hand of darkness over her, usurping her, blotting her out.

Shaken and feeling sick, Charis closes her eyes, struggling to regain her body. My body, mine,

she repeats. I am a good person. I exist. In the moonlit night of her head she can see an image: a

tall structure, a building, something toppling from it, falling through the air, turning over and over. Coming apart.

XI

The three of them stand outside the Toxique, saying goodbye. Charis isn't entirely sure how she got out here. Her body has walked her out, all by itself, her body has taken care of it.

She's

shivering, despite the sun, she's cold, and she feels thinner - lighter and more porous. It's as though energy has been drained out of her, energy and substance, in order for Zenia to materi-

alize. Zenia has made it back across, back across the river; she's here now, in a fresh body,

and she's taken a chunk of Charis's own body and sucked it into herself.

That's wrong though. Zenia must be alive, because other people saw her. She sat down in a chair, she ordered a drink, she smoked a cigarette. But none of these are necessarily signs of

life.

Roz gives her a squeeze and says, "Take care of yourself, sweetie, I'll call you, okay?" and goes off in the direction of her car. Tony has already smiled at her and is going, gone, off down

the street, her short legs moving her steadily along, like a windup toy. For a moment Charis stands there in front of the Toxique, lost. She doesn't know what to do next. She could turn around and march back in there, march up to Zenia, stand planted; but the things she was going to say to Zenia have evaporated, have flown up out of her head. All that's left is a whirring sound.

She could go back to the store, back to Radiance, even though it's her half-day and Shanita isn't expecting her. She could tell Shanita what happened; Shanita is a teacher, maybe she can

help. But possibly Shanita won't be too sympathetic. A woman like that, she'll say. She's nothing.

Why are you concerned about her? You are giving her the power, you know better than that! What colour is

she? What colour is the pain? Wipe the tape!

Shanita has never had a dose of Zenia. She won't realize, she can't understand, that Zenia can't be meditated out of existence. If she could be, Charis would have done it long ago.

She decides to go home. She'll fill up the bathtub and put some orange peel into it, some rose oil, a few cloves; she'll pin up her hair and get into the tub and let her arms float in the scented water. Steering herself towards this goal, she walks downhill, in the general direction of

the lake and the ferry dock; but a block along she turns left and makes her way by a narrow alley to the next street, and then she turns left again, and now she's back on Queen.

Her body doesn't wish her to go home right now. Her body is urging her to have a cup of coffee; worse than that, a cup of espresso. This is so unusual - her body's promptings of this

kind are normally for fruit juice or glasses of water - that she feels obliged to do what it wants.

There's a cafe, right across the street from the Toxique. It's called the Kafay Nwar, and has a hot-pink neon sign in forties writing in the window. Charis goes into it and sits at one of the

small round chrome-edged tables by the window, and takes off

80

her cardigan, and when the waiter comes, wearing a pleated dress shirt, a black bow tie, and

jeans, she orders an Espresso Esperanto - all the things on the menu have complicated names,

Cappuccino Cappriccio, Tarte aux Tarts, Our Malicious Mudcake - and watches the door of the Toxique. It's clear to her now that her body doesn't want an espresso primarily. Her body wants her to spy on Zenia.

To make herself less obvious as a watcher she takes her notebook out of her tote bag, a lovely notebook she traded some of her paytime for. It has a hand-bound cover of marbled paper with a burgundy suede spine, and the pages are a delicate lavender. The pen she bought

to go with it is pearl grey, and filled with grey-green ink. She got the pen at Radiance too, and

the ink. It makes her sad to think of Radiance vanishing. So many gifts.

The notebook is for her to write her thoughts in, but so far she hasn't written any. She hates to spoil the beauty of the blank pages, their potential; she doesn't want to use them up.

But now she uncaps her pearl grey pen, and prints: Zenia must go back. She once took a course

in italic handwriting, so the message looks elegant, almost like a rune. She does one letter at a

time, looking up between the words, over the tops of her reading glasses, so nothing going on across the street will escape her. . .

At first more people go in than out, and after that more people go out than in. None of the people who go in is Billy, not that she is realistically expecting him, but you never know.

None of the people who come out is Zenia.

Her coffee arrives and her body tells her to drop two lumps of sugar into it, and so she does, and then she drinks the coffee quickly and feels the hit of caffeine and sucrose rush to her head. She's focused now, she has X-ray vision, she knows what she has to do. Neither Tony nor Roz can help her, they don't

81

need to help her with this, because their stories, the stories with Zenia in them, have endings. At

least they know what happened. Charis doesn't, Charis has never known. It's as if her story, the

story with Billy and Zenia in it, was going along a path, and suddenly there were no more footprints.

At last, when Charis is beginning to think that Zenia must have slipped out the back or else vaporized, the door opens and she comes out. Charis lowers her eyes slightly; she doesn't want to

rest the full weight of her supercharged eyes on Zenia, she doesn't want to give herself away. But

Zenia doesn't even glance in her direction. She's with someone Charis doesn't recognize. A young

fair-haired man. Not Billy. He's too slightly built to be Billy. _

Though if it were Billy, he would hardly be young any more. He might even be fat, or bald.

But in her head he has stayed the same age as he was the last time she saw him. The same age,

the same size, everything the same. Loss opens again beneath her feet, the pit, the familiar trapdoor. If she were alone, if she weren't here in the Kafay Nwar but home in her own kitchen,

she would bang her forehead softly on the edge of the table. The pain is red and it hurts, and she

can't just wipe it away.

Zenia isn't happy, Charis thinks. It's not an insight, it's more like a charm, an incantation.

She

can't possibly be happy. If she were allowed to be happy it would be completely unfair: there must

be a balance in the Universe. But Zenia is smiling up at the man, whose face Charis can't quite

see, and now she's taking his arm and they're walking along the street, and from this distance at

least she looks happy enough.

Compassion for all living things, Charis reminds herself: Zenia is alive, so that means compassion for Zenia.

This is what it does mean, though Charis realizes, on taking stock, that at the moment she feels no compassion whatsoever for Zenia. On the contrary she has a clear picture of herself

pushing Zenia off a cliff, or other high object.

82

Own the emotion, she tells herself, because although it's a thoroughly unworthy one it must be acknowledged fully before being discarded. She concentrates on the image, bringing it

closer; she feels the wind against her face, senses the height, hears the release of her arm muscles inside her body, listens for the scream. But Zenia makes no sound. She merely falls,

her hair streaming behind her like a dark comet.

Charis wraps this image up in tissue paper and with an effort expels it from her body. All I want to do is talk to her, she tells herself. That's all.

There's a confusion, a rustling of dry wings. Zenia has left the oblong of the Kafay Nwar window. Charis gathers up her notebook, her grey pen, her cardigan, her reading glasses, and

her tote bag, and prepares to follow.

ROZ

In her dream Roz is opening doors. Nothing in here, nothing in there, and she's in a hurry, the airport limousine is waiting and she has no clothes on, no clothes on her big slack raw embarrassing body. Finally she finds the right door. There are clothes behind it all right, long

coats that look like men's overcoats, but the overhead light won't turn on and the first coat she pulls from the hanger is damp and covered with live snails.

The alarm goes off, none too soon. "Holy Moly, Mother of God," Roz mutters groggily.

She hates clothing dreams. They're like shopping, except that she never does find anything she

wants: But she'd rather dream about snail-covered coats than about Mitch.

Or about Zenia. Especially Zenia. Sometimes she has a

83

dream about Zenia, Zenia taking shape in the corner of Roz's bedroom, reassembling herself

from the fragments of her own body after the bomb explosion: a hand, a leg, an eye. She won-

ders whether Zenia was ever actually in this bedroom, when Roz wasn't. When Mitch was.

Her throat tastes of smoke. She flings out an arm, groping for the clock, and knocks her latest trashy thriller off the nighttable. Sex killings, sex killings; this year it's a11 sex killings.

Sometimes she longs to be back in the sedate English country houses of her youth, where the

victim was always some venomous old miser who deserved it rather than an innocent plucked

at random off the street. The misers were killed by poison or a single bullet hole, the corpses

did not bleed. The detectives were genteel grey-haired ladies who knitted a lot, or very smart

eccentrics with no bodily functions; they focused on tiny, harmless-looking clues: shirt buttons,

candle ends, sprigs of parsley. What she truly enjoyed was the furniture: rooms and rooms of it,

and so exotic! Things she didn't know existed. Tea trollies. Billiard rooms. Chandeliers.

Chaises

longues. She wanted to live in houses like that! But when she goes back to these books, they no

longer interest her; not even the decor can hold her attention. Maybe I'm getting hooked on blood, she thinks. Blood and violence and rage, like everyone else.

She rolls her legs over the side of her enormous four-poster bed - a mistake, she practically breaks her neck every time she has to climb down from the darn thing - and stuffs her feet into

her terry-cloth slippers. Her landlady slippers, the twins call them, not realizing what

disturbing

echoes this word has for her. They've never seen a landlady in their lives. Or their life. It's still

hard for her to tell whether they have a life of their own each, or just one between the two of them. But she feels compelled to wear attractive shoes all day, shoes that match her outfits, shoes with high heels, so she deserves to have something

84

more comfortable on her poor pinched feet at home, no matter what the twins say.

All this white in the bedroom is a mistake too - the whiter curtains, the white rug, the white ruffles on the bed. She doesn't know what got into her. Trying for a girlish look, maybe; trying

to go back in time, to create the perfect pre-teen bedroom she once longed for but never had.

It was after Mitch had gone, vamoosed, skedaddled, checked out is more like it, he always did

treat this place like a hotel, he treated her like a hotel, she needed to throw everything out that

was there when he was; she needed to reassert herself. Though surely this isn't herself! The bed

looks like a bassinet or a wedding cake, or worse, like those huge ru\$ly altars they build in Mexico, for the Day of the Dead. She never found out (that time she was there, with Mitch, on

their honeymoon, when they were so happy) whether it was all of the dead who came back, or

just the ones you invited.

She can think of a couple of them she'd rather do without. That's all she needs, gate-crashing dead people coming to dinner! And herself lying in the bed like a big piece of fruitcake. She'll re-do the whole room, add some pizzazz, some texture. She's had enough of white.

She shuffles into the bathroom, drinks two glasses of water to replenish her cells, takes her vitamin pill, brushes her teeth, creams, wipes, vivifies, and resurfaces her skin, and scowls at herself in the mirror. Her face is silting up, like a pond; layers are accumulating. Every once in a while, when she can afford the time, she spends a few days at a spa north

of the city, drinking vegetable juice and having ultrasound treatments, in search of her original face, the one she knows is under there somewhere; she comes back feeling toned up and virtuous, and hungry. Also annoyed with herself Surely she isn't still trying; surely she isn't still in the man-pleasing business. She's given that up. I do it for me, she tells Tony.

85

"Screw you, Mitch," she says to the mirror. If it weren't for him she could relax, she could be middle-aged. But if he were still around, she'd still be trying to please him. The key word is trying.

The hair has to go, though. It's too red this time. It's making her look raddled, a word she has always admired. Raddled harridan, she would read in those English detective stories, crouching on the steamer trunk that served as a window seat in her attic room, her feet tucked under her, with the room darkened for secrecy, as in air raids, angling the book so that the light from the streetlamp fell on the page, in the dusk, in that Huron Street boarding house with the chestnut tree outside. Roz! You still up? You get into that bed, right now, no fooling!

Sneaky brat!

How could she hear Roz reading in the dark? Her mother the landlady, her mother the improbable martyr, standing at the foot of the attic stairs, yelling up in her hoarse washer-woman voice, and Roz mortified because the roomers might hear. Roz the toilet cleaner,

Roz the down-market Cinderella, sullenly scrubbing. You eat here, said her mother, so you help out. That was before her father the hero turned rags into riches. Raddled harridan, Roz would mutter, with no sense that she might ever become one herself. It wasn't that easy, growing up with one hero and one martyr. It didn't leave much of a role for her.

That house is gone now. No, not gone: Chinese. They don't like trees, she hears. They think the branches hold bad spirits, the sorrowful things that have happened to everyone who's ever lived there before. Maybe there's something of Roz herself, Roz as she was then,

caught in the branches of that chestnut tree, if it still exists. Caught there and fluttering. She wonders how much trouble it would be to have her hair dyed grey, the colour it would be if she let it grow in. With

86

grey hair she'd get more respect. She'd be firmer. Less of a softie. An iron lady! Fat chance. Roz's latest bathrobe is hanging on the back of the bathroom door. Orange velour. Orange is

the new colour this year; last year it was an acid yellow that she really couldn't wear, try as she

might. It made her look like a lemon lollipop. But the orange brings out a glow under her skin, or so she thought when she bought the darn thing. She believes in the little inner voice, the one that says, It's you! It's you! Grab it now, or it may be gone! But the little inner voice is getting less and less trustworthy, and this time it must have been talking to someone else.

She puts on the bathrobe, over her hand-embroidered white-on-white batiste nightgown, bought to go with the bed, so who did she think was going to notice? She finds her purse, and transfers her half-empty pack of smokes to her pocket. Not before breakfast! Then she makes her way down the stairs, the back ones, the ones that used to be for maids,

for toilet cleaners like her, clutching the banister so she won't trip. The stairs go straight into the kitchen, the sparkling austere all-white kitchen (time for a change!), where the twins sit on high stools at the tile-topped counter, wearing long T-shirts and striped tights and gym socks. These are the outfits they find it chic to sleep in, these days-: It used to be such fun to dress them up; when they were little; such ruffles, tiny hats you could die for! Gone are the downy sleepers with plastic soles to their feet, gone too the expensive English cotton flannel nighties with rows of Mother Geese in bonnets and aprons printed on them. Gone are the books Roz used to read to the two of them when they wore those nighties, snuggling up to her, one under each arm - Alice in Wonderland, Peter Pan, The Arabian Nights,

the reissues of lavish turn-of-the-century fairy tales with Arthur Rackham illustrations. Or not completely gone: stored in the cellar. Gone are the pink jogging suits, the raccoon bedroom

87

slippers, the velvet party dresses, each frill and extravaganza. Now they won't let her buy them a thing. If she brings home even a black top, even a pair of underpants, they roll their eyes.

The two of them are drinking the yogourt-and-skim-milk-and-blueberry smoothies they've just made in the blender. She can see the melting package of frozen blueberries, and the puddle of blue milk lying like pale ink on the counter.

"So, you'll do me a favour, for once you'll put it in the dishwasher," she can't help saying to them.

They turn their identical eyes towards her, lambent eyes like those of forest cats, and smile their identical heartless heartcrushing smiles, showing their slightly feral faun's teeth, blue at the moment, and shaking their moussey, fluffed-out manes; and she catches her breath, as she does almost every time she sees them, because they are so huge and so gorgeous and she

still can't quite understand how she managed to give birth to them. One such creature would have been unlikely enough, but two!

They laugh. "It's the Big Mom!" one of them shouts, the one on the right. "The Big Mommy! Let's give her a hug!" They leap down from their stools and grab hold of her and squeeze. Her feet lift from the ground, and she rises perilously into the air.

"Put me down!" she shrieks. They know she doesn't like this, they know she's afraid they'll drop her. They'll drop her and she'll break. Sometimes they have no sense of that; they think she's unbreakable. Roz the Rock. Then they remember.

"Let's put her on a stool," they say. They carry her over and deposit her, and climb back onto their own stools, like circus animals who have done their trick.

"Mom, you look like a pumpkin in that," says one. It's Erin. Roz has always been able to tell them apart, or so she claims. Two guesses and she's right every time. Mitch used to have

trouble. But then, he only ever saw them for about fifteen minutes a day.

88

"Pumpkin, that's me," says Roz, with heavy jocularly. 'Fat, orange, big friendly grin, hollow in the centre and glows in the dark:' She needs her coffee, right now! She pulls open the freezer

door, sticks the frozen blueberry package back in there, finds the bag of magic beans, and fumbles around in one of the roll-out drawers for the electric grinder. Having everything stowed away in drawers wasn't such a hot idea, she can never find anything any more. Especially not the pot lids. The uncluttered look, said that fool of a designer. They always intimidate her.

"Aww," says the other one. Paula. Errie and Pollie, they call each other, or Er and La, or, when they're speaking collectively, Erla. It's creepy when they do that. Erla's going out tonight.

That means both of them. "Aww. You rotten twin! You hurt the Mommy's feelings! You are just rotten, rotten to the core!" This last is an imitation of Roz imitating her own mother, who used to say that. Roz feels a sudden need for her, for her harsh, embattled, once-scorned, long-

dead mother. She's tired of being a mother, she wants to be a child for a change. She missed

out on that. It looks like way more fun.

The twins laugh delightedly. "Selfish rotten cesspool," one says to the other.

"Unshaved armpit!"

"Festering tampon!" -° "Used panty liner!" They can

go on this way for hours, thinking up worse and worse insults for each other, laughing so hard

they roll on the floor and kick their feet in the air with delight at their own outrageous humour.

What puzzles her is how so many of their insults can be so - well, so sexist. Bitch and slut are

among their mildest; she wonders if they'd let boys call them that. When they think she's not listening, they can get much more obscene, or what she thinks of as obscene. Cunt gum.

Such a

thing could never even have been thought of, when she was growing up. And they're only fifteen!

89

But people carry their vocabularies with them through their lives, like turtle shells, thinks Roz. She has a sudden flash of the twins at eighry, their beautiful faces raddled, their by-then-

withered legs still encased in coloured tights, gym socks on their bunioned feet, still saying cunt

gum. She shudders.

Touch wood, she corrects herself. They should live so long. The coffee grinder isn't there; not where she put it yesterday. "Darn it, kids," she says. "Did you move my grinder?" Maybe it was Maria. Yesterday was one of Maria's days to clean. "Darn it!" says Paula. "Oh, my darned grinder. Oh gosh darn to heck!" "Oh golly jeez, oh Holy Moly," says Erin. They think it's hilarious, the way Roz can't bring herself to really swear. But she can't. The words are in her head, all right, but they don't come out. You want people to think you're trash? She must seem so archaic to them. So obsolete, so foreign. She spent the first half of her life feeling less and less like an immigrant, and now she's spending the second half feeling more and more like one. A refugee from the land of middle age, stranded in the country of the young. "Where's your big brother?" she says. This sobers them up. "Where he usually is at this time of day," says Erin with a hint of scorn. "Stoking up on his energy." "Zizzing," says Paula, as if she wants them to get back to joking. "Dreamland," says Erin pensively. "Larryland," says Paula. "Greetings, Earthling, I come from a distant planet:" Roz wonders whether she should wake Larry up, decides not to. She feels safer about him when he's asleep. He is the firstborn, the firstborn son. Not a lucky thing to be. Fingered for sacrifice, he would have been, once. It's very bad news that he was named after Mitch. Laurence Charles Mitchell, such a weighty and pompous combination for such a vulnerable little 90 boy. Even though he's twenty-two and has a moustache, she can't help thinking of him as that. Roz finds the coffee grinder, in the pull-out drawer under the convection oven, among the roasting pans. She should speak to Maria. She grinds her beans, measures the coffee, turns on her cute Italian espresso maker. While waiting she peels herself an orange. "I think he's got something going," says Erin. "Some romance or other." Paula has made herself some false teeth out of Roz's orange peel. "Pouf, qui sait, c'est con fa, je m'en fiche," she says, with elaborate shrugs, lisping and spitting. That's about all the two of them have picked up from French immersion: loose talk. Roz doesn't know most of the words and she's just as glad. "I think I spoiled you," Roz says to them. "Spoiled, moi?" says Erin. "Erla's not spoiled," says Paula with fake pouty innocence, taking out the orange-peel teeth. "Is she, Erla?" "Holy Moly, gee whizzikers, Mommy, no!" says Erin. The two of them peer out at her through the underbrush of their hair, their bright eyes assessing her. Their kibitzing, their mimicry, their vulgar idiocies, their laughter, all of it is a distraction they put on, for her benefit. They tease her, but not too much: they know she has a breaking point. They never mention Mitch, for instance. They carry on as if he's never existed. Do they miss him, did they love him, do they resent him, did they hate him? Roz doesn't know. They don't let her know. Somehow that's harder. They are so wonderful! She gazes at them with ferocious love. Zenia, she thinks, you bitch! Maybe you had everything else, but you never had such a blessing. You never had

daughters. She starts to cry, resting her head in her hands, her elbows on the cold white tiles of the kitchen counter, the tears rolling hopelessly down.

91

The twins come round her, smaller than they were, anxious, more timid, patting her, stroking her orange back. "It's okay, Mom, it's okay," they say.

"Look," she tells them, "I put my elbow in your darned blue milk!"

"Oh heck!" they say. "Oh double darn!" They smile at her with relief.

XIII

The twins place their tall smoothie glasses ostentatiously in the dishwasher, head for the back

stairs, forget the blender, remember it and come back, put it in too, forget the puddle of blue milk. Roz wipes it up as they take the stairs, two at a time, and barge along the hall to their rooms to get ready for school. They're more subdued than usual, though; normally it's an elephant stampede. Upstairs, two stereos go on at once, two competing drumbeats.

A couple more years and they'll be away at university, in some other city. The house will be quiet. Roz doesn't want to think about it. Maybe she'll sell this barn. Get a Grade A condo, overlooking the lake.-Flirt with the doorman: w

She sits at the white counter, drinking her coffee at last, and eating her breakfast. Two rusks. Just an orange and two rusks, because she's on a diet. Sort of a diet. A mini-diet. She used to do all kinds of diets. Grapefruit ones, bran added to everything, all-protein. She used to wax and wane like the moon, trying to shake the twenty pounds that came on when the

twins were born. But she's not so drastic any more. She knows by now that weird diets are bad

for you, the magazines have been full of it. The body is like a besieged fortress, they say; it stores up food supplies in its fat cells, it stockpiles in case

of emergency, and if you diet then it thinks it's being starved to death and stores up even more,

and you turn into a blimp. Still, a little deprivation here and there can't hurt. Eating a little less,

that's not a real diet.

It's not as if she's fat, anyway. She's just solid. A good peasant body, from when the women had to pull the ploughs. Though maybe she shouldn't skimp so much, especially at breakfast.

Breakfast is the most important meal of the day, and at this age, what they say is that you trim

the body at the expense of the face. It comes off the hips, but off the neck first. Then you get chicken neck. She has no intention of turning into one of those fiftyish size 6 bimbos with faces like piles of scrap metal and string, each bone and tendon showing. Though bimbo isn't

the right word for a woman of that age. Bimbag, maybe. That's what Zenia would have been, if

she'd lived. A bimbag.

Roz smiles, and puts two pieces of whole wheat bread into the toaster. She finds it helpful to call Zenia names; helpful and reassuring. So who can it hurt, now?

So who did it hurt, then? she asks herself bitterly. Certainly not Zenia, who never gave two hoots about what Roz thought of her. Or said about her, even to Mitch. There were some things she had the sense not to say, however. Can't you see those tits aren't real? She had them done,

I know for a fact; she used to be a 34A. You're in love with two sacks of silicone gel. No, that wouldn't

have gone over all that well with Mitch; not in his besotted phase. And after his besotted

phase

it was too late.

Those things don't burn when they cremate you either; that's the rumour going around, about artificial boobs. They just melt. The rest of you turns to ashes, but your tits to marshmallow goo; they have to scrape them off the bottom of the furnace. Maybe that's why they didn't scatter the ashes at Zenia's memorial service. Maybe they couldn't. Maybe that's what was in that sealed tin can. Melted tits.

93

Roz butters her two pieces of toast and spreads honey on them, and eats them with slow relish, licking her fingers. If Zenia were alive there's no doubt that she'd be dieting; you don't get a waist like Zenia's without hard work. So by now she'd have chicken neck. Or else she'd be

going for surgery, more of it. She'd get a nip here, a tuck there; a lid-lift, puffedup lips. That isn't for Roz, she can't stand the thought of someone, some strange man, bending over her with a knife while she's lying in bed conked out cold. She's read too many thrillers for that, too

many sex-murder thrillers. He could be a depraved nut in a stolen doctor suit. It happens. Or what if they make a mistake and you wake up covered in bandages and then spend six weeks

looking like a road-kill raccoon, only to emerge as some bit player from a botched-up horror movie? No, she'd rather just age quietly. Like good red wine.

She makes herself another piece of toast, with strawberryand-rhubarb jam this time. Why punish the flesh? Why stint the body? Why incur its resentments, its obscure revenges, its headaches and hunger pains and growls of protest? She eats the toast, jam dripping; then, after

glancing behind to make sure nobody is watching her - though who would be? - she licks the

plate. Now she feels better, It's time for her cigarette, her morning reward. Reward for what? Don't ask.

The twins cascade down the stairs, wearing, more or less,-their school uniforms, those outfits Roz has never fully understood, the kilts and ties that are supposed to turn them into Scottish men. Leaving your shirt untucked until the dire last minute is the current thing, she gathers. They kiss her on the cheek, big sloppy exaggerated kisses, and gallop out the back

door, and their two shining heads go past the kitchen window.

Possibly they are trampling on the flower border Charis insisted on planting there last year, a deed of love so Roz can't lay a finger on it, even though it resembles a moth-eaten patchwork

quilt and her regular gardener, an elegant Japanese

94

minimalist, considers it an affront to his professional standing. But maybe the twins will mash

it beyond repair, cross your fingers. She looks at her watch: they're running late, but not very late. They take after her: she has always had a flexible sense of time.

Roz drains her coffee and butts out her cigarette, and goes up the stairs in her turn, and along

the hall to have her shower. On the way she can't resist peeking into the twins' rooms, though

she knows they're off limits. Erin's room looks like a clothing explosion, Paula has left her lights on again. They make such a fuss about the environment, they bawl her out because of her poisonous cleaning products, they make her buy recycled stationery, but still they can't seem to turn off their darn lights.

She flicks off the light switch, knowing she's given herself away (Mom! who's been in my

room?

I can go in your room, sweetie, I'm your mother! You don't respect my privacy, and Mom, don't be such a conehead, don't call me sweetie! I'm entitled! So who pays the light bills around here? and so forth), and continues on down the hall.

Larry's room is at the very end, past her own room. Maybe she should wake him up. On the other hand, if he wanted her to he'd have left a note. Maybe, maybe not. Sometimes he expects her to read his mind. Well, why wouldn't he expect that? She used to be able to. Not any more.

With the twins, she'd know if something was wrong, though she wouldn't necessarily know what. But not with Larry. Larry has become opaque to her. How are things going? she'll say, and he'll say Fine, and it could mean anything. She doesn't even know what things are, any more,

those things that are supposed to be going so fine.

He was a dogged kid. Through all the uproar with Mitch, when the twins were acting out, snitching from the supermarket, skipping school, he plodded faithfully on. He tended Roz, 95

in a dutiful sort of way. He took out the garbage, he washed the car, her car, on Saturdays, like

a middle-aged man. You don't need to do that, she'd tell him. Ever heard of car washes? I like to, he said, it relaxes me.

He got his driver's licence, he got his high school diploma, he got his university degree. He got a worried little furrow between his eyes. He did what he thought was expected of him, and

brought the official pieces of paper home to her like a cat bringing dead mice. Now it's as if he's given up because he doesn't know what else to bring; he's run out of ideas. He says he's

deciding what to do next, but she sees no signs of any decision being made. He stays out at

night and she doesn't know where he goes. If it was the twins she'd ask, and they'd say she should mind her own business. With him, she doesn't even ask. She's afraid to, because he might tell her. He's never been a very good liar. An earnest kid, maybe too earnest. There's

a joylessness in him that bothers her. She's sorry he's given up that drum set he used to practise

on, down in the cellar, although it drove her crazy at the time. At least then he had something to hit.

He sleeps in late. He doesn't ask her for money; he doesn't need to, because of what's been

left him, what's his own. He could afford to leave home, get an apartment somewhere, but he's

not making a move. He shows so little initiative; when she" was his age she could hardly wait

to shake the ancestral dust off her sandals. Not that she managed it all that well.

Maybe he's on dope, she thinks. She sees no signs of that either, but what does she know?

When she was growing up, dope was some guy you thought was stupid. She did find a packet

once, a little plastic envelope with what looked like baking powder in it, and she decided not to

know what it was, because what could she do? You don't tell your twenty-two-year-old son that you just happened to be going through his pants pockets. Not any more.

96

He has an alarm dock. But on the other hand, he turns it off in his sleep, the way Mitch used to. Maybe she should just tiptoe in, take a quick look at the alarm clock, and see what time it's set for. Then she'll know whether or not he's turned it off, and her way will be clear. She eases open his door. There's a trail of clothes leading from it to the bed, like a shed cocoon, just left there: handtooled cowboy boots, socks, fawn suede jacket, jeans, black T-shirt. Her hands itch, but it's no longer her job to pick up their floors, and she's told Maria not to do it either. If it's in your laundry hamper it gets washed, she's told all of them. Otherwise not.

The room is a boy's room, still. Not a man's. The bookshelves filled with school textbooks; two pictures of eighteenth-century sailing ships, chosen by Mitch; their first boat, the Rosalind,

with the three of them on it, her and Mitch and: Larry when he was six, before the twins were born; the hockey team trophy from Grade Eleven; a picture of a fish he drew when he was nine, and that Mitch liked especially. Or praised, at least. Larry got more of Mitch than the twins did, because he was the first maybe, and a boy, and because there was only one of him.

But Mitch was never fully at ease with him, or with any of them. He always had one foot out the door. He had a father act: too bluff, too hearty, too conscious of the time. He made jokes that were way over Larry's head, and Larry would gaze at him with his puzzled, suspicious child's eyes, and see right through him. Kids do.

Still, it's been hard on Larry. There's something missing. Dejection enters Roz, a familiar sense of failure. The one she's failed most is Larry. If she'd only been - what? - prettier, smarter, sexier even, better somehow; or else worse, more calculating, more unscrupulous,

a guerrilla fighter - Mitch might still be here. Roz wonders how long it will take her

97

kids to forgive her, once they've figured out exactly how much they need to forgive her for. Larry is asleep in his bed, his single bed, one arm thrown over his eyes. His hair is feathery

on the pillow, hair lighter than the twins', straighter, more like Mitch's hair. He's growing it longer,

with a thin rat-tail braid at the back. It looks like heck, in her opinion, but not a word has she said.

Roz stands stock-still, listening for his breathing. She's always done that, ever since he was a

baby: listened to see if he was still alive. He had weak lungs, as a child; he had asthma. With the

twins she didn't listen because it didn't seem called for. They were so robust.

He draws in a breath, a long sigh, and her heart turns over. Her love for him is different in quality from her love for the twins. They're tough and wiry, they have resilience; it's not that they won't get any wounds, they have wounds already, but they can lick their wounds and then

bounce back. Also they have each other. But Larry has an exiled look to him, the look of a lost

traveller, as if he's stuck in some no man's land, between borders and without a passport. Trying to figure out the road signs. Wanting to do the right thing.

Under the young moustache his mouth is tidy, and also gentle. It's the mouth that worries her the most. It's the mouth" of a man who can be wrecked by women; by a whole bunch of women in succession. Or else by one woman: if she was mean enough, it would only take

one.

One really slick mean-minded woman, and poor Larry will fall in love. He'll fall in love earnestly, he'll trot around after her with his tongue hanging out, like a sweet; loyal, house-trained puppy, he'll set his heart on her, and then one flick of her bony gold-encircled wrist and

he'll just be a sucked-out shell.

Over my dead body, thinks Roz, but what can she do? Against this unknown future woman she will be helpless. She

98

knows about mothers-in-law, she knows about women who think that their sons are perfect, that no woman, no other woman, will ever be good enough for them. She's seen it, she knows

how destructive it can be, she's sworn never to get like that.

Already she's weathered several of his girlfriends' the one in high school who had crimped bangs and tiny crazed eyes like a pit bull, who claimed she played the guitar, who left her push-

up French bra in his room; the near-sighted stockbroker's daughter from summer camp with aggressively hairy legs and B.O. of the head, who'd been on an art tour to Italy and thought that gave her the right to patronize Roz's living-room furniture; the plump smart-mouth one in university, with hair like a man's toupee, dyed a lifeless artificial black, shaved at the sides, who

wore three earrings in each ear and leather miniskirts up to her armpits, who perched at the kitchen counter and crossed her bulgy thighs and lit up a cigarette without offering Roz one, and used Roz's coffee cup for an ashtray, and asked Roz if she'd read Thus Spake Zarathustra.

That was the worst; that was the one she'd caught looking through the Victorian rosewood silver caddy in the dining room; probably wanted to hock some small item and get the cleaning

lady blamed, and stuff the proceeds up her nose. That was the one who considered it tactful to

inform Roz that her mother had known Mitch, a few years back, and acted surprised when Roz

said she'd never heard of her. (Untrue. She knew exactly who that woman was. Twice divorced,

a real estate agent, a man-collector, a slut. But that was in Mitch's blow-and-throw female-Kleenex period, and she'd only lasted a month.)

Larry was way over his depth with that creature. Thus Spake Zarathustra, indeed!

Pretentious

little shit. Roz heard her telling the twins (and they were only thirteen then) that their brother had great buns. Her son! Great buns! The tawdry bitch was just using him, but try telling him that.

99

Not that she sees much of the girlfriends. Larry keeps them well tucked away. Is she a nice girl? she'll probe. Bring her to dinner! Fat chance. And red-hot tongs wouldn't get any information out of him. She can tell, though, when they're up to no good. She bumps into those girls on the street, hooked onto Larry with their tiny jaws and claws, and Larry introduces her,

and she can tell by their shifty little mascara-encrusted eyes. Who knows what evil lurks in the

hearts of women? A mother knows.

She's waited them all out, biting her tongue, praying it wasn't serious. Now, according to the twins, she's in for another one. Down on your knees, Roz, she tells herself. Atone for your

sins. Dear God, send me a nice understanding girl, not too rich, not too poor, not too pretty but not ugly

either, not too bright, bright he won't need, a kind, warm, sensible, generous girl who'll appreciate his good

points, who understands about his work, whatever the heck it turns out to be, who doesn't talk too much,

and most of all, who loves kids. And please, God: make her have normal hair.

Larry sighs and shifts in his bed, and Roz turns away. She's given up her plan of checking out his alarm clock. Let him sleep. Real life will be digging into him soon enough, with its shiny pointed grasping red nails.

Standing barefooted and pink and steaming and wrapped in X - bath sheet, flamingo pink, best

British, Roz goes through her room-length mirror-door closet. There's plenty to wear, but nothing she wants to. She settles on the suit she got in that Italian boutique on Bloor: she has a

meeting, and then she's having lunch with Tony and Charis, at the Toxique, and this outfit's not too informal, but not too formal either. Also it's not built like a mummy case across the shoulders. Shoulder pads are going out, thank heaven, though Roz routinely snips hers off anyway, she has enough shoulders for two. The twins have been recycling some of her discarded pads: they've recently

100

converted to fountain pens because plastic ballpoints are too wasteful, and according to them

shoulder pads make great penwipers. It was only ever the tall and willowy who could handle the darn things anyway; and though Roz is tall, willowy she's not.

The shoulders are shrinking, but the bosoms are swelling. Not without help. Roz adds to her list of desirables: Please, God, let her not have breast implants. Zenia was ahead of her time.

XIV

Roz takes the Benz, because she knows she's going to have to park on Queen, at lunchtime,

and the Rolls would attract too much attention. Who needs slashed tires?

Anyway she hardly ever drives the Rolls, it's like driving a boat. One of those ancient weighty in-boards, with the mahogany trim and the motor that whispered Old money, old money.

Old money whispers, new money shouts: one of the lessons Roz thought she had to learn, once. Keep your voice down, Roz, went her inner censor. Low tones, low profile, beige clothing:

anything to keep from being spotted, located among the pushing hordes of new money, narrow-eyed, nervous money, bad-taste money, chip-on-the-shoulder money. Anything to avoid incurring the amused, innocent, milky and maddening gaze of those who had never had

to scrimp, to cut a few legal corners, to twist a few arms, to gouge a few eyes, to prove a thing.

Most of the new-money women were desperate, all dressed up and nowhere safe to go and nervous as heck about it, and most of the men were pricks. Roz knows about desperation, and

about pricks. She's a quick learner, she's a tough negotiator. One of the best.

Though by now she's been new money for so long she's practically old money. In this country it doesn't take long. By now she can wear orange, by now she can shriek. By now she

can get away with such things; she can pawn them ,off as charming eccentricities, and anyone

who doesn't like it can kiss her fanny.

She wouldn't have bought the Rolls herself, though. Too ostentatious, to her mind. It's left over from the days of Mitch; he was the one who talked her into it, she'd done it to please him,

and it's one of the few things of his she can't bear to get rid of. He was so proud of it. `

Mostly it sits in the garage, but she drove it to Zenia's memorial service, out of spite. There, she thought. You got away with a lot, bitch, but you never nabbed this car. Not that Zenia had been

around to see, but there had been an undeniable pleasure all the same.

Charis disapproved of the Rolls; you could tell by the way she sat in it, hunched over and anxious. But Tony hardly noticed. Is this your big car? she'd said. Tony is so sweet about cars,

she knows all about historical things and guns and such, but she can't tell one car from another. Your big car, your other car, those are her categories. It's like that awful joke about the

Newfies counting fish: one fish, twofish, another fish, another fish ... Roz knows she shouldn't laugh

at jokes like that, it's not fair, but she does anyway. Among friends. Does it hurt the Newfies,

to lower Roz's blood pressure, to make her feel good on a bad day? Who knows? At least nobody has tried to genocide them. Yet. And they're supposed to have the best sex lives of anybody in Canada, which is a darn sight more than Roz has these days, worse luck.

She heads south through Rosedaie, past the fake Gothic turrets, the fake Georgian fronts, the

fake Dutch gables, all melded by now into their own curious authenticity: the authenticity of well-worn money. With a single glance at each, she estimates

102

them: a million five, two million, three, prices have gone down but these babies are holding more

or less firm, and good for them, something has to in all this shift and flux. What can you trust these days? (Not the stock market, that's for sure, and lucky she rearranged her portfolio just in

time.) Much as she used to resent these prim, wnsy, self-assured houses, she's become fond of

them over the years. Owning one helps. That, and the knowledge that a lot of the people who

live in them are no better than they should be. No better than her.

She goes down Jarvis, once the street of the upper crust, then the red-light district, now not very convincingly renovated, cuts west on Wellesley, and ducks onto the university campus, where she tells the guard she's just picking someone up at the library. He waves her through

-

she's plausible, or rather her car is - and she goes around the circle and past McClung Hall, scene

of boisterous memories. It's funny to think she lived in there once, when she was young and bright green, and bounding with canine enthusiasm. Big doggy paws on the furniture, big doggy

tongue bestowing slurs of hope on any available face. Like me! Like me! Not any more.

Times

have changed.

She turns down to College, and makes a right on University. What a design fiasco! .One clunky block of sterile brick and glass and then another one, no sidewalk interest, though they

keep trying to tart the thing up with those constipated little flower beds. What would Roz do

with it, if she had the contract? She doesn't know. Maybe grape arbours, or else round kiosks, like Paris; though whatever you did it would come out like something escaped from a theme park. But then everything does, nowadays. Even the real thing looks constructed. When Roz saw her first Alp, she thought, Bring out the chorus line in bodices and dirndls, and let's all yodel. Maybe that's what people mean by a national identity. The hired help in outfits. The backdrops. The props.

*

103

Roz's head office is in a converted brewery, nineteenth-century. Red brick, with factory windows and a carving of a lion's head over the main entrance, for a touch of class. One of her

father's cute ideas, to do it over; otherwise it would have been torn down. It was his first really

big thing, his first indulgence; when he began playing with his money, finally, instead of just accumulating it.

She parks in the company lot, Unauthorized Vehicles Will Be Towed, in her own space marked

Ms. President with its goldlettered sign - if you've got it, flaunt it, although Roz constantly has to

remind herself that she's not as all-fired important as she might be tempted to think. It's true she occasionally gets recognized in restaurants, especially after she's been in the annual Toronto

Life list of Toronto's Fifty Most Influential. But if that kind of recognition is the measure of power, then Mickey Mouse is a million times more powerful than she is, and Mickey Mouse doesn't even exist.

She checks her front teeth for lipstick in the rear-view mirror - well, these things count - and walks briskly, she hopes it looks briskly, into the reception area. Time to change the wall

art in here, she's tired of those stupid coloured squares, it looks like a tablecloth, though the thing cost a mint. A corporate tax write-off, fortunately. Canadian Art.

"Hi, Nicki," she says to the receptionist. It's important to remember their names. Roz has been known to print the names of new receptionists and secretaries on her wrist, in ballpoint

ink, like a high school crib. If she were a man she could get away with a brief nod; but she's not

a man, and she knows a whole lot better than to try acting like one.

Nicki blinks at her and continues talking on the phone, and doesn't smile, the stony-faced bimchette. Nicki won't last long.

It's complicated, being a woman boss. Women don't look at you and think Boss. They look at

you and think Woman, as in

104

Just another one, like me, and where does she get o None of their sexy little tricks work on you,

and none of yours work on them; big blue eyes are no advantage. If you forget their birthdays

your name is mud, if you bawl them out they cry, they don't even do it in the washroom the way they would for a man but right out where you can see them, they hang their hardluck stories on you and expect sympathy, and just try getting a cup of coffee out of them. Lick your

own stamps, lady. They'll bring it all right, but it'll be cold and also they'll hate you forever.

Who

was your servant last year? she used to say to her own mother, once she was old enough to be

defiant. Exactly.

Whereas the very same women would fetch and carry for a man boss, no question. Buy the wife's birthday present, buy the mistress's birthday present, make the coffee, bring his slippers

in her mouth, overtime no problem.

Is Roz being too negative? Could be. But she's had some bad experiences.

Maybe she handled it wrong. She was dumber then. Threw her weight around, acted normal. Had a few tantrums. I didn't say tomorrow, I said now! Let's see a little professionalism around

here! By now she knows that if you're a woman and you hire women, you have to make them

into girlfriends, into pals; you have to pretend you're all equal, which is hard when you're twice

their age. Or else you have to baby them. You have to mother them, you have to take care of them. Roz has enough people in her life to mother already, and who is there to baby and mother and take care of her? Nobody; which is why she hired Boyce.

She takes the elevator up, and gets off on the top floor. "Hi, Suzy," she says to the receptionist

there. "How's tricks?" "Great, Ms. Andrews," says Suzy, giving a dutiful smile. She's been around longer than Nicki.

Boyce is in his office, which is right beside her own office

105

and has a gold-lettered title: Assistant to Ms. President. Boyce is always in his office when she gets

to work. "Hi, \$oyce," she says to him.

"Good morning, Ms. Andrews," says Boyce gravely, rising from behind his desk. Boyce is studiously formal. Every one of his thin chestnut-coloured hairs is in order, his shirt collar is impeccable, his suit is a masterpiece of understatement.

"Let's run over it," says Roz, and Boyce nods. "Coffee?" he says.

"Boyce, you're an angel," says Roz, and Boyce disappears and comes back with some, it's hot and fresh, he's just made it. Roz has remained standing so she can now experience the pleasure of having Boyce pull out her chair for her, which he proceeds to do. Roz sits down, as

gracefully as she can manage, in this skirt - Boyce brings out the lady in her, such as it is - and

Boyce says, as he never fails to do, "I must say, Ms. Andrews, you're looking very well this morning, and that's an attractive ensemble you're wearing."

"Boyce, I love your tie," Roz says, "it's new, isn't it?" and Boyce beams with pleasure. Or rather he glows quietly. Boyce rarely shows his teeth.

She adores Boyce! Boyce is delicious! She gets such a kick out of him, she could give him such a hug, although she would never dare to do a thing like that. She doesn't think BoyceT would stand for it. Boyce is nothing if not reserved.

Boyce is also twenty-eight, a lawyer by training, smart as a whip, and gay. He dealt with the gayness right up front, at the job interview. "You might as well know immediately," he said to her, "it saves time-wasting speculation. I'm gay as a grig, but I won't embarrass you in public.

My straight act is impeccable. A grig, in case you ever wondered, can mean either a shortlegged

hen or a young eel. I prefer the young eel version, myself."

"Thanks, " said Roz, who found she had not known the

106

least thing about grigs; she'd thought it must be some ethnic slur, like wop. She could see at once

that Boyce was a person who would fill in the blanks for her without being asked. "Boyce, you're

hired:"

"Cream?" says Boyce now. He always inquires, because he deduces Roz's intermittent diets. He is

so courteous!

"Please," says Roz, and Boyce pours some and then lights her cigarette for her. It's amazing,

she thinks, what you have to do to get treated like a woman in this town. No, not like a woman.

Like a lady. Like a lady president. Boyce has a sense of style, that's what it is, and also a sense of

decorum. He respects hierarchies, he appreciates good china, he colours within the lines. He likes

the fact that there's a ladder, with rungs on it, because he wants to go up it. And up is where he's

going, if Roz has anything to say about it, because Boyce has real talent, and she's perfectly

perfectly

willing to help him. In return for his loyalty, needless to say.

As for what Boyce thinks of her, she has no idea. Though she does hope that, please God, he

doesn't see her as his mother. Maybe he pictures her as a large, soft-bodied man, in drag. Maybe

he hates women, maybe he wants to be one. Who cares, as long as he performs?

Roz cares, but she can't afford to.

Boyce closes the office door to show the rest of the world that Roz is occupied. He pours a coffee for himself, buzzes Suzy to ask her to stop all calls, and gives Roz the first thing she

wants

to see every morning, namely his rundown of how her remaining stocks are doing.

"What d'you think, Boyce?" says Roz.

"Half a league, half a league, half a league onward, all in the valley of Death rode the Fortune

Five Hundred," says Boyce, who likes both reading and quoting. "Tennyson," he adds, for Roz's

benefit.

107

"That one I got," says Roz. "So it's bad, eh?"

"Things fall apart, the centre cannot hold," says Boyce. "Yeats: "

"Sell, or hang on?" says Roz.

"The way down is the way up. Eliot," says Boyce. "How long can you wait?"

"No problem," says Roz. "I would," says Boyce.

What would Roz do without Boyce? He's becoming indispensable to her. Sometimes she thinks he's a surrogate son; on the other hand, he might be a surrogate daughter. On rare occasions she's even weaselled him into going shopping with her - he has such good taste

in

clothes - though she suspects him of maybe egging her on, just a little, for his own concealed

and sardonic amusement. He was implicated, for instance, in the orange bathrobe.

"Ms. Andrews, it's time to let loose," was what he said. "Carpe diem."

"Which means?" said Roz.

"Seize the day," said Boyce. "Gather ye rosebuds while ye may. Though myself, I'd rather be the gatherer:"

This surprised Roz, because Boyce never gets that explicit inside the office walls. He must have, of course, another life - an evening life, about which she knows nothing. A private life, into which she is sweetly but firmly not invited.

"What're you doing tonight?" she was so unwise as to ask him once. (Hoping for what? That he would maybe go to a movie with her, or something. She gets lonely, why not admit it? She gets hugely, cavernously lonely, and then she eats. Eats and drinks and smokes, filling up her inner spaces. As best she can.)

"Some of us are going to see the Clichettes," said Boyce. "You know. They do lip-sync parodies of songs, they dress up like women."

108

"Boyce," said Roz, "they are women." "Well, you know what I mean," said Boyce.

Who was some of us? A group of men, probably. Young men, young gay men. She worries about Boyce's health. More specifically, and let's be frank - could he maybe have AIDS? He's

young enough to have missed it, to have found out about it in time. She didn't know how to ask, but as usual Boyce divined her need. When she'd commented, once too often, on the flu

he'd had trouble shaking last spring, he'd said, "Don't fret so much, Ms. Andrews. Time will not wither me, nor Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome stale. This little piggy can take care

of himself." Which is only part of an answer, but it's all the answer she's going to get.

After the stocks rundown, Roz and Boyce go over this month's batch of beautifully typed pleas, with embossed letterheads and signatures in real ink (Roz always tests them, by licking

her finger; it's just as well to know who's cheating, and who on the other hand is truly pretentious). This one wants her to be an honorary patron, a title she hates, because how can

you be a patron without being patronizing, and anyway it should be honorary matron, but that

would be something else again. This other one wants to soak her a thousand bucks to attend

some body-parts fundraising dance. Hearts, Lungs and Livers, Eyes; Ears, and Kidneys, all have their proponents; some, knowing how Torontonians-will do anything to disguise themselves, are even going into costume balls. Roz is waiting for the Testicle Society, herself.

The Ball Costume Ball. She used to love masquerade parties; maybe it would perk her up some

to come as a scrotum. That, or the Ovarian Cysts; for that, she'd make the effort.

Roz has her own list. She still does Battered Women, she still does Rape Victims, she still does Homeless Moms. How much compassion is enough? She's never known, and you have to

109

draw the line somewhere, but she still does Abandoned Grannies. She no longer attends the

formal dinner-dances though. She can hardly go alone, and it's too depressing, rounding up some sort of a date. There would be takers, but what would they want in return? She recalls the

dispiriting period after Mitch's departure, when she was suddenly fair game and all those

husbands-on-the-make came out of the woodwork, one hand on her thigh, one eye on her bank balance. Quite a few drinks she shouldn't have drunk, quite a few entanglements that did

her no good at all, and how to get them out of her bleached-bone-coloured bedroom in the morning without the kids seeing? Thanks a bunch, she thinks, but no thanks.

"B'nai Brith?" says Boyce. "The Marian Society?" "Nothing religious, Boyce," says Roz.

"You know the rule." God is complicated enough without being used as a fundraiser.

At eleven they take a meeting in the boardroom, with a new company, a little something Roz is

thinking of investing in. Boyce puts on his businessman look, solemn and dull, conservative as

heck, Roz could hug him to bits and she sure hopes his own mother appreciates him. She remembers her very first meeting like this: she'd grown up thinking business was something mysterious, something way beyond her, something her father did behind closed doors.

Something only fathers did, that girls were forever too dull-witted to understand. But it was just

a bunch of men sitting in a room, frowning and pondering and twiddling their gold-filled pens and trying to fake each other out. She'd sat there watching, trying to keep her mouth from falling open in astonishment. Hey! Is this all there is? Holy Moly, I can do this! And she can, she can do it better. Better than most. Most of the time.

Canadian businessmen are such wimps, by and large; they think if they keep their money under the pillow the nickels will breed with the dimes and give birth to quarters. All that chest

thumping they did over the free trade thing! We have to be aggressive, they said, and now they're

whining and sucking their thumbs and asking for tax breaks. Or else moving their businesses

south of the border. Aggressively Canadian, what a contradiction in terms, it is to laugh!

Roz

herself is a gambler. Not reckless gambling - informed gambling; but gambling nonetheless.

Otherwise, where's the fun?

This group is from Lookmakers: cheap but high-quality cosmetics, and no bunny-torturing, it goes without saying. They started as a house-party outfit, like Tupperware, and then expanded with a special line for actresses and models; but now they're growing like mad and

they want a retail outlet, with franchises a possibility. Roz thinks there's something to it.

She's

done her homework, or rather Boyce has, and in a recession - let's not mince words, depression - women buy more lipsticks. A little prezzie to yourself, a little reward, not that expensive and it cheers you up. Roz knows all about it. She may be rich but she can still think

poor, it's an advantage. She likes the name, too, Zookmakers. It's bracing, it implies effort, a

striding forth, a rolling up of the sleeves. A taking of risks.

Lookmakers is two men and two women, thirty-odd, obsequious to break your heart, with a lot of diagrams and photos and samples and graphs. The poor sweeties have worked their tiny

behinds off for this meeting, so although Roz has already made up her mind she lets them do

their pitch, while she sits back in her chair and makes memo notes in her head about a fresh

product line. She's tired of just moving money around the map, she's ready for something

more hands-on again. This could be quite exciting! She'll get them to do some different names, move away from the languor, the toxicity and musky heaviness that was all the rage a few years ago. She has a flair.

"What do you think, Boyce?" she says, after the quartet have bowed and scraped their way out and Boyce has said they'd call them tomorrow. Never make the deal on the same day, is Roz's motto. Let them cool their jets, it gets the price down. "Should we have a flutter?"

"My eyes, my ancient, glittering eyes, are gay," says Boyce. "Yeats: "

"So are mine," says Roz. "A controlling interest, as usual?" Roz has burned her fingers a few times, she doesn't buy anything now that she can't control.

"I must say, Ms. Andrews," says Boyce, admiringly, "you have a gourmet's taste for the underbelly."

"Darn it, Boyce," says Roz, "don't make me sound so blood-thirsty. It's just good business." Roz goes back to her office and flips through the pink slips of her phone messages, shuffling

them like cards: these for Boyce to answer, these for Suzy, these for herself. She scribbles on

them, instructions, comments. She feels good, revved up for innovation.

Now there's a pause; she just has time for a quick smoke. She sits down in her expensive leather-upholstered chair, behind her expensive desk, sleek, modern, handmade, no longer satisfying. It's time for a change of desk; what she'd like is something antique, with all those cute little hidden drawers. From her desktop the twins, age nine, look out at her from their photo, in their pink birthday-parry dresses, mauling a long-gone cat. Then later, in their black

semi-formals, at the annual Father-Daughter Dance put on by the school, an odd event considering the widespread shortage of fathers. Roz made Larry go, and coerced Boyce into

being the second man. The twins said he was a cool dancer. Next to the four of them, silver-framed, is Larry all by himself, in his graduation gown, so serious. A worry.

Next to him is Mitch.

Guilt descends, billowing softly like a huge grey parachute, riderless, the harness empty. Her

gold wedding ring weighs

heavy as lead on her hand. She should dump this picture of him, grinning at her so jauntily from the art nouveau brass frame, but with that uncertainty in the eyes. Always, but she didn't

see it. Not my fault, she tells him. Zenia is still here, in this building, in this room; tiny fragments of her burnt and broken soul infest the old woodwork like termites, gnawing away from within. Roz should have the place fumigated. What are those people called? Exorcists. But she doesn't believe in them.

On impulse she rummages in her desk drawer, finds the poisonous file, and buzzes next door for Boyce. She's never told him anything about this, never discussed it, and he's only worked for her two years; maybe he doesn't know the story. Though everyone must know it, surely: this is gossip city. "Boyce, your honest opinion. What do you think?"

What she hands him is an eight-by-ten colour glossy of Zenia, a studio portrait, the same one they'd used for Wise Woman World when Zenia was the editor, and also the one Roz herself passed to the private detective when she was going through that humiliating snoop act.

A dark dress with texture, plushy, V-necked of course - if you've got it, flaunt it, even if it's sryrofoam; the long white throat, the dark electrical hair, the left eyebrow quirked, the mulberry-coloured mouth curved up at the edges in that maddening, secretive smile.

My own monster, thinks Roz. I thought I could control her: Then she broke loose. Boyce assumes, or pretends to assume, that Zenia is someone Roz is considering as a model for Lookmakers. He holds the photo between thumb and forefinger as if it has germs, purses his lips. "The chair she sat in, like a burnished throne, etcetera," he says. "The leather garter-belt brigade, I'd say. Whips and chains, and overdone; I mean, that hair looks like a wig. Definitely not the nineties, Ms. Andrews. Vieux jeu, and don't you think she's a little old for our target market?"

Roz could cry with relief. He's wrong, of course; whatever Zenia had, whatever her magic was, it transcended image-of-the-month. But she loves what he just said. "Boyce," she tells him, "you're a goldarn jewel!"

Boyce smiles. "I try to be," he says.

Roz parks the Benz in an outdoor lot off Queen and hopes that nobody will flatten her tires, jimmy her trunk, or scratch her clean, recently polished dark blue paint while she's in having lunch. True, it's broad daylight, the car's in a supervised lot, and this isn't New York. But things are deteriorating, and even while she locks the door she's conscious of a dozen shadowy forms, out there on the sidewalk, huddled cloth-covered shapes, undernourished red eyes sizing her up, calculating whether she's good for a touch.

It's the Hearts, the Eyes, the Kidneys, and the Livers, but at a more basic level. She carries a clutch of pink two-dollar bills, ready in her pocket so she doesn't even have to open her purse. She will dole to left and to right as she runs the gauntlet from here to the Toxique. To give is a blessing, or so her father used to say. Does Roz agree? Do chickens have lipsg To give is basically a drag these days, because it doesn't get you anything, it won't even buy you a scratch-free car, and for why? Because those you give to hate you. They hate you because they have to ask, and they hate you for being able to give. Or else they're professionals and they despise you for believing them, for feeling sorry for them, for being such a gullible dork. What happened to the Good Samaritan, afterwards? After he'd rescued the man fallen among thieves, lugged him off the roadside, carted him home, fed him some soup, and tucked him into the guest room overnight? The poor sappy Samaritan woke up in the morning to find the safe cracked and the dog strangled and the wife raped and the gold candlesticks missing, and a big pile of shit on the carpet, because it was just stick-on wounds and fake blood in the first place. A put-up job.

Roz has a quick flashback to Zenia. Zenia standing on their front steps, hers and Mitch's, after one of those dinner parties in the early eighties, the ones when Roz was still susceptible to Zenia's act, still promoting her, still inviting her. Zenia, in a tight red suit with jutting shoulders, a flared peplum at the back of the jacket skirting the curve of her neatly packed bum; Zenia in spike heels, hip cocked, one hand on it. She was only a little drunk; same with Roz. Zenia kissed Roz on the cheek because they were such friends, such pals and cohorts, and

smiled mischievously at wretched Mitch, whose wretchedness Roz had stupidly failed to recognize. Then she turned to go down the steps, lifting her hand in a gesture oddly reminiscent of a newsreel general saluting the troops, and what was it she'd said? Fuck the Third

World! I'm tired of it!

So much for the proprieties. So much for earnest old Roz and her poky, boring charities, her handouts to the Raped Moms and Battered Grannies, and, at that time, the whales and the

famine victims and the village self-helpers, dowdy plump mommy Roz, shackled to her boring

old conscience. It was a selfish, careless remark, a daring remark, a liberated remark - to hell

with guilt! It was like speeding in a convertible, tailgating, weaving in and out without signalling, stereo on full blast and screw the neighbours, throwing your leftovers out the window, the ribbons, the wrapping paper, the half-eaten filo pastries and the champagne truffles, things you'd used up just by looking at them.

The worst of it was that Roz - although shocked, although gabbling, Oh Zenia, you don't mean

that! - had felt an answering beat, in herself. A sort of echo, an urge to go that fast, be that loose, that greedy, herself, too. Well, why not? You think they'd lift

a finger, in the Third World, if it was you? It was like that ad, for a car if she remembers rightly: Make Dust Or Eat It. Those were the choices on offer, then.

And Roz made dust, a lot of it, gold dust, and Zenia made a lot of dust too, though of a different kind. And now she is dust. And ashes, and so is Mitch. That's the taste Roz has now,

in her mouth.

Roz teeters across the gravel, hits the sidewalk, and hurries towards the Toxique, as fast as her

tight skirt will let her. There's a random flutter of hands held out, of thin murmuring voices.

pale unhappy voices like those at the edge of sleep. She presses crumpled balls of money into

the shaking fingers, the worn gloves, without looking, because if there's anything they resent it's your curiosity. So would she in their place. Ahead of her she spots Tony, coming along at

her even-footed pony's trot. Roz waves an arm and yoo-hoos, and Tony stops and smiles, and

Roz feels a warm rush of pleasure. Such a comfort!

And Charis is a comfort, too, sitting at the table already, flapping her hand in welcome. Kiss kiss, goes Roz, to either cheek, and plops herself into a chair, digging in her purse for her cig-

arettes. She intends to enjoy this lunch, because these two women are safe: of everyone she

knows, her kids included, these two alone want nothing from her. She can slip her shoe~ off under the table, she can hold forth and laugh and say whatever she likes, because nothing's being decided, nothing's being demanded; and nothing's being withheld either, because the two

of them know everything already. They know the worst. With them, and with them alone, she has no power.

Along comes the waitress - where do they get these clothes? Roz truly admires the nerve, and wishes she had some of it herself. Leopard-skin tights and silver boots! These are not outfits, these are costumes, but who are these people trying to be? Celebrants. But of what?

What strange religion? Roz finds the

Toxique denizens fascinating, but also a little scary. Every time she goes to the ladies' she's afraid of opening the wrong door down there, by mistake, and stumbling upon some kind of unholy rite. Orgies! Human sacrifices! No, that's going too far. But something she shouldn't know about, something that will get her in trouble. Some awful movie.

That's not the real reason she's drawn to the Toxique, however. The real reason is that, try as she may, she can't keep her hands off the laundry. She cruises her kids' rooms like a bottom-

feeding fish, retrieving a dirty sock here, some underpants there, and she found a Toxique match folder in the pocket of Larry's crumpled shirt, and another one the next week. Is it so unnatural, to want to know where your son spends his time? At night, of course; he wouldn't be there at lunch. But she's compelled to keep an eye on the place, check in once in a while.

It

gives her more of a handle: at least he goes somewhere, he doesn't just vanish into thin air.

But

what does he do here, and who does he do it with?

Nothing and nobody, maybe. Maybe he just eats here, like her.

Speaking of which. She runs a finger down the menu - she's so hungry she could eat a horse, though she knows better than to use such an expression in front of Charis. What she settles on is the Thick-cut Gourmet Toasted Cheese Sandwich, on Herb and Caraway Seed

Bread, with Polish Pickle. Solid peasant food, or an imitation of it. The Poles should have it so

good, right now they're probably exporting all their pickles for hard currency. She gives her order to the tousle-haired waitress - could this be the attraction, for Larry? a serving wench?

-

and settles down to pick Tony's brain on the subject of the Middle East. Whenever something

major happens there, the business world ripples.

Tony is so satisfying too, because however pessimistic Roz may be about current affairs, Tony is worse. She makes Roz feel

like a naive young bubblebrain, such a refreshing change! Over the years they have deplored

the US. presidency, shaken their heads while the Tories shredded the country, cast dire auguries from their analysis of Margaret Thatcher's hairdo, a militaristic sheet-iron coiffure if ever there was one, said Tony. When the Wall fell, Tony predicted waves of outgoing East Bloc iiiiamigrants, and rising resentment of them in the West, and Roz said, Oh surely not, because the thought of immigrants being resented bothers her a lot. None is too many, is what

some Canadian government pooh-bah said about the Jews, during the war.

But things are getting more confusing: for instance, how many immigrants can you fit in?

How many of them can you handle, realistically, and who is them, and where do you draw the

line? The mere fact that Roz is thinking this way shows the extent of the problem, because Roz

knows very well what it's like to be them. By now, however, she is us. It makes a difference. She

hates to be dog-in-the-manger, but she has to admit that Tony has been - however discouragingly - right on the money. Roz admires that. If only Tony would turn her predictive abilities to something more lucrative, like the stock market.

Tony's always so cool about everything, though. So matter-of-fact. What did you expect? she asks, With her round surprisedeyes. Her surprise is for other people's hopefulness, their inno-

cence, their mushy desire that everything will somehow turn out for the best.

Meanwhile, Charis, who doesn't believe in deaths, only in transitions, gets upset at the thought of all the riots and wars and famines Tony goes on about, because so many people will

be killed. It isn't the deaths themselves, she tells them - it's the nature of the deaths. They aren't

good deaths, they are violent and cruel, they are incomplete and damaged, and the evil effects

will linger on like a sort of spiritual pollution for years

and years. It's contaminating merely to think about this stuff, according to Charis.

"It's already been decided," says Tony. "It was decided as soon as Saddam crossed that border. Like the Rubicon:"

The Rubicon, the Rubicon. Roz knows she's heard that word before. A river; somebody crossed it. Tony has a whole list of rivers that people crossed, with world-changing results, at

some time or another. The Delaware, that was Washington. The Germanic tribes crossing the

Rhine and overthrowing the Roman Empire. But the Rubicon? Well, how stupid of Roz! Julius Caesar, for a full ten points!

Then it comes to Roz in a flash of light - what a great lipstick name! A great series of names, names of rivers that have been crossed, crossed fatefully; a mix of the forbidden, and

of courage, of daring, a dash of karma. Rubicon, a bright hollyberry. Jordan, a rich grape-tinged

red. Delaware, a cerise with a hint of blue - though perhaps the word itself is too prissy. Saint

Lawrence - a fire-and-ice hot pink - no, no, out of the question, saints won't do. Ganges, a blazing orange. Zambezi, a succulent maroon. Volga, that eerie purple that was the only shade

of lipstick those poor deprived Russian women could lay their hands on, for decades - but Roz can see a future for it now, it will become avant-retro, a collector's item like the statues of Staliri:

Roz carries on with the conversation, but in her head she's furiously planning. She can see the shots of the models, how she wants them to look: seductive, naturally, but challenging too, a sort of meet-your-destiny stare. What was it Napoleon crossed? Only the Alps, no memorable rivers, worse luck. Maybe a few snippets from historical paintings in the background, someone waving a gusry, shredded flag, on a hill - it's always a hill, never for instance

a swamp - with smoke and flames boiling around. Yes! It's right! This will go like hotcakes!

And there's one final shade needed, to complete the palette: a

sultry brown, with a smouldering, roiling undertone. What's the right river for that?

Styx. It couldn't be anything else.

It's at this moment that Roz catches the look on Tony's face. It isn't fear, exactly: it's an intentness, a focusing, a silent growl. If Tony had hackles they'd be raised, if she had fangs they'd be bared. This expression is so unlike the normal Tony that it scares Roz to bits.

"Tony, what's wrong?" she says.

"Turn your head slowly," says Tony. "Don't scream." Oh shit. It's her. In the flesh.

Roz has no doubt, not a moment of it. If anyone can come back from the dead, if anyone would be determined to do it, it's Zenia. And she's back, all right. She's back in town, like the

guy in the black hat in Western movies. The way she's striding through the room proclaims her

sense of re-entry, of staking out the territory: a tiny contemptuous upcurved smirk, a conscious

pelvic swagger, as if she's got two pearl-handled revolvers slung on her hips and is just waiting for an excuse to use them. Her perfume trails behind her like the smoke from an insolent cigar.

While the three of them sit huddled at their table, cowards all, pretending not to notice and avoiding eye contact and acting like the Main Street folks who dive for cover behind the 'dry-goods counter, keeping out of the line of fire.

Roz reaches down for her purse, sneaking a peek at Zenia over her lowered shoulder, taking her measure, as Zenia undulates into a chair. Zenia is still magnificent. Though Roz knows how much of her is manufactured, it makes no difference. When you alter yourself, the alterations become the truth: who knows that better than Roz, whose hair tints vary monthly? Such things are not illusions, they are transformations. Zenia is no longer a small-titted person with two implants, she's a bigbreasted knockout: The same goes for the nose job, and if

120

Zenia's hair is turning grey it's invisible, she must have a topnotch colourist. You are what they

see. Like a renovated building, Zenia is no longer the original, she's the end result.

Still, Roz can picture the stitch marks, the needle tracks, where the Frankenstein doctors have been at work. She knows the fault lines where Zenia might crack open. She would like to

be able to say a magic word - Shazam! - that would cause time to run backwards, make the caps

on Zenia's teeth pop off to reveal the dead stumps underneath, melt her ceramic glaze, whiten

her hair, shrivel her amino-acid-fed estrogen-replacement skin, pop her breasts open like grapes so that their silicone bulges would whiz across the room and splat against the wall.

What would Zenia be then? Human, like everyone else. It would do her good. Or rather it would do Roz good, because it would even the odds. As it is, Roz is going to war armed only

with a basketful of nasty adjectives, a handful of ineffectual pebbles. What exactly can she do,

to Zenia? Not a heck of a lot, because there can't be anything Zenia wants from her. Any more.

In the midst of her vengeful and fatalistic meditations, it occurs to her that Zenia may not just sit there and wait for Roz to attack. She may be here for a reason. She may be on the prowl. Hide the silver! What does she want, who is she out to get? At the thought that it might

be her - though how, though' why? - Roz shivers.

How did Roz get here, outside the Toxique? It must have been via her feet, but she can't recall

gathering her purse, getting up, bravely, stupidly turning her back on Zenia, walking; she's been

teleported, as in sci-fi movies of the fifties, reduced to a swirl of black-and-white zits, then reconstituted outside the door. She hugs Tony goodbye, and then Charis. She doesn't kiss their cheeks. Kisses are show-off, hugs are for real.

Tony is so little, Charis is so thin, both are shaken. She feels as if she's hugging the twins, one and then the other, on the morning of their first day at school. She wants to spread her hen wings over them, reassure them, tell them that everything will be all right, they just have to

be courageous; but these are grown-ups she's dealing with, both of them smarter than she is in

their different ways, and she knows they wouldn't believe a word of it. She watches them walk away, Tony scuttling along her invisible trajectory, Charis ambling, a hesitant lope. Both smarter than she is, yes; Tony has a brilliant mind, within limits, and Charis has something else, harder to put your finger on but uncanny; sometimes she gives Roz the creeps because she knows things she has no way of knowing. But neither one of them has any street smarts. Roz keeps expecting them to wander out into the traffic and be squashed by trucks, or to be mugged, right before her very eyes. Excuse me, ma'am, this is a mugging. Pardon? A what? What is a mugging? Can I help you with it? No street smarts at all, and Zenia is a street fighter. She kicks hard, she kicks low and dirty, and the only counterploy is to kick her first, with metal cleats on your boots. If there's going to be knife play, Roz will have to rely on herself alone. She doesn't need Tony's analysis of knives through the ages or Charis's desire not to discuss sharp items of cutlery because they are so negative. She just needs to know where the jugular is, so she can go for it. The difficulty is that Zenia doesn't have a jugular. Or if she does Roz has never been able to figure out where it is, or how to get at it. Zenia of old had no discernible heart, and by now she

may not even have blood. Pure latex flows in her veins. Or
122

molten steel. Unless she's changed, and it hardly looks that way. In any case this is the second time round, and Roz is ready for it, and much less vulnerable, because this time there's no more Mitch.

All of this resolution and bravura is very well, but when Roz gets back to her car she finds a little message scratched in her paint, on the driver's door. Rich Bitch. A neatly lettered message, relatively polite - in the States it would have been Cunt - and ordinarily Roz would merely have calculated the cost of the repair and how much time it would take to get it done, and whether it's deductible. Also she would take out her annoyance by making a scene with the parking lot attendant. Who did this? What do you mean, you don't know? What were you,

asleep? Darn it, what the heck do they pay you for?

But today she's not in the mood. She unlocks her car, checks the back seat to make sure nobody's in there - she hasn't read all those sex-killing thrillers for nothing - gets in, locks the door again, and has a small cry, in her usual position, with her forehead on the steering wheel

and her new cotton hankie at the ready. (The twins have outlawed paper tissues. They're relentless, they don't give two hoots about Maria's extra ironing. Pretty soon Roz won't even be allowed toilet paper, they'll make her use old T-shirts. Or something.) -

Her tears are not tears of mourning, nor of despair. They are tears of rage. Roz knows the flavour well. But at her age, rage for the sake of rage is becoming less and less worth it, because every time you grind your teeth a few of them could break off. So she blots her face,

finishing with her sleeve because her hankie is soaked, re-does her lipstick (Rubicon, here I come), touches up her mascara, and guns her motor, gravel spewing from beneath her wheels.

She half hopes she can graze a fender on the way out, pass along some anger - Oops! So-o-o

sorry! It would be a substitute, the next best thing to

123

strangling Zenia. But there's no car in a prime position, and the attendant's looking. Oh well, it's the thought that counts.

Roz goes up to her office - Hi Nicki, Hi Suzy, How's it going Boyce, anything important, is there some

more coffee, hold the calls, say I'm in a meeting - and shuts the door. She sits in her leather chair and

lights up, and ferrets in her in-basket for a chocolate, one of those round Viennese things with

portraits of Mozart on them, Mozart Balls is what the kids call them, and chews and swallows,

and drums her fingers on her unsatisfactory desk. Mitch is staring at her and it bothers her, so

she gets up and turns the picture around, averting his gaze. You aren't going to like this, she tells

him. He didn't the last time, either. Once he found out what she'd been doing.

She opens her file drawer and takes out the Z file, the same one with the glossy in it, and turns a few pages. There it all is, the skeleton of the skeleton in the closet: days, hours, places.

It still hurts.

Why not use the same detective, less explaining to be done, and she was super good, Harriet, Harriet Thing, Hungarian but she wAsPped her name - Harriet Bridges. Used to say she

got to be a detective because if you were a Hungarian woman dealing with Hungarian men, you

had to be one anyway. Roz finds the number, picks up the phorit. She has to go through a gatekeeper to get through - Harriet must be doing better if she has a secretary, or probably it's

one of those service-sharing offices - but she wheedles and pushes, and Harriet is finally not in

a meeting any more, but there on the line.

"Hi, Harriet, this is Roz Andrews. Yeah, I know, it's been years. Listen, I want you to do something for me. Actually, the same thing you did before, sort of. The same woman. Well, I know she's dead. I mean, she was dead, but now she isn't. I saw her! In the Toxique ...

124

"I haven't the faintest. That's where you come in!

"If I were you I'd start with the hotels, but you can't count on her using her own name.

Remember?

"I'll send over the photo by courier. Just find her. Find out what she's up to. Who she's seeing. Phone me as soon as you know anything. Anything! What she has for breakfast.

You

know how nosy I am.

"Mark the bill Personal. Thanks. You're a doll. We'll do lunch!"

Roz hangs up. She ought to feel better but she doesn't, she's too keyed up. Now that she's set

the thing in motion she can hardly wait for the results, because until she knows exactly where

Zenia is, Zenia might be anywhere. She might be outside Roz's house right now, she might be

climbing in through the window, gunny sack over her shoulder to carry away the loot. What loot? That's the question! Roz is almost ready to go out there and do the rounds herself,

mooch from hotel to hotel with her precious glossy photo under her arm, lie, insinuate, bribe

the desk clerks. She's impatient, she's irritable, she's avid, her skin is crawling with curiosity. Maybe it's menopause, now wouldn't that be nice for a change? Maybe she'll get that surge of energy and joie de vivre they're always talking about. It's long overdue. -

Or maybe this isn't raging hormones. Maybe it's sin. One of the Seven Deadlies, or rather two of them. The nuns were always keen on Lust, and Roz has thought recently that maybe Greed was the one with her own name on it. But here comes Anger, bhnd siding her; and Envy,

the worst, her old familiar, in the shape of Zenia herself, smiling and triumphant, an incandescent Venus, ascending not from a seashell but from a seething cauldron.

Let's face it, Roz, you're envious of Zenia. You always have been. Envious as Hell. Yes God, but so

what? Judas Priest, what do I do

125

about it? Down on your knees! Humiliate yourself! Mortify your soul! Scrub the toilet!

How long do I have to live before I'm rid of this junk, thinks Roz. The garage sale of the soul. She'll go home early, have a snack, pour herself a small drink, run a bath, put in some of

the stuff Charis keeps deluging her with, from that hophead store where she works. Ground-up leaves, dried flowers, exotic roots, musty-hayfield aromas, snake oil, mole bones, age-old

recipes brewed by certified crones. Not that Roz has a thing against crones, since at the rate

she's going she'll soon be one herself

It'll relax you, says Charis, though Roz, you have to help out! Don't fight it! Go with it. Lie back. Float. Picture yourself in a warm ocean.

But every time Roz tries this, there are sharks.

ZJWVNJ NDVZS

XVII

All history is written backwards, writes Tony, writing backwards. We choose a significant event and

examine its causes and its consequences, but who decides whether, the event is significant? We

do, and we are here; and it and its participants are there. They are long gone; at the same time,

they are in our hands. Like Roman gladiators, they are under our thumbs. We make them fight

their battles over again for our edification and pleasure, who fought them once for entirely other

reasons.

Yet history is not a true palindrome, thinks Tony. We can't really run it backwards and end up

at a clean start. Too many of the pieces have gone missing; also we know too much, we know the

outcome. Historians are the quintessential voyeurs, noses pressed to Time's glass window. They

can never actually be there on the battlefield, they can never join in those moments of supreme

exaltation, or of supreme grief either. Their re-creations are at the best just patchy waxworks.

Who'd choose to be God? To know the whole story, its violent dashes, its melees, its deadly

conclusions, before it even begins? Too sad. And too demoralizing. For a soldier on the eve

of

battle; ignorance is the same as hope. Though neither one is bliss.

Tony sets down her pen. Such thoughts are as yet too nebulous to be formulated for the present purpose, which is a lecture she's promised to deliver to the Society of Military Historiographers two months from now. What she's leading up to is the defeat of Otto the Red

at the hands of the Saratens on July 13, 982, and its inscription by later chroniclers as moral

exemplum. It will be a good lecture, good enough - her lectures are always good enough - but as

time goes on she has come to feel, at these events, more and more like a talking dog. Cute, no

doubt; a

129

clever trick; a nice dog; but nonetheless a dog. She used to think that her work was accepted or

rejected on its own merits, but she's begun to suspect that the goodness of her lectures is somehow not the point. The point is her dress. She will be patted on the head, praised, fed a few

elite dog biscuits, and dismissed, while the boys in the back room get down to the real issue,

which is which one of them will be the next society president.

Such paranoia. Tony banishes it, and goes to get herself a drink of water.

She's in the cellar, in her dressing gown and raccoon slippers, in the middle of the night.

She

couldn't sleep, and she didn't want to disturb West by working in her office, which is down the

hall from the bedroom. Her computer makes beeping sounds, and the light could wake him.

When she eased herself down from the bed, when she tiptoed from the room, he was sleeping

like an innocent, and also snoring like one, in a regular, gentle, maddening way.

Perfidious West. Indispensable West.

The real reason she came downstairs is that she wanted to consult the phone book, the Yellow Pages, under Hotels, and she didn't want him to catch her doing it. She didn't want him

to realize that she's been snooping on him, on him and Zenia, on his beside-the-phone scribbles. She didn't want to disappoint him, or, worse, alarm him. She's now looked up every

hotel in the city beginning with A. She's made a list: the Alexandra, the Annex, the Arnold Garden, the Arrival, the Avenue Park. She could phone them all, ask for the room number, disguise her voice - or she wouldn't have to say a word, she could pose as a

heavy-breathing

phone pervert - and see if it's Zenia.

But there's a phone in the bedroom, right beside the bed. What's to stop West from hearing the tiny ping it makes when you hang up the other phones, and from listening in? She could use

West's own phone, the Headwinds line; but it's just

130

above the bedroom, and how to explain herself if surprised in the act? Better to wait. If Zenia is

to be headed off- and Tony at the moment does not have the faintest idea how this is to be accomplished - West must be kept out of it as much as possible. He must be insulated.

He's

already been damaged enough. For kindly and susceptible souls like West's, the real world, especially the real world of women, is far too harsh a place.

The room Tony is writing in is the games room; or that's what she and West call it. It's the big part of the cellar, between the furnace room and the laundry room, and unlike these has indoor-outdoor carpet on the floor. West's game is a pool table, which takes up a relatively large amount of space and has a foldup plywood ping-pong overlay that can be added to it; which is what Tony is writing on. Tony isn't much good at pool - she can understand the strategy, but she pokes too hard, she has no finesse; however, she's a whiz at ping-pong. West is the opposite - despite his amazing spider-monkey reach, he's clumsy at high speeds. Sometimes, to give herself a handicap, Tony will play a game with her right hand, not quite as good as her left, though she can beat him that way also. When Tony's been wiped out too often at pool, West will suggest a game of ping-pong, though it's a foregone conclusion that he'll get creamed. He's always been very considerate, that way. It's a form of chivalry. ="

Which is a measure of how much, right now, Tony stands to lose.

But ping-pong is a diversion. Tony's real game is off in a corner, beside the tiny refrigerator they keep down there for ice-water and West's beer. It's a large sand-table, bought at a daycare centre garage sale some years ago, but it isn't full of sand. Instead it contains a three-dimensional map of Europe and the Mediterranean, made of hardened flour-and-salt paste, with the mountain ranges in relief and the major bodies of water done in blue Plasticine. Tony has been able to use this map over and over, adding and subtracting canals, removing marshes, altering coastlines, building and unbuilding roads and bridges and towns and cities, diverting rivers, as occasion has demanded. Right now it's set up for the tenth century: the day of Otto the Red's fateful battle, to be exact.

For the armies and the populations, Tony doesn't use pins or flags, not primarily. Instead she uses kitchen spices, a different one for each tribe or ethnic grouping: cloves for the Germanic tribes, red peppercorns for the Vikings, green peppercorns for the Saracens, white ones for the Slavs. The Celts are coriander seeds, the Anglo-Saxons are dill. Chocolate sprinkles, cardamom seeds, four kinds of lentils, and little silver balls indicate the Magyars, the Greeks, the North African kingdoms, and the Egyptians. For each major king, chief, emperor, or pope, there's a Monopoly man; areas in which each has sovereignty, actual or nominal, are marked by lengths of cut-up plastic swizzle stick, in matching colours, stuck into squares of gum eraser.

It's a complex system, but she prefers it to more schematic representations or to ones that show the armies and the strongholds only. With it she can depict interbreeding and hybridization, through conquest or through the slave trade, because populations are not in fact

homogeneous blocks, but mixtures. There are white peppercorns in Constantinople and Rome,

traded as slaves by the red peppercorns, who rule them; the green peppercorns. trade from south to north, as well as from east to west and back again, using lentils. The Frankish rulers

are really cloves, the green peppercorns have infiltrated the Celto-Ligurian corianders. There is

a continuous ebb and flow, a blending, a shift of territories.

To keep the lighter spices from rolling around, she uses a touch of hairspray. Gently, though; otherwise they will be blown away. When she wants to change the year or the century,

she scrapes off this or that population and sets up again. She

132

uses tweezers; otherwise her fingers get covered with seeds. History isn't dry, it's sticky, it can get

all over your hands.

Tony pulls a chair over to her sand-table and sits down to study it. On the west coast of Italy, near Sorrento, a group of cloves is pursuing a smaller group of fleeing green peppercorns: the

Teutons are out to get the Saracens, or so they intend. The Monopoly man among the cloves is

Otto the Red - impetuous, brilliant Otto, Otto the Second, the Germanic emperor of Rome. On

and on ride Otto and the cloves, between the indifferent sea and the wrinkly dry mountains, sweating under the gruelling sun; they are buoyant with adrenalin, high on the prospect of bloodshed and loot, dizzy with imminent winning. Little do they know.

Tony knows more. Behind the folds of dry earth and stone, out of sight, a large force of Saracen peppercorns is lying in ambush. The band of fleeing green peppercorns running away up

front are only decoys. It's the oldest trick in the book, and Otto has fallen for it. Soon his men will be attacked from three sides, and the fourth side is the sea. They will all be killed, or most of

them will be; or they'll be pushed back into the sea, where they'll drown, or they'll crawl away wounded and die of thirst. Some of them will be captured and sold for slaves. Otto himself will

escape with barely his life.

Go back, Otto, thinks Tony. She is fond of Otto, he's =afavourite of hers; also she feels sorry for him because he had a fight with his wife that morning, before he left on this illstarred expedition, which may account for his recklessness. Losing your temper is bad for war. Otto, go

back! But Otto can't hear her, and he can't see the world from above, as she can. If only he'd sent

out scouts, if only he'd waited! But waiting can also be fatal. So can going back. He who fights

and runs away may live to fight another day, or else he may just get speared from behind.

Already Otto has come too far. Already the great tweezers in

133

the sky descend, and the green peppercorns rise up from behind the rocks, ride out of hiding,

stayed

on them she was safe. She was dogged, she plodded on, nose to the ground, wrapped in a protective numbness.

As she recalls, it was November. (She had a wall calendar on which she crossed off the days, though there was no special date she was heading towards or anticipating; but it gave her the

feeling of moving forward.) She'd been living in McClung Hall for the past three years, ever since

the death of her father. Her mother had died earlier and was presently in a metal canister the

shape of a miniature depth charge, which she kept on a closet shelf, tucked in behind her folded

sweaters. Her father was in the Necropolis, although his 1940s German pistol was in a box of old

Christmas tree decorations, about all she'd kept

135

from the family house. She'd been intending to reunite her parents - take a trowel to the Necropolis one day, plant her mother beside her father like an aluminum-alloy tulip bulb - but

she was held back by the suspicion that her mother, at least, would have gone a long way to avoid such a thing. Anyway, she didn't at all mind having her mother in her room, on her shelf,

where she could keep an eye on her. (Assign her a location. Tether her down. Make her stay

put.)

Tony had a room to herself because the girl who was supposed to be sharing with her had taken an overdose of sleeping pills and had had her stomach pumped, and had then disappeared. People tended to, in Tony's experience. For weeks before she left, the roommate had

stayed in bed all day with her clothes on, reading paperback novels and weeping softly.

Tony

hated that. It bothered her more than the sleeping pills.

Tony had the sensation of living by herself, but of course she was surrounded by others; other girls, or were they women? McClung Hall was called a women's residence, but girls was

what they said to one another. Hey girls, they would call, running up the stairs. Guess what!

Tony did not feel she had much in common with these other girls. Groups of them would spend the evenings - when they weren't out on dates - in the Common Room, sprawled on the

dispirited orangy-brown chesterfield and the three overstuffed and leaking easy chairs, in their

pyjamas and housecoats and big bristly hair rollers, playing bridge and smoking and drinking

coffee, and dissecting their dates.

Tony herself did not go out on dates; she did not have anybody to go with. She did not mind this; in any case, she was happier in the company of people who had died a long time ago. That way there was no painful suspense, no disappointment. Nothing to lose.

Roz was one of the Common Room girls. She had a loud voice, and called Tony Toinette, or, worse, Tonikins; even then

136

she'd wanted to dress Tony up, like a doll. Tony hadn't liked her, at that period. She'd considered her intrusive and crude and smothering.

The girls in general thought Tony was odd, but they weren't hostile towards her. Instead they made a pet of her. They liked to feed her bits of the contraband food they kept hidden in their rooms - chocolate bars, cookies, potatochips. (Food in the rooms was officially forbidden, because of the cockroaches and mice.) They liked to give her little rumpings of the hair, little squeezes. People find it hard to keep their hands off the small - so like kittens, so like babies. Tiny Tony.

They would call out to her as she scuttled past them on her way to her room: Tony! Hey! Hey Tone! How's it goin'? Frequently Tony resisted them, or avoided them altogether. But sometimes she would go into the Common Room and drink their sedimentary coffee and nibble their sandy cookies. Then they would get her to write their names for them, backwards

and forwards at the same time, one name with each hand; they would crowd around, marvelling at what she herself felt to be self-evident, a minor and spurious magic.

Tony wasn't the only girl with a specialty. One of them could make a sound like a motorboat starting up, several - including Roz - were in the habit of drawing faces on their stomachs with eyebrow pencils and lipsticks and then performing a belly dance that made the

painted mouths open and close grotesquely, and another did a trick involving a glass of water,

an empty toiletpaper roll, a broomstick, an aluminum pie pan, and an egg. Tony found these accomplishments much more valid than her own. What she did required no skill, no practice; it

was merely like being double-jointed, or being able to wiggle your ears.

Sometimes they would beg her to sing backwards for them, and if they pestered enough and

if Tony was feeling strong, she would oblige. In her off-key, surprisingly raspy voice, the voice

of a choir-child with a cold, she would sing:

137

Gnilrad ym ho, Gnilrad ym ho, Gnilrad ym ho, Enitn(e)meic, Reverof
(e)nog dna tsol er(a) uoy, Yrros lufdaerd,
Enitn(e)melc.

In order to make it scan she would claim that three of the vowels were silent, and that uo was a

diphthong. Why not? All languages had such tics, and this was her language; so its rules and its

irregularities were at her mercy.

The other girls found this song hilarious, especially since Tony never cracked a smile, never twinkled, never twitched. She did it straight. The truth was that she didn't find it funny, this song about a woman who had drowned in a ludicrous fashion, who was not mourned, who was

ultimately forgotten. She found it sad. Lost and gone forever. Why did they laugh?

When she wasn't with these girls she didn't think much about them - about their edgy jokes, their group smell of pyjamas and hair gel and damp flesh and talcum, their welcoming chirps

and clucks, their indulgent smirks behind her back: droll Tony. Instead she thought about wars.

-Wars, and also battles, which were not the same thing.

What she liked was to replay decisive battles, to see if they could conceivably have been

won by the losing side. She studied the maps and the accounts, the disposition of troops, the technologies. A different choice of ground could have tipped the scales, or a different way of thinking, because thought could be a technology. A strong religious faith, because God too was a military weapon. Or a different weather, a different season. Rain was crucial; snow also. So was luck.

She had no biases, she was never for one side and against
138

the other. The battles were problems that might have been solved in another way. Some had been unwinnable, no matter what; others not. She kept a battle notebook, with her alternative solutions and the scores. The scores were the men lost. "Lost," they were called, as if they had been forgetfully misplaced somewhere and would be found again later. Really it meant killed.

Lost and gone forever. Dreadful sorry, the generals would say afterwards, if they themselves were still alive.

She was smart enough not to mention this interest of hers to the other girls. If known about, it would have pushed her over the edge: from strange but cute to truly pathological. She

wanted to retain the option of cookies.

There were a few other girls in residence who were like Tony, who snuck past the housecoated

bridge players and avoided communal meals. These girls didn't band together; they didn't even

speak to one another, apart from nods and hellos. Tony suspected them of having secret preoccupations, secret and risible and unacceptable ambitions, like her own.

One of these isolates was Charis. Her name wasn't Charis then, but plain Karen. (It changed sometime in the sixties, when there were a lot of nomenclatural mutations.) Charis-Karen was a thin girl; willowy was one of the words that came to mind, liki~ ' willows, with their swaying

branches, their shivering fountains of blonde leaves. The other word was amnesiac.

Charis meandered: Tony saw her sometimes, on the way to and from classes, wandering slantways across the street, always - it seemed - in danger of being run over. She wore long dirndl skirts with wedges of slip showing beneath them; things fell out of her purses, or rather

her bags, which were woven, ravelling, and embroidered. When she strayed into the Common

Room it was always to ask if anyone had seen her other glove, her mauve scarf, her fountain

pen. Usually no one had.

139

One evening when Tony was coming back from the library she saw Charis climbing down the McClung fire escape at the side of the building. She was wearing what looked like her nightgown; at any rate it was long and white and billowy. She reached the bottom platform, hung by her hands for a minute, then dropped the last few yards and began to walk towards Tony. Her feet were bare.

She was sleepwalking, Tony decided. She wondered what to do. She knew you weren't

supposed to wake sleepwalkers, although she had forgotten why. Charis was none of her busi-
ness, she'd never said more than two words to her, but she felt she ought to follow her to
make sure no moving vehicles bumped into her. (If this had been happening now Tony
would
have included rape among the possibilities: a young woman in a nightgown, outside in the
dark,
in downtown Toronto, would be heavily at risk. Charis might have been at risk then too, but
rape was not among Tony's daily-life categories at that time. Rape went with pillage, and
was
historical.)

Charis didn't go far. She walked through several piles of raked-up leaves, from the maples
and chestnuts on the McClung lawn; then she turned around and walked back through them
again, with Tony sneaking along behind her like a butterfly collector. After that she sat down
under one of the trees.

Tony wondered how long she was going to stay there. It was getting cold, and she wanted
to go inside; but she couldn't just leave Charis out on the lawn, sitting under a tree in her
night-
gown. So she sat down under the tree next to Charis's. The ground was not dry. Tony hoped
nobody would see her out there, but luckily it was quite dark and she had on a grey coat.
Unlike Charis, who glimmered faintly.

After a while a voice spoke to Tony out of the darkness. "I'm not asleep," it said. "But
thank you anyway."

Tony was annoyed. She felt she had been led on. She
140

didn't find this behaviour of Charis's - traipsing around in her bare feet and her nightgown -
at
all mysterious or intriguing. She found it theatrical and bizarre. Roz and the girls in the
Common Room might be abrasive, but at least they were solid and uncomplicated, they
were

known quantities. Charis on the other hand was slippery and translucent and potentially
clinging, like soap film or gelatin or the prehensile tentacles of sea anemones. If you
touched

her, some of her might come off on you. She was contagious, and better left alone.

XIX

None of the McClung Hall girls had anything to do with Zenia. And Zenia would have
nothing to do with them. She wouldn't have lived in a women's residence if forced at gun-
point, as she said to Tony the first time she set foot in the place. This dump, she called it.
(Why had she come? To borrow something. What was it? Tony doesn't wish to remember,
but remembers anyway: it was money. Zenia was always running short. Tony found it
embarrassing to be asked, but she would have found it more embarrassing still to refuse.

What

she finds embarrassing now is that she so naively, so tamely, so obligingly forked over.)

"Residence is for small people," Zenia said, gazing contemptuously around her, at the
institutional paintwork, the shoddy chairs in the Common Room, the comic strips cut out of
the newspaper and Scotch-taped to the girls' doors.

"Right," said Tony, heavily.

Zenia looked down at Tony, smiling, correcting herself. "Imaginatively small. I don't mean
you."

Tony was relieved, because Zenia's contempt was a work of
art. It was so nearly absolute; it was a great privilege to find yourself excluded from it. You
felt

reprieved, you felt vindicated, you felt grateful; or this is what Tony felt, pattering off to her

room, locating her little chequebook, writing out her little cheque. Offering it up. Zenia took it carelessly, folded it twice, and stuck it into her sleeve. Both of them tried to act as if nothing had happened; as if nothing had changed hands, as if nothing at all was owed.

How she must have hated me for that, thinks Tony.

So Tony did not meet Zenia among the girls at McClung Hall. She met her instead through her friend West.

She was not sure, exactly, how West had become her friend. He had more or less materialized. He began by sitting beside her in class and borrowing her Modern History notes

because he'd missed the lecture before that one, and then all of a sudden he was a part of her

routine.

West was the only person she could talk to about her interest in war. She hadn't done it yet, but she was working up to it gradually. Such a thing might take years, and he'd only been her

friend for a month. For the first two weeks of this period she'd called him Stewart, like his other, his male friends, who would slap him on the shoulder, give him small punches on the arm, and say, Hey Stew, what's new? But then= he'd come across a few of the cryptic comments

she'd written in the margins of her notes - egabrag tahw, poop dlo gnirob - and she'd had to explain them. He was impressed with her ability to write backwards - That's something, was what he said - and he'd wanted his own name reversed. He claimed to like his new name a lot

better.

The girls in the residence began referring to West as Tony's boyfriend, although they knew he wasn't. They did it to tease. "How's your boyfriend?" Roz would yell, grinning at Tony from the saggy depths of the orange sofa, which sagged even

142

more when it was Roz who was sitting on it. "Hey Tonikins! How's your secret life? How's Mr:

Beanpole? Poor me! The tall guys always go for shrimps!"

West was tall enough, but walking beside Tony made him look even taller. He lacked the solidity of the word giant; instead he was skinny, loosely strung. His legs and arms were only

tentatively attached to the rest of him, and his hands and feet seemed larger than they were because his sleeves and pant legs were always an inch or two short. He was handsome in an

angular, an attenuated way, like a medieval stone saint or an ordinarily handsome man who had

been stretched like rubber.

He had shaggy blond hair then, and wore dark, tarnished clothing - a frayed turtleneck, sullied jeans. This was unusual for the time: most men at university still wore ties, or at least jackets. His clothes were a badge of the fringe, they gave him an outlaw's lustre. When Tony and West had coffee together after their Modern History lecture, in one of the student coffee shops they frequented, the girls would stare at West. Then their eyes would move downwards

and they would spot Tony, in her kiddie pageboy, her horn-rimmed glasses and kilry skirt and

penny loafers. Then they would be puzzled.

Drinking coffee was about all Tony did with West. As they drank the coffee, they talked; although neither of them was wh'it you would call loquacious. Most of their talk was an easy silence. Sometimes they drank beer, in various dark beer parlours, or rather West did. Tony would sit on the edge of her chair, her toes barely touching the floor, and lick-the froth off the

top of her draft, her tongue exploring it thoughtfully, like a cat's. Then West would drink the rest of the beer and order two more. Four was his limit. To Tony's relief he never drank any more than that. It was surprising that the beer parlours let Tony in, because she looked so under-age. She was under-age. They must have thought she would never dare to set foot in such places unless she

143

was in reality twenty-two. But she was disguised as herself, one of the most successful disguises.

If she'd tried to look older it wouldn't have worked.

'%est said nobody took better history notes than Tony. That made her feel useful - even better, indispensable. Praised. West was taking Modern History - which wasn't modern history

at all, it was simply not Ancient History, which ended with the fall of Rome - because he was interested in folk songs and ballads, and in antique musical instruments. He played the lute, or

so he said. Tony had never seen his lute. She'd never been to his room, if in fact he lived in a

room. She didn't know where he lived, or what he did in the evenings. She told herself she wasn't interested: theirs was a friendship of the afternoons. As time went on, however, she began thinking about the rest of his life. She found herself wondering what he ate for dinner, and even breakfast. She assumed he lived with other men, or boys, because he'd told her about

a guy he knew who could set fire to his own farts. He didn't tell her this in a sniggering way, but

regretfully somehow. "Imagine having that engraved on your tombstone," he said. Tony recognized the fart-lighting as a variant of the more sedate tricks that went on in McClung Hall

with the eggs and lipstick faces, and postulated a men's residence. But she didn't ask.

When West appeared, he said Hi. When he disappeared, he said See you. Tony never knew

when either of these things was going to happen.

In this fashion they reached November. Tony and West were sitting in a beer parlour called Montgomery's Inn, after one of the skirmishes of the 1837 Rebellion in Upper Canada, which, in

Tony's opinion, should have gone the other way, but had been lost through stupidity and panic.

Tony was licking the foam off the top of her draft beer as usual, when West said something surprising. He said he was having a party.

144

What he actually said was we. And he didn't say party, he said bash.

Bash was an odd word, coming from West. Tony did not think of West as a violent person, and bash was harsh, a bodyblow term. He sounded as if he were quoting someone.

"A bash?" Tony said uncertainly. "I don't know" She had heard the girls in the residence talking about bashes. They took place at men's fraternities, and frequently ended with people

being sick - men mostly, but sometimes girls too, either at the fraternity itself or later, in one of

the McClung washrooms.

"I think you should come," said West, gazing at her benevolently with his blue eyes. "I think you're looking pale."

"This is the colour I am," said Tony defensively. She was, taken aback by the sudden concern for her health on West's part. It seemed too polite; although, in contradiction to his offhand and sullen clothing, he always opened doors. She wasn't used to such concern from

him, or from anyone else. She found it alarming, as if he had touched her.

"Well," said West, "I think you should get out more." "Out?" said Tony. She was confused: what did he mean by out? "You know," said West. "Meet people:"

There was something almost sly about the way he said this, as if he were concealing a more devious purpose: It occurred to her that he might be trying to set her up with some man, out of misplaced solicitude, the way Roz might. Toinette! There's someone I want you to

meet! Roz would say, and Tony would sidestep and evade.

Now she said, "But I wouldn't know anyone there." "You'd know me," said West. "And you could meet the others:"

Tony didn't say she did not want to meet any more people. It would have sounded too strange. Instead she let West write down the address for her, on a corner of paper torn from his Rise of the Renaissance textbook. He didn't say he would pick

145

her up, so at least it wasn't a date. Tony couldn't have handled a date with anyone, much less

West. She couldn't have handled the implications, or the hope. Hope of that kind might unbal-

ance her. She didn't want to get involved, with anyone, underlined, full stop.

The bash is up two flights of stairs, in a narrow asphalt-shingled building far downtown that forms part of a row of cut-price and army surplus stores, and fronts on the railway tracks.

The stairs are steep; Tony climbs them one step at a time, helping herself up by the banister.

The door at the top is open; smoke and noise are billowing out through the doorway. Tony wonders whether to knock, decides against it on the grounds that no one would hear her, and

goes in.

Right away she wishes she hadn't, because the room is thick with people, and they are the kind of people who, taken en masse, are most likely to frighten her, or at least make her very

uneasy. Most of the women have straight hair, worn long in a ballerina ponytail or wound into

austere buns. They have black stockings and black skirts and black tops, and no lipstick; their

eyes are heavily outlined. Some of the men have beards. They wear the same kind of clothes

that West does - work shirts, turtlenecks, jean jackets - but they lack his candour, his sweetness,

his air of hairlessness. Instead they are compacted, matted, v" dense with supercharged matter.

They hulk, they loom, they bristle with static energy.

The men are talking mostly to one another. The women aren't talking at all. They're leaning against the wall, or standing with their arms folded under their breasts, a cigarette carelessly in one hand, dropping ashes on the floor, looking as if they're bored and about to leave for some other, better party; or they're gazing expressionlessly at the men, or staring past their shoulders as if searching intently for someone else, some other man, a more important one.

A couple of the women glance over at Tony as she comes in, then shift their eyes quickly away. Tony is wearing the sort of clothes she usually wears, a dark green corduroy jumper with

a white blouse under it, a green velvet hairband, and knee socks and brown loafers. She has

kept a lot of her clothes from high school, because they still fit. She knows at this moment

that

she will have to acquire other clothes. But she is not sure how.

She stands on tiptoe and peers through the intertwined hedge of arms and shoulders and heads, of black wool rib-knit breasts and denim chests and torsos. But West is nowhere in sight.

Maybe it's because the room is so dark; maybe that's why she can't see him. Then she realizes that the room is not only dark, it's black. The walls, the ceiling, even the floor are a glossy, hard enamel black. Even the windows have been painted over; even the light fixtures.

Instead of electric lights there are candles, stuck in Chianti bottles. And all over the room there

are big silvery juice tins, peeled of their labels and filled with bunches of white chrysanthemums that waver and shine in the light from the candles.

Tony wants to leave, but she wouldn't like to do that without seeing West. He might think she'd refused his invitation, had failed to come; he might think she was being snobby. Also she

wants to be soothed and reassured: with him there she will not be so out of place. She goes in

search of him, down a hallway that leads off to the left. This terminates in a bathroom. A door

opens, there's a flushing sound, and a large, hair-covered man comes out. He gives Tony an

unfocused look. "Shit, the Girl Guides," he says.

Tony feels about two inches tall. She flees into the bathroom, which will at least be a refuge. It too has been painted black, even the bathtub, even the sink, even the mirror. She locks the door and sits down on the black toilet, touching it first to make sure the paint is dry.

147

She's not sure she's in the right place. Perhaps West doesn't live here at all. Perhaps she has

the wrong address; perhaps this is some other bash. But she checked the scrap of paper before

coming up the stairs. Perhaps, then, it's the time that's wrong - perhaps she's too early for West,

or too late. There's no way of knowing, since his comings and goings have always been so unpredictable.

She could go out of the bathroom and ask someone - one of the enormous, furry men, one of the tall supercilious women - where he might be, but she dreads doing this. What if nobody

knows who he is? It would be safer to stay in here, replaying the Battle of Culloden to herself,

calculating the odds. She arranges the terrain - the hill that slopes downwards, the fine of the

stone wall with the tidy British soldiers and their tidy guns in a row behind it. The raggedy clans

charging, plunging down the hill yelling, with nothing but their heavy outdated swords and their

round bucklers. Falling in picturesque, noble heaps. An abattoir. Courage is of use only when

technologies are evenly matched. Bonnie Prince Charlie was an idiot.

Unwinnable, she thinks, as a battle. The only hope would have been to avoid a battle altogether. To reject the terms of the argument, refuse the conventions. Strike at night, then melt away into the hills. Disguise yourself as a peasant. Not a fair fight, but then, what is a fair

fight? Nothing she's learned about yet.

Someone's knocking at the door. Tony gets up, flushes the black toilet, rinses her hands at the black sink. There's no towel so she wipes her hands on her corduroy jumper. She unlocks

the door: it's one of the ballerina women.

"Sorry," Tony says to her. The woman stares coldly.

Tony goes back into the main room, intending to leave. Without West, there's no point. But there, in the centre of the room, is Zenia.

148

Tony doesn't know Zenia's name yet, but Zenia doesn't seem to need a name: She isn't wearing

black like most of the others. Instead she's in white, a sort of shepherd's smock that comes down to mid-thigh on the long legs of her tight jeans. The smock isn't thin but it suggests lingerie, perhaps because the front buttons are open to a point level with her nipples. In the

V

of cloth, a small firm half-breast curves away to either side, like back-to-back parentheses.

All the others, in their black, sink into the black background of the walls. Zenia stands out:

her face and hands and torso swim against the darkness, among the white

chrysanthemums, as

if disembodied and legless. She must have thought it all out beforehand, Tony realizes - how

she would glow in the dark like an all-night gas station, or - to be honest - like the moon.

'Tony feels herself being sucked back, pushed back into the black enamel of the wall. Very

beautiful people have that effect, she thinks: they obliterate you. In the presence of Zenia

she

feels more than small and absurd: she feels non-existent.

She ducks into the kitchen. It's black too, even the stove, even the refrigerator. The paint glistens moistly in the candlelight.

West is leaning against the refrigerator. He is quite drunk. Tony can see it at once, she's had

enough practice. Something turns over inside her, turns over and sinks.

"Hi, Tony," he says. "How's my little pal?"

West has never called Tony his little pal before. He's never called her little. It seems a violation.

"Actually I have to go," she says.

"Night's young," he says. "Have a beer." He opens the black refrigerator, which is still white

inside, and digs out two Molson's Ex. "Where'd I put the fucker?" he asks, patting parts of his

body.

Tony doesn't know what he's talking about or what he's doing, or even who he is, exactly.

Not who she thought he

149

was, that's for sure. He doesn't usually swear. She starts backing away.

"It's in your pocket," says a voice behind her. Tony looks: it's the girl in the white smock.

She smiles at West, points her index finger at him. "Hands up."

Grinning, West puts his hands in the air. The girl kneels and fumbles in his pockets,

leaning her head against his thighs, and after a very long moment - during which Tony feels

as if she's being forced to peep through a keyhole at a scene far too intimate to be borne -

brings out a bottle-opener. She opens both beers with it, flipping the tops off expertly, hands

one to Tony, tilts the other one back and drinks from it. Tony watches her throat undulate as

she swallows. She has a long neck.

"What about me?" says West, and the girl hands him the bottle.

"So, how do you like our flowers?" she says to Tony. "We stole them from the Mount

Hope Cemetery. Some big cheese croaked. They're sort of wilted, though: we had to wait until everyone had bugged off" Tony notes the words - stole, croaked, bugged - and feels

timid and lacking in style.

"This is Zenia," says West. There's a proprietary reverence in his voice, and a huskiness, that Tony doesn't like at all. Mine, is what he means. Handfuls of mine.

Tony can see now that she was wrong about we. We had nothing to do with male roommates. We meant Zenia. Zenia is now leaning back against West as if he's a lamppost. He

has his arms around her waist, under her smock; his face is half hidden in her smoky hair.

"They're great," Tony says. She tries to sound enthusiastic. She takes an awkward swallow from the bottle Zenia has given her, and concentrates to avoid spluttering. Her eyes are sting-

ing, her face reddening, her nose is full of prickles.

"And this is Tony," says West's voice. His mouth is behind Zenia's hair, so it looks like the hair talking. Tony thinks about

150

running: out the kitchen door, between the denim-covered legs in the main room, down the stairs. A stampeding mouse. "Oh, this is Tony," says Zenia. She sounds amused. "Hi there, Tony. Do you like our black walls? Please get your cold hands off my stomach," she adds, to

West.

"Cold hands, warm heart," West mutters.

"Heart," says Zenia. "Who cares about your heart? It's not your most useful body part:" She lifts up the bottom of her smock, finds his two big hands, extracts them, and holds them in hers,

caressing them, all the time smiling at Tony. "It's revenge," she says. Her eyes aren't black, as

Tony thought at first: they're navy blue: "This is a revenge parry. The landlord's kicking us out, so

we thought we'd give the old fucker something to remember us by. It'll take him more than two

coats to cover this up. The lease said we had the right to paint, but it didn't say what colour. Did

you see the toilet?"

"Yes," says Tony. "It's very slippery." She doesn't mean this to be funny, but Zenia laughs.

"You're right," she says to West. "Tony's a scream:"

Tony hates being talked about in the third person. She's always hated it; her mother used to do the same thing. West has been discussing her with Zenia, the two of them, analyzing her behind her back, sticking adjectives onto her as if she's a child, as if she's anyone at all, as if she's

a topic. It occurs to her also that the only reason West asked her to their party is that Zenia told

him to. She sets the beer bottle down on the black stove, noticing that it's half empty. She must

have drunk the other half How did she do that? "I should be going," she says, with what she hopes is dignity.

Zenia doesn't seem to have heard her. Neither does West. He's peering out now from the burrow of Zenia's hair; she can see his eyes gleaming in the light from the candles.

Tony's arms and legs are coming detached from the rest of her, and sounds are slowing down.

It's the beer, she doesn't

usually drink it, she isn't used to it. Longing sweeps through her. She wishes she knew

someone who would bury his face in her own hair like that. She wishes it could be West. But she doesn't have enough hair for that. He would just hit scalp. She's lost something. She's lost West. Tsol. Reverof. It's a dumb thought: how can you lose somebody you never really had?

"So, Tony," says Zenia. She says Tony as if it's a foreign word, as if it's in quotes. "West tells

me you're brilliant. What's your direction?"

Tony thinks that Zenia is asking her where she's going from here. She could pretend there's another party, a better one, to which Zenia herself has not been invited. But it's not likely she would be believed. "I guess I'll take the subway back," she says. "I have to work:" "She's always

working," says West.

"No," says Zenia, with a hint of impatience. "I mean, what do you want to do with your life? What's your obsession?" Obsession. Tony doesn't know anyone who talks like that.

Only

criminals and creepy people have obsessions, and if you have one yourself you aren't supposed

to admit to it. I don't have to answer, she tells herself. She pictures the girls in the Common Room, and what they would think of obsessions; and what they would think of Zenia, come to

that. They would think she was full of it, and also a slut, with her buttons undone like that.

They would disapprove of her slutty hair. Usually Tony finds their judgments on other women catty and superficial, but right now she finds them comforting.

She should smile a bored, dismissive smile. She should say, "My what?" and laugh, and act puzzled, as if it's a stupid question. She knows how to do this, she has watched and listened.

But it isn't a stupid question, and she knows the answer. "Raw," she says.

"What?" says Zenia. She's concentrating on Tony now, as if

152

she is finally interesting. Something worth figuring out. "Did you say law?"

Tony realizes she's made a mistake, a slip of the tongue. She's reversed the word. It must be

the alcohol.

"I mean war," she says, pronouncing this time carefully. "That's what I want to do with my life. I want to study war." She shouldn't have said it, she shouldn't have told that much about herself, she's put it wrong. She's been ridiculous.

Zenia laughs, but it isn't a mocking laugh. It's a laugh of delight. She touches Tony's arm, lightly, as in a game of tag played with cobwebs. "Let's have coffee," she says. And Tony smiles.

That was it, that was the decisive moment. Rubicon! The die was cast, but who would have known it at the time? Not Tony, although she does remember a sensation, the sensation of having lost her footing, of being swept out into a strong current. And what, exactly, had acted

as the invitation proper? What had beckoned to Zenia, shown her an opening in Tony's beetle-

like little armoured carapace? Which was the magic word, raw or war? Probably it was the two

of them together; the doubleness. That would have had high appeal, for Zenia.

But this may be just overcomplication, intellectual web-spinning, to which Tony knows she is prone. Doubtless it was something much simpler, much more obvious: Tony's confusion, her lack of defences under the circumstances, the circumstances being West; West, and the fact

that Tony loved him. Zenia must have sensed this before Tony did, and known that Tony

was

no threat, and known as well that Tony had some feathers worth plucking.

153

But what about Tony herself? What was Zenia offering her, or appearing to offer, as she stood there in the black kitchen, as she smiled with her fingers lightly on Tony's arm, shimmering in the candlelight like a mirage?

Nature abhors a vacuum, thinks Tony. How inconvenient. Otherwise, we vacuums might lead our lives in relative security. Not that Tony is a vacuum now. No, not at all. Now she's replete, now she wallows in plenitude, now she's guarding a castle full of treasure, now she's

involved. Now she must take hold.

Tony paces the basement floor, her pen and notebook neglected on the ping-pong table, thinking of West sleeping upstairs, with the air going deeply into and out of him; West, shifting

and groaning, with forlorn sighs, sighs that sound like heartbreak. She listens to the screams of

the dying, to the cheering of the Saracens on the barren coast, to the refrigerator humming nearby, to the dunk of the furnace as it turns itself off and on, and to Zenia's voice.

A drawling voice, with a slight hesitation in it, a slight foreign flavour, the hint of a lisp; low, succulent, but with a hard surface. A glazed chocolate, with a soft, buttery, deceptive centre. Sweet, and bad for you.

"What would cause you to kill yourself?" says Zenia.

"Kill myself?" says Tony wonderingly, as if she's never thought of such a thing. "I don't know. I don't think I would." "What if you had cancer?" Zenia says. "What if you knew you were going to die slowly, in unbearable pain? What if you knew where the microfilm was, and

the other side knew you knew, and they were going to torture you to get it out of you and then

kill you anyway? What if you had a cyanide tooth? Would you use it?"

Zenia is fond of such interrogations. Usually they are based

154

on fairly extreme scripts: what if you'd been on the Titanic, going down? Would you have elbowed and shoved, or stood back and drowned politely? What if you were starving, in an open

boat, and one of the others died? Would you eat him? If so, would you push the others overboard so you could keep him all to yourself? She seems to have her own answers fairly firmly

in place, though she does not always reveal them.

Despite the weightless corpses strewn about in her head, despite her graph-paper wars and

the mass bloodshed she contemplates daily, Tony finds herself taken aback by such questions.

They aren't abstract problems - they're too personal for that - and there are no correct solutions

to them. But it would be a tactical error to let her dismay show. "Well, you'd never know, would

you?" she says. "Unless it happened:"

"Granted," Zenia says. "Well then, what would cause you to kill someone else?"

Tony and Zenia are having coffee, as they have done almost every third day now for the past

month, ever since they met. Or not every third day, every third evening: right now it's eleven o'clock, Tony's usual bedtime, and here she is, still up. She isn't even sleepy.

They aren't in a tame campus coffee shop, either; they're in a real coffee shop, near Zenia's

new place. Zenia's and West's.--=A dive, says Zenia. This coffee shop is called Christie's, and it stays open all night. At the moment there are three men in it, two of them in trench coats, one in

a greasy tweed jacket, sobering up, says Zenia; and two women, sitting in a booth together, talking in low voices.

Zenia says these women are prostitutes; prosties, she calls them. She says she can always tell.

They don't seem like very attractive sexual produce, to Tony: they aren't young, they're stuccoed

with makeup, and they have forties hairdos, shoulder length, stiffened with spray and with a parting of white scalp at

155

the side. One of them has taken off a sling-backed shoe, and dangles her nyloned foot out over the aisle. The whole place, with its dirty linoleum floor and its out-of-order jukebox and its thick, chipped cups, has a discarded quality to it, a raffish and tawdry carelessness, that repels Tony and also thrills her deeply.

She's been signing out at McClung Hall for later and later hours. She says she's helping to paint the sets for a play: The Trojan Women. Zenia read for Helen, but instead she's Andromache. "All that wailing," she says. "Female whining. I hate it really." She says she once

wanted to be an actress, but not any more. `Fucking directors think they're God," she says. "You're just dog food, as far as they're concerned. And the way they drool and paw at you!" She's thinking of quitting.

Drooling and pawing is a new concept, for Tony. She has never been drooled on or pawed. She would like to ask how it is done, but refrains.

Sometimes the two of them really do paint sets. Not that Tony's any good at painting - she's never painted anything before in her life - but the others give her a brush and the paint and show her where, and she puts on the base colours. She gets paint on her face and in her

hair, and on the man's shirt they've provided, which comes down to her knees. She feels baptized.

By the others - the thin scornful straight-maned women, the black-sweatered, ironic men - she

is almost accepted, which is, - naturally Zenia's doing. For some reason that none of these people

can figure out, Zenia and Tony are thick as thieves. Even the girls in the residence have noticed

it. They no longer call Tony Tonikins, or offer her cookie shards, or beg her to sing "Darling Clementine" in reverse. They have backed off. Tony can't tell if this is dislike or respect; or possibly it's fright, because Zenia, it seems, has a certain reputation among them. Although none

of them know her personally, she is one of the visible people - visible to everyone else, but unseen by Tony before now because she wasn't looking. It's partly her

156

appearance: Zenia is the incarnation of how plainer, more oblong women wish to look, and therefore to be: it's a belief of theirs that such things can be arranged from the outside in.

She

is thought also to be brilliant, and she gets top marks - though she doesn't exert herself, she hardly ever attends a lecture, so how does she do it? Brilliant, and also fearsome. Wolfish, feral,

beyond the pale.

Tony hears some of this from Roz, who barges into her room one morning while Tony is

studying, trying to catch up on the time she's missed the night before. Mothering Roz descends with squawks and a flutter of feathers, and attempts to enlighten small Tony, towards whom she feels protective. Tony listens in silence, her eyes hardening, her ears closing over. She will not hear a word against Zenia. Jealous bitch, she thinks. Hctib suolaej. She has different clothes now, too, because Zenia has redesigned her. She has black corduroy jeans, and a pullover with a huge rolled collar in which her head sits like an egg in its nest, and a gigantic wraparound green scarf. It's not as though you can't afford it, says Zenia, propelling her through the stores. The pageboy with the velvet hairband is gone; instead, Tony's hair is cut short and tousled on top, with artful wisps coming out of it. Some days Tony thinks she looks a little like Audrey Hepburn; other days, like an electrocuted mop: Much more sophisticated, Zenia has pronounced. She has also made Tony exchange her normal-sized horn-rimmed glasses for bigger ones, enormous ones. "But they're too exaggerated," said Tony. "Unbalanced:" "That's what beauty is," said Zenia. "Exaggerated. Unbalanced. Pay more attention and you'll see:" This is the theory behind the outsized sweaters too, the blanket-like scarves: Tony, swimming within them, is rendered even scrawnier. "I look like a stick," she says. "I look ten!" "Slender," says Zenia. Juvenile. Some men like that."

157

"Then they're warped," says Tony.

"Listen to me, Antonia," says Zenia seriously. "All men are warped. This is something you must never forget:"

The waitress comes, dollops of fat under her chin, support hose on her legs and clumpy shoes on her feet, a grey bibbed bosom with a stain of ketchup on it bulging out in front. Indifferently she refills their cups. "She's one too," says Zenia, when her back is turned. "A prostie. In her spare time."

Tony scans the stolid rump, the bored slope of the shoulders, the straggling bun of dead-squirrel-coloured hair. "No!" she says. "Who would want to?"

"Bet you anything," says Zenia. "Go on!"

She means that Tony should continue with whatever story she's been telling, but Tony can scarcely remember where she was. This friendship with Zenia has been very sudden. She feels

as if she's being dragged along on a rope, behind a speeding motorboat, with the waves sloshing over her and her ears full of applause; or as if she's raket ing downhill on a bicycle, with no hands and no brakes either. She's out of control; at the same time, she's unusually alert, as if the small hairs on her arms and on the back of her neck are standing straight up. These are perilous waters. But why? They're only talking.

Though it's making Tony dizzy, all this reckless verbiage. She's never listened so much to one person; also, she herself has~never said so much, so heedlessly. She has hardly gone in

for self-revelation, in her previous life. Who was there to tell? She has no idea what might come reeling out, the next time she opens her mouth.

"Go on," says Zenia once more, leaning forward, across the speckled-brown table, the half-empty cups, the butts in the brown metal ashtray. And Tony does.

XXI

What Tony is telling about is her mother. This is the first time Tony has ever said very much

to anyone about her mother, beyond the bare bones, that is. Lost and gone, says Tony, and Dreadful sorry, says everyone else. Why say more? Who would be interested?

Zenia is, as it turns out. She can see it's a painful subject for Tony, but this doesn't deter her; if anything it spurs her on. She pushes and prods and makes all the right noises, curious

and amazed, horrified, indulgent, and relentless, and pulls Tony inside out like a sock. It takes time, because Tony has no single clear image of her mother. The memory of her is composed of shiny fragments, like a vandalized mosaic, or like something brittle that's been

dropped on the floor. Every once in a while Tony takes out the pieces and arranges and rearranges them, trying to make them fit. (Though she hasn't spent very long at this yet. The wreck is too immediate.)

So all Zenia can get out of her is a handful of shards. Why does she want such a thing?

That's for Zenia to know and Tony to find out. But, in the entranced and voluble moment, it doesn't occur to Tony even to ask. :

Tony was hardened off early. This is what she calls it by now, ruefully, in her cellar, at three a.m., with the shambles of Otto the Red's clove army strewn on the sand-table behind her and

West sleeping the sleep of the unjust upstairs, and Zenia raging unchecked, somewhere out

there in the city. "Hardened off" is a term she's lifted from Charis, who has explained that it's what you do to seedlings to toughen them up and make them frostresistant and help them to transplant better. You don't water them very much, and you leave them outside in the cold.

This

159

is what happened to Tony. She was a premature baby, as her mother was fond of telling her, and

was kept in a glass box. (Was there a note of regret in her mother's voice, as if it was a pity that

she was eventually taken out?) So Tony spent her first days motherless. Nor - in the long run -

did things improve.

For instance:

When Tony was five, her mother decided she would take her tobogganing. Tony knew what tobogganing was, although she had never done it. Her mother had only a vague idea, gleaned

from Christmas cards. But it was one of her romantic English images of Canada.

Where did she get the toboggan? Probably she borrowed it from one of her bridge club friends. She zipped Tony into her snowsuit and got them to the tobogganing hill in a taxi.

The

toboggan was just a small one, so it fit into the back seat, on a slant, along with Tony. Her mother sat in the front. Tony's father had the car that day, as he did most days. This was just as

well, as the streets were icy and Tony's mother was at best a spontaneous driver.

By the time they got to the tobogganing hill the sun was low and huge and dimly pink in the grey winter sky, and the shadows were bluish. The hill was very high. It was on the side of a ravine, and covered with close-packed, icy snow. Groups of - screaming children and a few adults

were careering down it on sleighs and toboggans and large pieces of cardboard. Some had

overturned, and there were pile-ups. Those that reached the bottom disappeared behind a clump

of dark fir trees.

Tony's mother stood at the top of the hill, staring down, holding the toboggan by its rope as if restraining it. "There," she said. "Isn't that nice?" She was pleating her lips, the way she did

when she put on lipstick, and Tony could tell that the scene before her was not exactly what she'd had in mind. She was wearing her downtown coat and hat, and nylon stockings and little boots with high heels and fur tops. She didn't have slacks or a ski suit or a Hudson's

Bay coat and earmuffs like the other adults there, and it occurred to Tony that her mother expected her to go down the hill on the toboggan all by herself.

Tony felt an urgent need to pee. She knew how difficult this would be, considering her clumsy two-piece snowsuit with the elastic braces over the shoulders, and what annoyance it

would cause her mother - there was not a washroom in sight - so she said nothing about it. Instead she said, "I don't want to." She knew that if she ever went down that hill she would flip

over, she would crash into something, she would be crushed. One small child was being led up

the hill, howling, with blood running from its nose.

Tony's mother hated having her scenarios foiled. People should enjoy themselves when she wanted them to. "Come on," she said. "I'll give you a push. It'll be lovely!"

Tony sat down on the ground, which was her habitual means of protest. Crying did not work, not with her mother. It was likely to produce a slap, or at best a shake. She had never been much of a crier.

Her mother glanced down at her with disgust. "I'll show you how!" she said. Her eyes were sparkling, her teeth were set: it was the look she got when she was willing herself to be

brave, when she was refusing to be defeated. Before Tony knew

' what was happening her mother had picked up the toboggan and run with it to the brink of the hill. There she threw it onto the snow and hurled herself on top of it, and went whizzing down, flat on her belly, with her beige legs in their nylons and her fur-topped boots sticking straight up behind her. Almost immediately her hat came off.

She went at an astonishing speed. As she diminished down the slope, into the dusk, Tony clambered to her feet. Her mother was going away from her, she was vanishing, and Tony would be left alone on the cold hill.

"No! No!" she screamed. (Unusual for her to have screamed: she must have been terrified.)

But inside herself she could hear another voice, also hers, which was shouting, fearlessly and

with ferocious delight:

On! On!

As a child, Tony kept a diary. Every January she would write her name in the front of it, in block letters:

TONY FREMONT

Then under it she would write her other name: TNOMERFYNOT

This name had a Russian or Martian sound to it, which pleased her. It was the name of an alien, or a spy. Sometimes it was the name of a twin, an invisible twin; and when Tony grew up

and learned more about left-handedness she was faced with the possibility that she might in

fact have been a twin, the left-handed half of a divided egg, the other half of which had died.

But when she was little her twin was merely an invention, the incarnation of her sense that part

of her was missing. Although she was a twin, Tnomerf Ynot was a good deal taller than Tony herself. Taller, stronger, more daring.

Tony wrote her outer name with her right hand and her other name, her inner one, with her left; although, officially, she was forbidden to write with her left hand, or to do anything else of

importance with it. Nobody had told her why. About the closest she'd come to an explanation

was a speech of Anthea's - of her mother's - in which she'd said that the world was not constructed for the left-handed. She also said that Tony would understand better when she grew up, which was just another of Anthea's assurances that failed to come true.

When Tony was younger the teachers at school would slap her left hand or hit it with rulers, as if she'd been caught picking her nose with it. One teacher tied it to the side of her desk. The other children might have teased her about this, but they

162

didn't. They couldn't see the logic of it, any more than she could.

That was a school Tony got yanked out of quickly. Usually it took Anthea eight months or more before she got fed up with a school. It was true that Tony couldn't spell very well, or not according to the teachers. They said she reversed letters. They said she had trouble with

numbers. They would say this to Anthea, and Anthea would say that Tony was gifted, and then Tony would know it would soon be time for a change because very shortly now Anthea would lose her temper and start insulting the teachers. Nincompoops was one of the nicer names she called them. She wanted Tony changed, fixed, turned right side up, and she wanted it to happen overnight.

Tony could do things easily with her left hand, things her right hand would stumble over.

In her right-handed life she was awkward, and her handwriting was lumpish and clumsy. But that made no difference: despite its good performance her left hand was scorned, but her right hand was bribed and encouraged. It wasn't fair, but Anthea said that life wasn't fair.

Secretly Tony continued to write left-handed; but she felt guilty about it. She knew there must be something shameful about her left hand or it would not have been humiliated like that. It was the hand she loved best, all the same.

It's November, and the afternoon is already darkening. Earlier there was a dusting of snow, but

now it's drizzling. The drizzle runs down the living-room windows in icy, sinuous trickles; a few brown leaves are stuck to the outside of the glass like leather tongues.

Tony kneels on the chesterfield with her nose pressed against the window, making fog patches with her breath. When the patch is big enough she writes on it, squeakily, with her index finger. Then she rubs out the words. Kcuf, she writes. This is a word too bad even for her diary. Tih. She writes these words

163

with fear and awe, but also with a superstitious relish. They are Tnomerf Ynot words. They make her feel powerful, in charge of something.

She breathes and writes and rubs out, breathes and writes. The air is unfresh, filled with the dry, burnt smell of the chintz curtains. All the time she's writing, she's listening to the silence of the house behind her. She's used to silences: she can distinguish between full silences and

empty ones, between those that come before and those that come after. Just because there's a

silence it doesn't mean that nothing is going on.

Tony kneels at the window as long as she dares. At last she sees her mother walking quickly

along the street from the corner, head down against the drizzle, her fur collar turned up, her face hidden by her maroon hat. She's carrying a wrapped package.

Probably it's a dress, because clothes are a solace for Anthea; when she's feeling "blue," as

she calls it, she goes shopping. Tony has been dragged downtown on these expeditions many times, when Anthea couldn't figure out where else to stash her. She's waited outside change rooms, sweating in her winter coat, while Anthea has tried things on and then more things, and has come out in her stocking feet and done a pirouette in front of the full-length mirror, smoothing the cloth down over her hips. Anthea doesn't often buy clothes for Tony; she says she could dress Tony in a potato sack and Tony wouldn't notice. But Tony does notice, she notices a great deal, She just doesn't think it would make any difference whether she wore a potato sack or not. Any difference to Anthea, that is. Tony gets up from the chesterfield and begins her piano practice. Playing the piano is supposed to strengthen her right hand, though everyone including Tony knows that Tony isn't musical and that these lessons will lead nowhere. How could they? Tony, with her little rodent paws, can't even span an octave.

164

Tony practises doggedly, trying to keep time to the ticking metronome, and squinting at the music because she's forgotten to turn on the piano lamp, and because, without realizing it, she's becoming near-sighted. The piece she's playing is called "Gavotte:" Ettovag. It's a good

word; she will think of a use for it, later. The piano reeks of lemon oil. Ethel, who comes in to clean, has been told not to polish the keys with it - she's only supposed to use a damp cloth

-

but she pays no attention, and Tony's fingers will smell of lemon oil for hours. It's a formal smell, an adult smell, ominous. It comes before parties.

She hears the front door open and close, and feels the cold draft from it on her legs. After a few minutes her mother walks into the living room. Tony can hear the high heels, tapping on the hardwood floor, then muffled by the carpet. She plays on, banging the keys down to show her mother how studious she is.

"That's enough for today, don't you think, Tony?" her mother says gaily. Tony is puzzled: usually Anthea wants her to practise as long as possible. She wants her safely occupied, somewhere out of the way.

Tony stops playing and turns to look at her. She's taken off her coat, but she still has her hat on, and, oddly, her matching maroon gloves. The hat has a spotted half-veil that comes down over her eyes and part of her nose. Below the veil is her mouth, slightly blurred around the edges, as if her lipstick has run because of the rain. She puts her hands up behind her head,

to unpin her hat.

"I haven't done a half-hour yet," says Tony. She still believes that the dutiful completion of pre-set tasks will cause her to be loved, although in some dim corner of herself she knows this

hasn't worked yet and most likely never will.

Anthea takes down her hands, leaving her hat in place. "Don't you think you deserve a little holiday today?" she says, smiling at Tony. Her teeth are very white in the dim room.

165

"Why?" says Tony. She can see nothing special about this day. It isn't her birthday.

Anthea sits down beside her on the piano bench and slides her left arm with its leather-gloved

hand around Tony's shoulders. She gives a little squeeze. "You poor thing," she says. She

puts

the fingers of her other hand under Tony's chin and turns her face up. The leather hand is lifeless

and cool, like the hand of a doll.

"I want you to know," she says, "that Mother truly, truly loves you:"

Tony pulls back within herself: Anthea has said this before. When she says it her breath smells

the way it does now, of smoke and of the empty glasses left on the kitchen counter in the morn-

ings after parties, and on other mornings as well. Glasses with damp cigarette butts in them, and

broken glasses, on the floor.

She never says "I truly, truly love you:" It's always Mother, as if Mother is someone else.

Reptom, thinks Tony. Evol. The metronome ticks on. Anthea gazes down at her, holding onto

her with her two gloved hands. In the semi-dark her eyes behind the spots of her veil are sooty

black, bottomless; her mouth is tremulous. She bends over and presses her cheek to Tony's, and

Tony feels the rasp of the veil and the damp, creamy skin under it, and smells her, a smell of violet perfume and underarms mixed with dresscloth, and a salty, eggy smell, like strange mayonnaise. She doesn't know why Anthea is acting like this, and she's embarrassed. All Anthea

does normally is kiss her goodnight, a little peck; she's shaking all over, and for a moment Tony

thinks - hopes - it's with laughter.

Then she lets go of Tony and gets up and moves to the window, and stands with her back turned, unpinning her hat really this time. She takes it off and throws it down on the sofa, and fluffs out her dark hair at the back. After a moment she kneels and looks out. "Who's been making all these smudges?"

166

she says, in a higher, tighter voice. It's the voice she uses for mimicking happiness, when she's

angry with Tony's father and wants to show him she doesn't care. She knows the smudges are

Tony's. Ordinarily she'd be irritated, she'd make some remark about how much it costs to have

Ethel clean the windows, but this time she laughs, breathlessly, as if she's been running.

"Nose marks, just like a dog. Guppy, you are such a funny child."

Guppy is a name from long ago. Anthea's story is that she called Tony that right after she was born, because of her time in the incubator. Anthea would come and look at Tony through

the glass, and Tony's mouth would be opening and closing but there wouldn't be any sound. Or

Anthea said she couldn't hear any. She kept the name because later, when Tony was out of danger and she'd taken her home, Tony scarcely cried; she just opened and closed her mouth.

Anthea tells this story as if it's funny.

This nickname - enclosed by quotation marks - is pencilled in below Tony's baby pictures. in

Anthea's white leather My Baby photo album: "'Guppy.' 18 months"; "'Guppy' and Me";

"'Guppy' and her Dad." After a while Anthea must have stopped taking these pictures, or stopped sticking them in, because there are just blank pages.

Tony feels a rush of longing for whatever it was that existed once between herself and her mother, in the photo album; but she feels annoyance as well, because the name itself is a trick.

She used to think a guppy was something warm and soft, like a puppy, and she was hurt and

insulted when she discovered it was a fish.

So she doesn't answer her mother. She sits on the piano bench, waiting to see what Anthea will do next.

"Is he here?" she says. She must know the answer: Tony's father wouldn't have left Tony in the house alone.

"Yes," says Tony. Her father is in his study at the back of the house. He's been there all along.

He must have heard the

167

silence, when Tony wasn't playing. He doesn't care whether Tony practises the piano or not.

The piano, he says, is her mother's bright idea.

XXII

Tony's mother cooks supper as usual: She doesn't take off her good bridge club dress, but puts

her apron over it, her best apron, the white one with ruffles over the shoulders. She has re-done her lipstick: her mouth shines like a waxed apple. Tony sits on the kitchen stool, watching

her, until Anthea tells her to stop goggling: if she wants to be useful she can set the table.

Then

she can go and dig up her father. Anthea often puts it this way: dig up, as if he's a potato.

Sometimes she says root out.

Tony has no particular desire to be useful, but she's relieved that her mother is acting more normally. She deals out the plates and then the forks, knives, and spoons, a left right right, a left right right, and then she goes into her father's study, knocking first, and sits down cross-legged on the floor. She can always go in there as long as she keeps quiet.

Her father is working at his desk. He has his desk lamp on, with its green shade, so his face

has a greenish tinge. He's a large man with small neat handwriting that looks as if it's been done by fastidious mice. Beside it, Tony's own writing is that of a three-fingered giant. His long

arrow nose is pointing straight down at the papers he's working on; his yellowy-grey hair is combed back, and the nose and the hair together make him seem as if he's flying through a strong headwind, hurtling down towards the target of his paper. He's frowning, as if braced for

the impact. Tony is dimly aware that he isn't happy; but happiness isn't something she expects,

in men. He never complains about not having it; unlike her mother.

168

His yellow pencil twiddles. He has a jarful of these pencils on his desk, kept very sharp.

Sometimes he asks Tony to sharpen them for him; she turns them one by one in the businesslike sharpener clamped to the windowsill, feeling that she's preparing his arrows.

What

he does with these pencils is beyond her, but she knows that it's something of the utmost importance. More important - for instance - than she is.

Her father's name is Griff, but she doesn't think of him as Griff, the way she thinks of her mother as Anthea. He's somewhat more like the other fathers, whereas Anthea isn't very much

like the other mothers, although occasionally she tries to be. (Griffis not her Dad, though:

Griffis not a Dad.)

Griff was in the war. Anthea says that although he may have been in it, he didn't go through it, the way she did. Her parents' house in London was destroyed by a bomb during the Blitz and her parents were both killed. She'd come home - where had she been? She has never said -

to find nothing but a crater, one standing wall, and a pile of rubble; and her own mother's shoe, with a foot in it.

But Griff missed all that. He only got into it at D-Day. (It meaning the danger, the killing; not the training, the waiting, the fooling around.) He was there for the landing, the advance, the easy bit, says Anthea. The winning.

Tony likes to think of him like that - winning - like someone winning a race. Victorious. He has not been noticeably victorious lately. But Anthea says the easy bit in front of people, in front of their friends when they come over for drinks and Tony watches from doorways.

Anthea says the easy bit, looking straight at Griff with her chin up, and he turns red.

"I don't want to talk about it," he says.

"He never does," says Anthea with mock despair, lifting her shoulders. It's the same gesture she makes when Tony refuses to play the piano for the bridge club.

169

"At the end it was just children," says Griff. "Children, in men's uniforms. We were killing children:"

"Lucky you," says Anthea lightly. "That must have made it smoother for you."

"It didn't," says Tony's father. They stare at each other as if no one else is in the room: tense and measuring.

"He liberated a gun," says Anthea. "Didn't you, darling? He's got it in his study. I wonder if the gun feels liberated." She gives a dismissive laugh, and turns away. A silence eddies behind

her.

That was how Anthea and Griff met - during the war, when he was in England. Stationed in England, Anthea would say; so Tony pictures the two of them in a train station, waiting to depart. It would have been a winter train station; they had on their overcoats and her mother was wearing a hat, and their breath was turning to white fog as it came out of their mouths. Were they kissing, as in pictures? It's not clear. Perhaps they were going on the train together,

perhaps not. They had a lot of suitcases. There are always a lot of suitcases in the story of Tony's parents.

"I was a war bride," Anthea says; she gives a self-deprecating smile, and then a sigh. She says

war bride as if she's making fun of it - minor-key, rueful fun. What does she mean to imply~ That she has fallen prey to an old trick, an old confidence trick, and knows it now and deplores

it? That Tony's father took advantage of her in some way? That it was the fault of the war? The raw. A raw bride, thinks Tony. Uncooked. Or, more like it: rubbed raw, like her own wrists

by the frozen cuffs of her snowsuit.

"I was a war husband," her father says; or used to say, back when he still made jokes. He also said that he'd picked Anthea up in a dance hall. Anthea didn't like that.

170

"Griff, don't be vulgar," she would say.

"Men were scarce," he would add, to the audience. (There was usually an audience for these

exchanges. They rarely said such things when they were alone.) "She had to grab what she could get:"

Then Anthea would laugh. "Decent men were scarce, and who grabbed who? And it wasn't a dance hall, it was a dance." "Well, you can't expect us poor barbarians to know the difference."

What happened after that? After the dance. It's unclear. But for some reason, Anthea decided to

marry Griff. That it was her decision is frequently underlined by Tony's father: Well, nobody forced

you. Her mother was somehow forced, however. She was forced, she was coerced, she was

carried off by that crude thieving lout, Tony's father, to this too-cramped, two-storey, fake Tudor, half-timbered, half-baked house, in this tedious neighbourhood, in this narrow-minded

provincial city, in this too-large, too-small, too-cold, too-hot country that she hates with a strange, entrapped, and baffled fury. Don't talk like that! she hisses at Tony. She means the accent. Flat, she calls it. But how can Tony talk the same way her mother does? Like the radio, at

noon. The kids at school would laugh.

So Tony is a foreigner, to her own mother; and to her father' also, because, although she talks

the same way he does, she is - and he has made this clear - not a boy. Like a foreigner, she listens

carefully, interpreting. Like a foreigner she keeps an eye out for sudden hostile gestures.

Like a

foreigner she makes mistakes.

Tony sits on the floor, looking at her father and wondering about the war, which is such a mystery to her but which appears to have been decisive in her life. She would like to ask him

about battles, and if she can look at the gun; but she knows already that he will evade these questions, as if there's a sore

place on him that he must protect. A raw place. He will keep her from putting her hand on it.

Sometimes she wonders what he did before the war, but he won't talk about that either. He has told only one story. When he was small he lived on a farm, and his father took him out

into

the woods, in winter. His father intended to chop firewood, but the tree was frozen so hard that

the axe bounced off it and cut into his leg. He threw down the axe and strode away, leaving Griffby himself in the woods. But he followed the footprints home through the snow: a red

one,

a white one, a red one.

If it hadn't been for the war, Griff wouldn't have an education. That's what he says. He would still be on the farm. And then, where would Tony be?

Her father keeps on doing whatever it is he does. He works for an insurance company. Life insurance.

"So, Tony," her father says without looking up. "What can I do for you?"

"Anthea says to tell you supper is almost ready," she says. "Almost ready?" he says. "Or really ready?"

"I don't know," says Tony.

"Then you'd better go and see," says her father.

The supper is sausages, as it often is when Anthea has been out in the afternoon.

Sausages

and boiled potatoes, and greeff beans from a can. The sausages are a little burned, but Tony's

father doesn't say anything about it. He doesn't say anything when the food is really good either.

Anthea says Tony and her father are two of a kind. Two cold fish.

She brings the serving dishes in from the kitchen, and sits down in her own chair still wearing

her apron. Usually she takes it off. "Well!" she says brightly. "And how are we all today?"

"Fine," says Tony's father. "That's good," says her mother.

172

"You look all dolled up," says her father. "Special occasion?" "Not likely, is it?" says her mother.

After that there's a silence, which fills with the sound of chewing. Tony has spent a good deal of her life listening to her parents chew. The noises their mouths make, their teeth grind-

ing together as they bite down, are disconcerting to her. It's like seeing someone taking their

clothes off through a bathroom window when they don't know you're there. Her mother eats nervously, in small bites; her father eats ruminatingly. His eyes are fixed on Anthea as if on a

distant point in space; hers are narrowed a little, as if aiming.

Nothing moves, although great force is being exerted. Nothing moves yet. Tony feels as if there's a thick elastic band stretching right through her own head, with one end of it attached

to each of them: any tighter and it would snap.

"How was the bridge club?" says her father at last. "Fine," says her mother.

"Did you win?"

"No. We came second:" "Who won, then?"

Her mother thinks for a moment. "Rhonda and Bev." "Rhonda was there?" says her father.

"This is not the Spanish Inquisition," says her mother. "I just said she was." - "That's funny," says her father. "I bumped into her, downtown."

"Rhonda left early," says her mother. She sets her fork down carefully on her plate.

"That's not what she told me," says her father.

Her mother pushes back her chair and stands up. She crumples her paper napkin and throws it on top of the sausage ends on her plate. "I refuse to discuss this in front of Tony," she says.

"Discuss what?" says Tony's father. He keeps on chewing. "Tony, you are excused:"

173

"Stay where you are," says Anthea. "That you called me a liar." Her voice is low and quivering,

as if she's about to cry. "Did I?" says Tony's father. He sounds bemused, and curious about the

answer.

"Antonia," says her mother warningly, as if Tony has been about to do something wrong or dangerous. "Couldn't you have waited until after dessert? I try every day to get her to eat a decent

meal:"

"That's right, make this my fault," says Tony's father.

The dessert is rice pudding. It stays in the fridge, because Tony says she doesn't want any. She

doesn't, she isn't hungry. She goes up to her bedroom and climbs into her flannelettesheeted bed,

and tries not to hear or imagine what they are saying to each other.

Bulc egdirb, she murmurs to herself in the darkness. The barbarians gallop across the

plains. At

their head rides Tnomerf Ynot, her long ragged hair flying in the wind, a sword in each of her hands. Bulc egdirb! she calls, urging them forward. It's a battle cry, and they are on the rampage.

They are sweeping all before them, trampling down crops and burning villages. They loot and

plunder and smash pianos, and kill children. At night they put up their tents and eat supper with

their hands, whole cows roasted on bonfires. They wipe their greasy fingers on their leather clothes. They have no manners at all.

Tnomerf Ynot herself drinks from a skull, with silver handles attached where the ears used to be. She raises the skull high in a toast to victory, and to the war god of the barbarians:

Ettovag!

she yells, and the hordes answer, cheering: Ettovag! Ettovag!

In the morning there will be broken glass.

Tony wakes up suddenly in the middle of the night. She gets out of bed, gropes under her night-

table until she finds her rabbit-shaped slippers, and tiptoes across the room to the door. It opens

easily.

174

She creeps along the hallway to her parents' room, but their door is closed and she can't hear anything. Maybe they are in there, maybe not. Though most likely they are. When she was younger she used to worry - or was it a dream? - that she would come home from school

and find only a hole in the ground, and their shoes with feet in them.

She continues to the stairs and goes down them, guiding herself with one hand on the banister. She often gets up like this in the middle of the night; she often makes the rounds, checking for damage.

She gropes her way through the blurry darkness of the hushed living room. Items gleam here and there in the dull glow from the streetlights outside: the mirror over the fireplace, the two china dogs on the mantelpiece. Her eyes feel huge, her slippered feet are soundless on the carpet.

She doesn't turn on a light until she gets to the kitchen. There's nothing on the counter or on the floor, nothing broken. She opens the refrigerator door: the rice pudding is in there but it's intact, so she can't eat any of it without detection. She makes herself a piece of bread and

jam instead. Anthea says that Canadian bread is a disgrace, all air and sawdust, but it tastes fine

to Tony. The bread is like many of Anthea's hatreds - Tony doesn't get the point. Why is the country too big, or too small? What would "just right" be? What's wrong with the way she talks, anyways? Anyway. She wipes the crumbs up carefully, and goes back to bed.

When she gets up the next morning she doesn't have a chance to make a pot of tea - her one

possible atonement to Anthea for failing to be English - because Anthea is already in the kitchen, cooking breakfast. She has on her daily apron, blue and white checks; she's frying things at the stove. (This is a sporadic activity, for her. Tony often makes her own breakfast, and her own brown-bag school lunch as well.)

175

Tony slides herself across the padded seat of the breakfast nook. Her father is already in there, reading the paper. Tony pours herself some cold cereal and spoons it into her mouth, with

her left hand because nobody's watching. With her right hand she holds the cereal box close

to
her eyes. Sekalf narb. Ytiraluger, Tony whispers to herself. They never come right out and say
"constipation." Noitapitsnoc: a much more satisfactory word.
She has a collection of palindromes - Live evil, Madam I'm Adam, Able was I ere I saw Elba
- but
the phrases she prefers are different backwards: skewed, odd, melodious. They belong to
another
world, where Tony is at home because she can speak the language. Re~fo eerfl Evas! Faol
tun
egnaro! Two barbarians stand on a narrow bridge, hurling insults, daring their enemies to
cross ...
"Tony, put that down," says her father tonelessly. "You shouldn't read at the table." He says
this every morning, once he's finished with the paper.
Anthea comes with two full plates, bacon and eggs and toast, setting them down formally as
if
it's a restaurant. Tony cuts her egg open and watches the yolk run like yellow glue into her
toast.
Then she watches her father's Adam's apple go up and down while he swallows his coffee.
It's
like something stuck in his throat. Madam I'm Adam's apple. _
Anthea has a bright enamelled cheerfulness this morning that makes her seem covered
with
nail polish. She scrapes the cereal bowls into the garbage can, singing: "Pack up your
troubles in
your old kit bag, and smile, smile, smile . . ."
"You should have been on stage," says Tony's father.
"Yes, I should have, shouldn't I?" says her mother. Her voice is airy and careless. '
There's been nothing out of place, nothing obvious; nevertheless, when Tony comes home
from
school that afternoon, her
176
mother isn't there. She isn't just out, she's gone. She's left a wrapped package for Tony, on
her
bed, and a note in an envelope. As soon as Tony sees the note and the package she turns
cold
all over. She's frightened, but somehow she is not surprised.
The note is in the brown ink Anthea favours, on her initialled cream-coloured notepaper. In
her curling handwriting with its florid capital letters she has written:
Darling, you know I would like to take you with me but I can't right now. When you are
older you will understand why. Be a good girl and do well in school. I will write you lots.
Your Mother who loves you very much.
P S. See you soon!
(Tony kept this note, and marvelled over it later, when she was grown up. As an explanation
it
was of course inadequate. Also, nothing in it was true. To begin with, Tony was not darling.
The
only people who were darling, for Anthea, were men, and sometimes women if she was
annoyed with them. She didn't want to take Tony with her: if she'd wanted to she would have
done it, because she mostly did what she wanted. She didn't write Tony lots, she didn't love
her
very much, and she didn't see her soon. And although Tony did get older, she did nzst
understand why.)

At the moment of finding this note, however, Tony wants to believe every word of it, and by an effort of will she does. She even manages to believe more than is there. She believes her

mother will send for her, or else come back. She isn't sure which.

She opens the package; it's the same package Anthea was carrying yesterday, in the drizzle,

on her way back from the bridge club, which means that all of this was planned out in advance.

It isn't like the times she rushed out of the house,

177

slamming the door, or locked herself in the bathroom and turned on the taps so that the tub overflowed out into the hall and down the stairs and through the ceiling, and Griff had to call the Fire Department to break in. It isn't a tantrum, or a whim.

Inside the package is a box, and inside the box there's a dress. It's navy blue, with a sailor collar piped in white. Since there's nothing else she can think of to do, Tony tries it on. It's two

sizes too big for her. It looks like a dressing gown.

Tony sits down on the floor and pulls up her knees, and pushes her nose into the skirt of the dress, inhaling its smell, a rough chemical smell of broadcloth and sizing. The smell of newness, the smell of futility, the smell of noiseless grief.

All of this is her own fault, somehow. She hasn't made enough cups of tea, she's misread the signals, she has let go of the string or the rope or the chain or whatever it is that's been attaching her mother to this house, holding her in place, and like an escaped sailboat or a balloon her mother has come loose. She's out in the blue, she's blowing away with the wind. She's lost.

This is the story Tony tells to Zenia, as they sit in Christie's Coffee Shop, their heads leaning

together across the table, drinking harsh acidic coffee in the dead of night. It seems a bleak story, as she tells it - starker and more dire than when it was actually happening to her.

Possibly

because she believes it, by now. Back then it seemed temporary - her motherlessness. Now she

knows it was permanent.

"So she buggered off, just like that! Where'd she go?" says Zenia, with interest.

178

Tony sighs. "She ran off with a man. A life insurance man, from my father's office. His name was Perry. He was married to some-one called Rhonda, from my mother's bridge club.

They went to California."

"Good choice," says Zenia, laughing. In Tony's opinion it was not a good choice. It was a lapse of taste, and of consistency as well: if Anthea had to go anywhere, why didn't she go to

England, home as she always called it? Why go to California, where the bread is even airier, the

accent even flatter, the grammar even more spurious, than it is here?

So Tony doesn't think it's all that funny, and Zenia catches this reservation and changes her face immediately. "Weren't you furious?"

"No," says Tony. "I don't think so." She searches through herself, patting surfaces, testing pockets. She doesn't discover any fury.

"I would have been," says Zenia. "I would have been enraged:"

Tony isn't sure what it would be like, to be enraged. Possibly too dangerous. Or else a relief. No rage at the time: only a cold panic, a desolation; and fear, because of what her father would

do, or say: would she be blamed?

Tony's father wasn't yet back from work. There was nobody else in the house, nobody but Ethel, mopping the floor in the kitchen. Anthea asked her to stay late on the afternoons when

she went out so someone would be there when Tony came home from school.

Ethel was a craggy big-boned woman with lines on her face like those on other people's hands, and dry, wig-like hair. She had six children. Only four of them were still alive - diphtheria had killed the others - but if you asked her how many children she had, she would say six: Anthea used to tell this as if it were

179

a joke, as if Ethel couldn't count properly. Ethel had a habit of groaning as she worked, and talking to herself words that sounded like "Oh no, oh no," and "Pisspisspiss." As a rule Tony kept out of her way.

Tony went into her parents' bedroom and opened her mother's closet door. Aroma wafted out: there were little satin bags of lavender tied with mauve ribbons on every hanger. Most of

Anthea's suits and dresses were still in there, with the matching shoes in their shoe-trees ranged

beneath them. They were like hostages, these clothes. Anthea would never just leave them behind, not forever. She would have to come back and retrieve them.

Ethel was coning up the stairs; Tony could hear her grunting and mumbling. Now she, had reached the bedroom door, dragging the vacuum cleaner by its hose. She stood still and looked

at Tony.

"Your mother's run away," she said. She talked in regular language when anyone else was there.

Tony could hear the scorn in Ethel's voice. Dogs ran away, cats, horses. Mothers did not. Here Tony's memory divides, into what she wanted to happen and what actually did happen.

What she wanted was for Ethel to take her in her knobby arms, and stroke her hair and rock

her, and tell her that everything would be all right. Ethel, who had bulgy blue veins on her legs,

who smelled of sweat and javex, whom she didn't even like! But who might have been capable

of providing comfort, of a sort.

What actually did happen was nothing. Ethel turned back to the vacuuming, and Tony went into her own room and shut the door and took off the baggy sailor dress and folded it, and put

it back into its box.

After a while Tony's father came home and spoke with Ethel in the front hall, and then Ethel went away and Tony and her

180

father had supper. The supper was a tin of tomato soup; her father warmed it up in a saucepan,

and Tony put some crackers and cheddar cheese on a plate. Both of them felt at a loss, as if

there were gaps in this meal that could not be filled in because they could not be identified. What had happened was so momentous, and so unheard of, that it could not yet be mentioned.

Tony's father ate in silence. The little slurping noises he made scratched against Tony's skin.

He was looking at Tony slyly, in a speculative way; Tony had seen the same expression on

door-to-door salesmen, and on street beggars, and on other children who were about to tell outrageous and transparent lies. The two of them were in a conspiracy now, his look implied:

they were going to gang up, have secrets together. Secrets about Anthea, of course. Who else?

Although Anthea was gone, she was still there, sitting at the table with them. She was there more than ever.

After a while Tony's father put down his spoon; it clanked against the plate.

"We'll make out fine," he said. "Won't we?"

Tony was not convinced of this, but she felt under pressure to reassure him. "Yes," she said.

Tomato, she whispered to herself. Otamot. One of the Great Lakes. A stone war hammer used by an ancient tribe. If you said a word backwards, the meaning emptied out and then the

word was vacant. Ready for a new meaning to flow in. Anthea. Aehtna. Like dead, it was almost

the same thing, backwards or forwards.

And then what, and then what? Zenia wants to know. But Tony is at a loss: how can she describe

emptiness? Acres of vacancy, which Tony filled up with whatever she could, with knowledge,

with dates and facts, more and more of them, pouring them into her head to silence the echoes. Because whatever had

been lacking when Anthea was there, it was much worse now that she wasn't.

Anthea was her own absence. She hovered just out of reach, a tantalizing wraith, an almost, endowed with a sort of gauzy flesh by Tony's longing for her. If only she loved Tony more, she

would be here. Or Tony would be elsewhere, with her, wherever she was.

Anthea wrote, of course. She sent a postcard with a picture of palm trees and surf, and said that she wished Tony was there. She sent packages for Tony with clothes in them that never fit:

sun suits, shorts, hot-weather dresses, too big or sometimes - after a while - too small. She sent

birthday cards, late. She sent snapshots taken always, it seemed, in full sunlight; snapshots of

herself wearing white, in which she looked fatter than Tony remembered, her face tanned and

shining as if oiled, with a little moustache of shadow cast by her nose. In some of these, runaway,

culpable Perry stood beside her with his arm around her waist: a flabby man with wrinkled knees

and bags under his eyes and a lopsided, rueful smile. Then after a while Perry was no longer in

the pictures, and another man was; and after a while, yet another. The shoulders on Tony's mother's dresses shrank, the skirts grew longer and fuller, the necklines scooped themselves out;

Spanish-dancer ruffles appeared on the sleeves. There was talk of Tony visiting, during Easter

holidays, during summer holidays, but nothing ever came of it.

(As for Anthea's other clothes, the ones she'd left behind in her closet, Tony's father had Ethel pack them into boxes and give them away to the Salvation Army. He did not warn Tony in

advance. She was in the habit of checking the closet every few days, when she came back

from

school, and one day it was empty. Tony said nothing about it, but she knew. Anthea would not

be coming back.)

Meanwhile the years became other years. At school, Tony was diagnosed as near-sighted and

was supplied with glasses,

182

which she did not particularly mind. They were a sort of barrier, and also she could now see the blackboard. For dinner she ate casseroles prepared in advance by Ethel and left on

the kitchen counter to be warmed up. She made her own school lunches as usual; also she made caramel puddings out of a package and cakes from cake mixes, to impress her father, though they failed to have this result.

Her father gave her twenty-dollar bills for Christmas and told her to buy her own presents. She made him cups of tea, which he did not drink, any more than her mother had. He was frequently not there. During one of these years there was a girlfriend, a secretary from his company, who wore jangly bracelets and smelled of violets and warm rubber, who gushed over Tony and said she was cute as a button, and wanted to take her shopping or else to movies. Girl stuff, she called it. We won't take big old Griff! I want us to be chums. Tony despised her.

After the girlfriend was finished with, Griff began drinking more than ever. He would come into Tony's room and sit there watching her while she did her homework, as if he wanted her to say something to him. But by this time she was older and more hardened, and she expected nothing much from him. She had ceased to consider him her responsibility; she found him simply an irritating interruption. He was much less interesting than the siege techniques of Julius Caesar, which she was study'ing in Latin. Her father's suffering wore her out: it was too flat, it was too wordless, it was too powerless, it was too much like her own.

Once or twice, when he was drunker than usual, he chased her through the house, stumbling and shouting, overturning furniture. At other times he would become affectionate: he wanted to tousle her hair, to hug her as if she were still a child, though he had never behaved like that when she really was one. She would crawl underneath the dining-room table to escape from him: she was a lot smaller than he was, but she was also

a

183

lot more agile. The worst thing about these episodes was that he seemed to remember nothing

about them the next day. Tony took to avoiding him when possible. During the course of the evening she would monitor his level of drunkenness - she could tell by the smell partly, of sugary varnish - and plan her exit routes: into the bathroom, out the kitchen door, into her bedroom. The main thing was not to be cornered. Her bedroom had a lock, but she would also

push her bureau in front of the door, taking all the drawers out first and then putting them back when the bureau was in place; otherwise it would have been too heavy for her. Then she

would sit with her back against the bureau and her book open on her knees, trying to block out

the sound of the knob turning, and of the muffled, broken voice, snuffling at her door: I just want to talk to you! That's all! I just want ...

Once she tried an experiment: she poured out all the liquor from his bottles so there was none when he came home from work - he had changed jobs, he had changed jobs again - and

he threw all the wineglasses, all the glasses of every kind, against the kitchen wall, and there

was a lot of broken glass in the morning. Tony was interested to note that this evidence of chaos no longer frightened her. She used to think that Anthea was the glass-breaker of the family; maybe she had been, once. They had to drink their orange juice out of teacups for a week; until Ethel could buy new glassware.

When Tony got her first period, it was Ethel who dealt with it. It was Ethel who explained that bloodstains would come out easier if you soaked them first in cold water. She was an authority on stains of all kinds. "It's only the curse," she said, and Tony liked that. It was a curse, but it was only a curse. Pain and distress were of scant importance, really. They could be

ignored.

Tony's mother died by drowning. She dove off a yacht, at night, somewhere off the coast of Baja California, and didn't come

184

back up: She must have become confused underwater, and surfaced in the wrong place and hit

her head on the bottom of the boat and knocked herself out. Or this was the story told by Roger, the man she was with at the time. Roger was very sorry about it, in the way you would

be if you'd lost someone's car keys or broken their best china plate. He sounded as if he wanted to buy a replacement but wasn't sure how. He also sounded drunk.

Tony was the one who took the phone call, because neither her father nor Ethel was there. Roger didn't seem to know who she was.

"I'm the daughter," she said.

"Who?" said Roger. "She didn't have any daughter." "What was she wearing?" said

Tony.

"What?" said Roger.

"Was she wearing a bathing suit, or a dress?"

"What kind of a dumb question is that?" said Roger. He was shouting by then, long distance.

Tony couldn't see why he should be angry. She just wanted to reconstruct. Had Anthea dived off the boat in her bathing suit for a midnight swim, or had she jumped off, wearing a long, entangling skirt, in a fit of anger? The equivalent of a slammed door? The latter seemed

more probable. Or perhaps Roger had pushed her. This too was not out of the question:

Tony

was not interested in revenge, or even injustice. Merely in accuracy.

Despite his rambling vagueness, it was Roger who arranged for the cremation and shipped back the ashes in a metal cylinder. Tony thought there should be a service of some kind; but then, who would have gone to it except her?

Shortly after its arrival the cylinder disappeared. She found it again several years later, after her father had died too and she and Ethel were cleaning out the house. It was in the cellar, stuck in among some old tennis racquets. This gave it the

185

proper period flavour: many of her mother's snapshots had shown her in a tennis dress.

After her mother died Tony went to boarding school, by her own request. She'd wanted to get out of the house, which she did not think of as home, where her father lurked and drank and followed her around, clearing his throat as if he was about to start a conversation. She didn't want to hear what he had to say. She knew it would be some kind of excuse, a plea for

understanding, something maudlin. Or else an accusation: if it weren't for Tony he never would have married her mother, and if it weren't for him, Tony never would have been born.

Tony had been the catastrophe in his life. It was for Tony he had sacrificed - what, exactly? Even he didn't seem to know. But all the same, didn't she owe him something?

From piecing things together, from checking dates, from a few stray comments dropped earlier, Tony had come to suspect something of the sort: a pregnancy, a hasty wartime marriage. Her mother was a war bride, her father was a war husband, she herself was a war

baby. She was an accident. So what? She didn't want to hear about it.

Whatever he wanted to say to her remained unsaid. It was Ethel who found him, lying on the floor of his still-neat study, with his sharpened pencils lined up on the desk. He said in the note that Tony's high school graduation was all he'd been waiting for. He'd even come to the ceremony, that afternoon, and had sat in the auditorium with the other parents, and had given

Tony a gold wristwatch afterwards. He kissed her on the cheek. "You'll do all right," he told her. After that he went home and shot himself in the head with his liberated gun. A Luger pistol, as Tony knows now, since she inherited it. He put newspapers down first because of the

rug.

Ethel said that was what he was like: considerate, a gentleman. She cried at the funeral, unlike Tony, and talked to herself

186

during the prayers. Tony thought at first that she was saying Pisspiss but actually it was Pleaseplease. Maybe it always had been. Maybe she wasn't crying about Griffat all, but about her

two dead children. Or life in general. Tony could consider all possibilities, she had an open mind.

Griff's life insurance was no good, of course. It didn't cover suicide. But Tony had the money from the house, after the mortgage was paid off, and her mother's leftover money, which had been willed to her, and whatever else was in the bank. Maybe that's what her father

meant when he said she would be all right.

So that's it, Tony tells Zenia. And it is, as far as she knows. She doesn't think about her parents very much. She doesn't have nightmares about her father appearing with half of his head blown off, still with something to tell; or of her mother, trailing wet skirts and salt water, her hair hanging over her face like seaweed. She thinks maybe she ought to have such nightmares, but she doesn't. The study of history has steeled her to violent death; she is well armoured.

"You've still got the ashes?" says Zenia. "Your mother's?" "They're on my sweater shelf," says Tony.

"You are a gruesome little creature," says Zenia, laughing. Tony takes it as a compliment: it's the same thing Zenia said when Tony showed her the battle notebooks with the scores of the men lost. "What else have you got? The gun?" But then she turns serious. "You should get rid of those ashes right away! They're bad luck, they'll ill-wish you:"

This is a new side to Zenia: she's superstitious. Tony would not have suspected it, and her high estimate of Zenia, slips a notch. "They're just plain old ashes," she says.

"You know that's not true," says Zenia. "You know it isn't. Keep those, and she'll still have a hold on you."

So the next evening at twilight the two of them take the

187

ferry across to the Island. It's December and there's a bitter wind, but no ice on the lake yet, so

the ferry is still running. Halfway across Tony tosses the canister with her mother's ashes off the back of the ferry, into the dark choppy water. It's not something she'd have done on her

own; it's just to please Zenia.

"Rest in peace," says Zenia. She doesn't sound altogether convinced. Worse, the metal cylinder isn't sinking. It's floating, bobbing along in the wake of the ferry. Tony realizes she should have opened it and dumped out the contents. If she had a rifle she could put a couple

of holes through it. If she could shoot.

~IV

December darkens and darkens, and the streets sprout forth their Christmas tinsel, and the Salvation Army brass band sings hymns and jingles its bells and stirs up its cauldron of money,

and loneliness blows in the snowflurries, and the other girls in McClung Hall set off to join their families, in their homes, their warm homey homes, and Tony stays behind. As she has done before; but this time it's better, this time there's no cold feeling in the pit of her stomach,

because Zenia is there with her heartening sneers. "Christmas is a bitch," says Zenia.

"Screw

Christmas, it is so bourgeois," and then Tony feels all right again and tells Zenia about the controversy over Christ's birthdate, in the Dark Ages, and how grown men were willing to kill one another over it, over the exact timing of Peace on earth, goodwill towards men, and Zenia

laughs. "Your head is a card file," she says. "Let's eat, I'll make us something." And Tony sits

with contentment at Zenia's kitchen table; watching her measure and blend and stir.

Where is West in all of this? Tony has relinquished him, because how could she ever compete with Zenia? And even if

188

she could compete, she wouldn't think of it. Such a thing would be dishonourable. Zenia is her

friend. Her best friend. Her only friend, come to think of it. Tony has not been in the habit of having friends.

Or it may be otherwise; it may be that there's no room left for West, between the two of them. They're too close together. So there's Zenia and Tony now, and Zenia and West; but no

longer any West and Tony.

Sometimes there are the three of them together. Tony goes with Zenia and West to their place, the new one they moved into after painting their old one black. The new place isn't new,

but dingy and cheap and falling apart, an over-the-store walk-up east on Queen. This apartment has a long living room with one window, its glass rattled by passing streetcars; a big

raffish kitchen, with tattered orange wallpaper and a table, a wooden one with cracked blue paint, and four mismatched chairs; and a bedroom, where Zenia and West sleep together on a

mattress on the floor.

Zenia makes them scrambled eggs, and strong, amazing coffee and West plays his lute for them: he does have one, after all. He sits on a cushion on the floor, his long legs bent at the knees and sticking up like the back legs of a grasshopper, and fingers deftly, and sings old ballads.

The water is wide, I cannot get over, And neither have I wings to fly, Build me a boat that can carry two, And both shall row, my love and I,

he sings. "There's an Irish version too," he adds, "with a boatman.

Really he is singing for Zenia, not for Tony at all. He is deeply in love with Zenia; Zenia has told Tony this, and indeed it's obvious. Zenia must feel the same way about West, because

189

she praises him, she extols him, she strokes him with her eyes. He is such a gentle man, she's told Tony during their coffee talks; so thoughtful, unlike most men, who are slobbering brutes.

He values her for the right reasons. He worships her! She is very fortunate to have found such a sweet man. Of course he's great in the sack as well.

The sack? thinks Tony. What is the sack? It takes her a minute. She has never been in the presence, before, of two people who are in love with each other. She feels like a stray child, ragged and cold, with her nose pressed to a lighted window. A toy-store window, a bakery window, with fancy cakes and decorated cookies. Poverty prevents her entrance. These things

are for other people; nothing for her.

But Zenia seems to be aware of this, too - of Tony's singleness, her forlorn wistfulness - and smooths it over. She's very considerate. She distracts, she acts, She talks gaily of other things.

Recipes, shortcuts, wrinkles, and twists: she hasn't lived from hand to mouth for nothing, she has a full supply of useful knacks. The secret of the scrambled eggs, for instance, is the fresh

chervil and chives - she has several pots of herbs growing on the windowsill - and a little water

added, and not too high a flame; the secret of the coffee is the coffee grinder, a wooden one

with a handle and an enchanting pull-out drawer.

Zenia is full of secrets. She laughs, she throws her secrets casually this way and that, her teeth flashing white; she pulls more secrets out of her sleeves and unfurls them from behind her back, she unrolls them like bolts of rare cloth, displaying them, whirling them like gypsy scarves, flourishing them like banners, heaping them one on top of another in a glittering, prodigal tangle. When she's in the room, who can look at anything else?

But Tony and West do look - just for a moment - when Zenia has her back turned. They look sadly at each other, a

190

little shamefaced. In thrall, is what they are. They know they can no longer drink beer together

calmly in the afternoons. It is Zenia, now, who borrows Tony's Modern History notes. West gets the benefit of them too, of course, but only secondhand:

Once Tony forgot to sign out of McClung Hall and then stayed at Zenia's too late. She ended up spending the night on Zenia's living-room floor, rolled in a blanket, on top of Zenia's

coat and her own coat and West's. In the morning, very early, West went back with her to McClung Hall and gave her a boost onto the bottom platform of the fire escape, which was too high for her to reach otherwise.

It was a daring thing to do, staying out all night, but she doesn't want to do it again. For one thing it was too humiliating, coming back with West on the streetcar and then the subway,

unable to think of what she should be saying to him, then being lifted up by him and deposited

on the fire escape platform like a parcel. For another thing, sleeping outside the bedroom with

both of them inside it made her too unhappy.

She didn't sleep, anyway. She couldn't, because of the sounds. Thick sounds, unknown sounds, deep sounds, haircovered and snouted and root-like, muddy and hot and watery

sounds from underneath the earth.

"I think your mother was a romantic," says Zenia, out of nowhere. She is mixing batter for the langues de chat she's making; Tony is sitting at the table copying out her own history notes for

Zenia, who as usual is short of time. "I think she was in search of the perfect man."

"I don't think so," says Tony. She's a little taken aback: she thought the file on her mother was closed.

"She sounds fun-loving," says Zenia. "She sounds full of life."

Tony can't quite understand why Zenia wants to excuse her mother. She herself has not done so, she realizes now. "She liked parties," she says briefly.

"I bet she tried to have an abortion, and it didn't work out," says Zenia cheerfully.

"Before she married your father. I bet she filled the bathtub up with boiling water and drank a lot of gin. That's what they used to do."

This is a darker view of her mother than Tony herself has ever taken. "Oh, no," she murmurs. "She wouldn't have done that!" Though it could be true. Maybe that's why Tony is so small. Neither of her parents was particularly diminutive. Maybe her growth got stunted by the gin. But then, wouldn't she be an idiot as well?

Zenia fills the shallow moulds and slides them into the oven. "The war was a strange time," she says. "Everybody screwed everybody, they just cut loose! The men thought they were going to die, and the women thought that too. People couldn't get used to being normal again, afterwards."

Wars are Tony's territory. She knows all this, she has read about it. Plagues have the same effect: a panic, a hothouse forcing, a sort of greedy hysteria. But it seems unfair that such conditions should have applied to her own parents. They should have been exempt. (Her father, the Christmas after her mother ran away, standing in the middle of the living room with an armful of glass ornaments, standing there in front of the- naked Christmas tree as if paralyzed, not knowing what to do. Herself going for the stepladder, taking the ornaments gently from his hands. Here. I can hang them on! He would have thrown them, otherwise. Thrown them against the wall. Sometimes he would pause that way, in the middle of doing a simple thing, as if he'd gone blind or lost his memory. Or suddenly regained it. He was living in two times at once: hanging the Christmas tree ornaments, and blowing holes in enemy children. So no wonder, thinks Tony. Despite his increasingly drunken and fragmented and, yes, violent and frightening later years, she has

192

more or less forgiven him. And if Anthea hadn't run away, would he have ended up on the floor, with his blood soaking into the morning paper? Not likely.)

"She abandoned me," says Tony.

"My own mother sold me," says Zenia, with a sigh. "Sold you?" says Tony.

"Well, rented me out," says Zenia. "For money. We had to eat. We were refugees. She'd made it as far as Poland before the war but she'd seen what was coming; she got out somehow,

bribery or something, forged passports, or else she went down for a bunch of train guards, who knows? Anyway, she made it as far as Paris; that's where I grew up. People were eating

garbage then, they were eating cats! What could she do? She couldn't get a job, God knows she

didn't have any skills! She had to have money somehow"

"Rented you to who?" says Tony.

"Men," says Zenia. "Oh, not out on the street! Not just anyone! Old generals and whatnot.

She was a White Russian; I guess the family had money, once - back in Russia, I suppose.

She

claimed to be some sort of a countess, though God knows Russian countesses were a

dime a

dozen. There was a whole bunch of White Russians in Paris; they'd been there since the revolution. She liked to say she was used to good things, though I don't know when that would have been."

Tony hasn't known this - that Zenia's mother was Russian. She has only known Zenia's story of recent years: her foreground. Her life at the university, her life with West, and with the

man before him and the one before that. Brutes, both of them, who wore leather jackets and drank; and hit her.

She examines the cast of Zenia's high cheekbones: Slavic, she supposes. Then there's her slight accent, her air of scornful superiority, her touch of superstition. The Russians go in for icons and so forth. It all makes sense.

"Rented?" she says. "But how old were you?"

193

"Who knows?" says Zenia. "It must've started when I was five, six, earlier maybe. Really I can't remember. I can't remember a time when I didn't have some man's hand in my pants." Tony's mouth opens. "Five?" she says. She is horrified. At the same time she admires Zenia's candour. Zenia doesn't seem to get embarrassed by anything. Unlike Tony, she is not

a prude.

Zenia laughs. "Oh, it wasn't obvious, at first," she says. "It was all very polite! They would come over and sit on the sofa - God, she was proud of that sofa. she kept a silk shawl

draped over it, embroidered with roses - and she would tell me to sit beside the nice man, and after a while she'd just go out of the room. It wasn't real sex, at first. Just a lot of feeling up. Sticky fingers. She saved the big bang till I was what she called grown up. Eleven, twelve ... I think she did fairly well on that one, though not many of those men were filthy rich. Penny-pinching shabby genteel, with a little put by, or some shady trade. They were all in the black market, they all had an angle, they lived in between the walls, you know? Like rats. She bought me a new dress for the occasion, on the black market too, I guess. I made my debut on the sittingroom rug - she never let them use the bed. His name was Major Popov, if you can believe it, just like something out of Dostoevsky, with brown crusts up his nose from taking snuff:He didn't even take off his pants, he was in such a hurry. I stared at those embroidered roses on the fucking shawl the whole time. I offered up the pain to God. It isn't as though I was sinning for fun! I was very religious, at the time; Orthodox, of course. They still have the best churches, don't you think? I hope she got a hefty slice out of old Popov. Some men will give up a lot of lunches, for a virgin:'

Zenia tells this story as if it's a piece of casual gossip, and Tony listens, electrified. She has never heard of such a thing. Correction: she has heard of such things, more or less, but she

194

has heard of them only in books. Such baroque, such complicated European things don't happen to real people, or to people she might meet. But how would she know? These activities

might be going on all around her, but she doesn't see them because she wouldn't know where

to look. Zenia would know. Zenia is older than Tony, in years not so much, but in other ways a

lot. Beside Zenia, Tony is a child, ignorant as an egg. "You must have hated her," says Tony. "Oh, no," says Zenia seriously. "That wasn't until later. She was very nice to me! When I was little she made me special meals. She never raised her voice. She was beautiful to look at,

she had long dark hair braided and wound around her head like a saint, and big sorrowful eyes.

I used to sleep with her in her big white feather bed. I loved her, I adored her, I would have done anything for her! I didn't want her to be so sad. That's how she was able to get away with it."

"How terrible," says Tony.

"Oh well," says Zenia, "who gives a shit? Anyway it wasn't only me - she rented herself out, too. She was a sort of bargainbasement mistress, I suppose. For gentlemen down on their luck.

Only Russians though, and nobody below the rank of major. She had her standards. She helped them with their pretensions, they helped her with hers. But she wasn't very successful at

the sex part, maybe because she didn't really like it. She preferred suffering. There was quite a

turnover of men. Also she was sick a lot of the time. Coughing, just like an opera! Blood in the

hankie. Her breath smelled worse and worse, she used to wear a lot of perfume, when she could get it. I suppose it was TB, and that's what killed her. What a corny death!"

"You were very lucky not to get it yourself," says Tony. All of this seems so archaic. Surely nobody gets TB any more. It's a vanished illness, like smallpox.

"Yes, wasn't I?" says Zenia. "But I was long gone by the time

195

she finally croaked. As I got older I didn't love her any more. I did most of the work, she kept most of the money, and that was hardly fair! And I couldn't stand listening to her coughing, and

crying to herself at night. She was so hopeless; I think she was stupid, as well. So I ran away. It

was a mean thing to do, I suppose; she didn't have anybody by that time, any man; only me. But

it was her or me. I had to choose.'

"What about your father?" says Tony. Zenia laughs. "What father?"

"Well, you must have had one," says Tony.

"I did better," says Zenia. "I had three! My mother had several versions - minor Greek royalty, a general in the Polish cavalry, an Englishman of good family. She had a photograph of

him, just the one man - but three stories. The story about him changed, depending on how she

felt; though in all three. of the stories he died in the war. She used to show me where, on the map: a different place, a different death for each. Charging the German tanks on horseback,

behind the French lines in a parachute, machine-gunned in a palace. When she could afford it she

would put a single rose in front of the picture; sometimes she would light a candle. God knows

whose photo it was really! A young man in a jacket, with a knapsack, sort of blurry, looking over

his shoulder; not even in uniform. Pre-war. Maybe she bought it. Myself, I think she got raped,

by a bunch of soldiers or something, but she didn't want to tell me. It would've been too much -

for me to discover that my father was someone like that. But it would figure, wouldn't it? A woman with no money, on the run from one place to another, by herself - no protection.

Women like that were fair game! Or else she had a Nazi lover, some German thug. Who can tell?

She was quite a liar, so I'll never know. Anyway, she's dead now"

Tony's own little history has dwindled considerably. Beside Zenia's, it seems no more than an

incident, minor, grey, suburban; a sedate parochial anecdote; a footnote. Whereas Zenia's
196

life sparkles - no, it glares, in the lurid although uncertain light cast by large and portentous world

events. (White Russians!) So far Tony has seen Zenia as very different from herself, but now she

sees her as similar too, for aren't they both orphans? Both motherless, both war babies, making

their way in the world by themselves, trudging onwards with their baskets over their arms, baskets containing their scant, their only worldly possessions - one brain apiece, for what else do

they have to rely on? She admires Zenia tremendously, not least for keeping her cool. Right now,

for instance, when other women might be crying, Zenia is actually srruling - smiling at Tony, with

perhaps a hint of mockery, which Tony chooses to interpret as a touching gallantry, a steely courage in the face of adverse destiny. Zenia has been through horrors, and has emerged victorious. Tony pictures her on a horse, cloak flying, sword-arm raised; or as a bird, a silver and

miraculous bird, rising triumphant and unscathed from the cinders of burning and plundered Europe.

"There's one thing about being an orphan, though," says Zenia thoughtfully. Two jets of smoke come out of her perfect nostrils. "You don't have to live up to anyone else's good opin-

ion of you." She drinks the dregs of her coffee, butts out her cigarette. "You can be whoever you like."

Tony looks at her, looks into her blue-black eyes, and sees her own reflection: herself, as she

would like to be. Tnomerf Ynot. Herself turned inside out.

NT -V%r XXX

Under the circumstances, what can Tony withhold? Not very much.

Certainly not money. Zenia has to eat - Zenia, and West too, of course - and how are they to do that unless Tony,

197

replete with the wealth of the dead, will lend Zenia the odd twenty, the odd fifty, the odd hundred, from time to time? And then how is Zenia to pay it back, things being what they are? She has a scholarship of some kind, or so she has implied, but it doesn't cover the whole

shot. In the distant past she panhandled and to a certain extent hooked her way through Europe and across the ocean; although - she tells Tony, as Tony's eyes widen and blink - she'd much rather roll a nice middle-class drunk any time, it's quicker and a good deal cleaner.

In the more recent past she's made extra cash by waiting on tables and by cleaning washrooms in second-rate hotels - drudgery is the price of virtue - but when she does that she's too tired to study.

She's too tired anyway. Love takes it out of you, and lovenests require feathering, and who does the cooking and laundry and cleaning up around Zenia's place? Not West, poor angel; man-like, he has trouble cooking an egg or making himself a cup of tea. (Ah, thinks Tony, I

could make his tea! She longs for such simple domestic chores, to offer up to West. But she
censors this almost immediately. Even the boiling of West's tea-water would feel like a betrayal of Zenia.)

Also, Zenia indicates, it costs to defy the social order: freedom is not free, it comes with a price. The front lines of liberation get the first bullets. Already Zenia and West are—paying more than they should for that rat-bag of an apartment because the dirty-minded hypocrite of

a landlord has come to suspect they aren't married. Toronto is so puritanical!

Then how can Tony refuse when Zenia comes to her room one evening, in tears and minus a term paper for Modern History, with barely a moment to spare? "If I flunk this course it's game over," she says. "I'll have to leave university, it's back on the streets for me. Shit, you don't know, Tony - you just don't know! It's such hell, it's so degrading, i can't go back to that! "

198

Tony is bewildered by her tears; she has thought of Zenia as tearless, more tearless even than herself. And now there are not only tears but many tears, rolling fluently down Zenia's strangely immobile face, which always looks made-up even when it isn't. On some other woman the mascara would run; but that isn't mascara, it's Zenia's real eyelashes.

It ends with Tony writing two term papers, one for herself and one for Zenia. She does this nervously: she knows it's highly risky. She's stepping over a line, a line she respects. But Zenia

is doing Tony's rebelliousness for her so it's only fair that Tony should write Zenia's term paper. Or that is the equation Tony makes, at some level below words. Tony will be Zenia's right hand, because Zenia is certainly Tony's left one.

Neither of the term papers is about battles. The Modern History professor, bald-headed, squinty-eyed, leatherelbow-patched Dr. Welch, is more interested in economics than he is in

bloodshed, and he has made it clear to Tony - who suggested the out-of-control sack of Constantinople by the Crusaders - that he does not consider war an appropriate subject for girls. So both of the papers are about money. Zenia's is on the Slavic slave trade with the Byzantine Empire - Tony picked this because of Zenia's Russian ancestors - and Tony's is about the tenth-century Byzantine silk monopoly. .

Byzantium interests Tony. A lot of people died unpleasantly there, most of them for trivial reasons; you could be torn in pieces for dressing wrong, you could be disembowelled for smirking. Twenty-nine Byzantine emperors were assassinated by their rivals. Blinding was a

favourite method; that, and jointby-joint dismemberment, and slow starvation.

If the professor hadn't been so squeamish Tony would have chosen to write about the assassination of the Byzantine emperor Nicephorus Phocas by his beautiful wife, the empress

Theophano. Theophano started life as a concubine and worked

199

her way to the top: When her autocratic husband became too old and ugly for her she had him killed. Not only that, she helped to do it. On December 1, 969, she persuaded him to leave his bedroom door unlocked, promising sexual favours, no doubt, and in the middle of the night she entered his room with her younger, better-looking lover, John Tsimisces - who would later have her imprisoned in a convent - and a band of mercenaries. They woke Nicephorus up - he was sleeping on a panther skin, a nice touch - and then John Tsimisces split his head open with a sword. John was laughing.

How do we know that? thinks Tony. Who was there to record it? Was Theophano laughing, as well? She speculates about why they woke him up. It was a sadistic touch; or perhaps it was revenge. By all accounts Nicephorus was a tyrant: proud, capricious, cruel.

She

pictures Theophano on her way to the assassination, with a purple silk mantle thrown over her shoulders and gold sandals. Her dark hair swirls around her head; her pale face shines in

the torchlight. She walks first, and quickly, because the most important element in any act of treachery is surprise. Behind her come the men with swords.

Theophano is smiling, but Tony doesn't see it as a sinister smile. Instead it's gleeful: the smile of a child about to put its hands over someone's eyes from behind. Guess who? -

There's an element of sheer mischief in history, thinks Tony. Perverse joy.

Outrageousness for its own sake. What is an ambush, really, but a kind of military practical joke? Hiding yourself, then jumping out and yelling Surprise! But none of the historians ever mentions it, this quality of giddy hide-and-seek. They want the past to be serious. Dead serious. She muses over the phrase: if dead is serious, is alive then frivolous? So the phrasemakers would have it.

Maybe Theophano woke up Nicephorus because she wanted him to appreciate her cleverness before he died. She

200

wanted him to see how duplicitous she was, and how mistaken he had been about her. She wanted him to get the joke.

Both of the papers are up to Tony's usual standard; if anything, the silk monopoly one is better.

But Zenia's gets an A and Tony's a mere A minus. Zenia's reputation for brilliance has affected

even Professor Welch, it seems. Or perhaps it's the way she looks. Does Tony mind? Not particularly. But she notices.

She also feels remorseful. Up until now she has always paid the strictest attention to academic

decorum. She never borrows other people's notes, although she lends them; her footnotes are

impeccable; and she is well aware that writing a term paper for someone else is cheating.

But it

isn't as if there's any benefit to herself. Her motives are of the best: how could she turn away her

friend? How could she condemn Zenia to a life of sexual bondage? It isn't in her.

Nevertheless,

her conscience troubles her, so maybe it's justice that she's received a mere A minus. If this is the

only punishment in store for her she'll have gotten off lightly.

Tony composed her two term papers in March, when the snow was melting and the sun was warming up, and the snowdrops were appearing through the mud and old newspapers amid decaying leaves on front lawns, and people were becoming restive inside their winter coats.

Zenia

was becoming restive too. She and Tony no longer spent their evenings drinking coffee at Christie's Coffee Shop on Queen East; they no longer talked intensely, far into what Tony considered the night. Partly Tony didn't have the time, because the final exams were coming up

and her own brilliance was something she had to work at. But also it was as if Zenia had learned

all she needed to know about Tony.

The reverse was far from true: Tony was still curious, still

201

fascinated, still avid for detail; but when Tony asked questions, Zenia's answers - although good-

natured enough - were short, and her eyes wandered elsewhere. She had the same affable but absent-minded attitude towards West now, too. Although she still touched him whenever he came into the room, although she still doled out little flatteries, little praises, she wasn't concentrating on him. She was thinking about something else.

On a Friday in early April, Zenia climbs in through Tony's bedroom window in the middle of the night. Tony doesn't see her do it, because she's asleep; but suddenly her eyes open and she sits up straight in her bed, and there's a woman standing in the darkness of the room, her head outlined

against the yellowygrey oblong of the window. In the instant of waking Tony thinks it's her mother. Anthea could not be disposed of so easily, it appears: compressed into a cylinder, tossed

into the lake, forgotten. She's come back to exact retribution, but for what? Or maybe she has

returned, far too late, to collect Tony and take her away at last, to the bottom of the deep blue

sea, where Tony has no desire to go, and what would she look like if Tony were to turn on the

light? Herself, or a bloated watercolour?

Tony goes cold all over. Where are my clothes? Anthea is about to say, out of the middle of her faceless face. She means her-body, the one that's been burned up, the one that's been drowned. What can Tony reply? I'm sorry, I'm sorry.

All this is wordless. What Tony experiences is a complex wave of recognition and dread, shock and the lack of it: the package that comes intact whenever unvoiced wishes come true.

She is too paralyzed to scream. She gasps, and puts both hands over her mouth.

"Hi," says Zenia quietly. "It's me:"

There's a pause while Tony recovers herself a little. "How did you get in?" she asks, when her heart is again inaudible.

202

"The window," says Zenia. "I climbed up the fire escape:" "But it's too high," says Tony.

Zenia is tall, but not tall enough to reach the bottom platform. Is West down there, did he give

her a boost? Tony moves to switch on her bedside light, then thinks better of it. She isn't supposed to have anyone in her room at this time of night, and dons and busybodies prowl the

corridors, on the sniff for cigarette smoke and contraband sex.

"I went up that tree and swung over from the branch," says Zenia. "Any lunatic could do it.

You should really get some sort of a lock on your window" She sits down, cross-legged, on the

floor.

"What's the matter?" says Tony. There has to be something: even Zenia wouldn't just climb in through somebody's window in the middle of the night on a passing whim.

"I couldn't sleep," says Zenia. They are both almost whispering. "I needed to talk to you.

I'm feeling so bad about poor Professor Welch."

"What?" says Tony. She doesn't understand.

"About how we cheated on him. I think we should confess. It was forgery, after all," says

Zenia pensively. She's talking about the term paper, on which Tony spent so much time and generous care. There was nothing dishonest about the paper itself just about the name on

it,

which was Zenia's. -

Now Zenia wants to tell, and there goes Tony's life. Many large though shadowy possibilities loom ahead for Zenia - journalism, high finance, even politics have all been mentioned - but university professor has never been among them; whereas for Tony it's the only thing. It's her vocation; without it she'll be useless as an amputated hand. What else can she do? Where else can her pedlar's pack of knowledge, the doodads and odd fragments and frippery she accumulates like lint, be exchanged for an honest living? Honest: that's the key. Stripped of her intellectual honesty, her reputation, her

203
integrity, she'll be exiled. And Zenia is in a position to strip her.

"But I did it to help you!" says Tony, aware even as she says it that her own motives will cut no ice with the authorities. (For a moment she thinks, I could simply deny I wrote the thing. But Zenia has the original, in Tony's back-slanted handwriting. Naturally she had to copy it out in her own.)

"I know" says Zenia. "But still. Well, maybe I think differently in the morning. I'm just depressed, I'm down on myself; sometimes I feel so shitty I just want to jump off a bridge, you know? I feel like such an impostor sometimes. I feel I don't belong here - that I'm just not good enough. Or for West, either. He's so squeaky clean. Sometimes I'm afraid I'll get him dirty, or break him, or something. You know the worst of it? Sometimes I want to. When I'm - you know. Under a lot of stress."

So it's not only Tony whose life is threatened, but West's too. From what she's seen of West and his unquestioning devotion, Tony is convinced that Zenia could indeed wreak havoc.

One contemptuous flick of her hand could splatter him all over the sidewalk. How did Zenia get so much power without Tony noticing? Insofar as West is concerned, Tony did notice. But

she trusted Zenia to use that power well. She trusted Zenia. Now both she and West are in danger, now she must save them -w both. "Stress?" she says faintly.

"Oh, the money thing. Tony, you wouldn't know, it's not something you've ever had to deal with. The fucking rent's a few months behind, and the fucking landlord's threatening to have us evicted; he says he'll phone the university and make a stink. There's no point in even bothering West with any of it - he's such a baby, he just leaves all those practical things to me. If I told him how much we owe he'd go out and sell his lute, no question; I mean, what else does he have? He'd do anything for me, though it wouldn't even make a dint, poor lamb; but he's

204

fond of those sacrificial gestures. I just don't know what to do. It's all such a burden, Tony. That's when I get so fucking depressed!"

Tony has given Zenia money for the rent, several times already. However, she knows what Zerua will say if she mentions this. But Tony! We had to eat! You don't know what it's like, to be

hungry. You just don't get it! You don't know what it's like to have no money at all!

"How much?" she says in a cold, meticulous voice. It's a neat piece of blackmail. She's being bushwhacked. "A thousand dollars would see

us out of the woods," says Zenia smoothly. A thousand dollars is a great deal of money. It will

make a definite hole in Tony's nest egg. Also it's much more than could possibly be needed for

back rent. But Zenia doesn't beg, she doesn't plead. She knows that Tony's response is a foregone conclusion.

Tony gets out of bed in her polo pyjamas with blue mice in clown suits printed on them, sent to her from California by her mother, left over from when she was fourteen - her nocturnal wardrobe has not been upgraded, because who would ever see it, and one of the

things

she minds most about this evening in retrospect is that Zenia got a good look at her absurd pyjamas - and goes over to her desk and turns the desk lamp on, briefly, and writes the cheque.

"Here," she says, thrusting it at Zenia.

"Tony, you're a brick," says Zenia. "I'll pay you back later!" Both of them know this isn't true.

Zenia exits via the window, and Tony goes back to bed. A brick: hard, foursquare, a potential murder weapon. You could bash in quite a few skulls, with a brick. No doubt Zenia will be back later for more money, and then more. Tony has gained nothing but time.

205

X,KvI

Two days later West comes to McClung Hall and seeks out Tony, and asks her if she's seen

Zenia, because Zenia is gone. She's gone from the apartment, she's gone from the precincts of

the university, she appears to be gone from the entire city, because nobody - not the bearded

theatrical men, not the thin, ballet-faced, horse-maned women, and not the police, when West

finally calls them - knows where she is. Nobody saw her' go. She is simply not there any more.

Gone with her are the thousand dollars Tony gave her, plus the contents of her joint account with West - two hundred dollars, give or take. There would have been more, but Zenia

took some out earlier on the pretext that their good friend Tony, who was not as rich as they'd

all thought, had asked her for a temporary loan, being too shy to mention it to West. Gone also

is West's lute, which is located several weeks later by Tony during a diligent and inspired search

of secondhand stores, and is purchased by her on the spot. She carries it to the apartment herself and shoves it at West like a lollipop, hoping to soothe his unhappiness. But it makes scarcely any impact on him, where he sits by himself in the middle of the floor, on a large threadbare cushion, staring at the wall and drinking beer.

Zenia has left a letter for West. She did have that much consideration, or - Tony thinks, with her new insight into the twists of Zenia's soul - that much calculation. My darling, I am not

worthy of you. Some day you will forgive me. I will love you till I die. Your loving Zenia. Tony, who has

been the recipient of a similar letter, knows what these avowals are worth, which is nothing at

all. She knows how such letters can be hung around your neck like lockets made of lead, heavy

keepsakes that will drag you down for years. But she understands too West's need

206

to rely on Zenia's assurances. He needs them like water, he needs them like air. He would rather believe that Zenia has renounced him out of misplaced nobility than that she's been taking him for a ride. Women can make fools of men, thinks freshly disabused Tony, even if they weren't fools to begin with.

West's desolation is palpable. It envelops him like a cloud of midges, it marks him like a slashed wrist, which he holds out to Tony (mutely, without moving) to be bandaged. Given

the choice, she would not have elected the role of nurse and comforter, having been so bad at it with her father. But there isn't a lot else on offer, and so Tony makes cups of tea for West, and pries him off his cushion, and - not knowing what else to do - takes him out for walks, like a dog or invalid. Together they meander across parks, together they cross at the corners, holding hands like the babes in the wood. Together they silently lament.

West is in mourning, but Tony is in mourning too. They have both lost Zenia, although Tony has lost her more completely. West still believes in the Zenia he has lost: he thinks that if she would only come back and allow herself to be forgiven and cherished and cared for, all

could go on as before. Tony knows better. She knows that the person she's lost has never really existed in the first place. She does not yet question Zenia's story, her history; indeed, she uses it to explain her: what can you expect of someone with such a mangled childhood? What she questions is Zenia's good will. Zenia was only using her, and she has let herself be

used; she has been rummaged, she has been picked like a pocket. But she doesn't have much

time to feel sorry for herself because she's too busy feeling sorry for West.

West's hand lies passively in Tony's. It's as if he's blind: he goes where Tony steers, sucked dry of any will of his own, careless of where he's headed. Precipice or safe haven, it's all the same to him. Once in a while he seems to wake; he peers

207

around, disoriented. "How did we get here?" he says, and Tony's tenderized little heart is wrung.

What bothers her the most is West's drinking. It's still only beer, but there's a lot more of it going into him than there used to be. It's possible he's not ever completely sober. Zenia's absence is like a path, a path Tony recognizes because she's seen it before. It leads downwards

and ends abruptly in a square of bloodstained newspaper, and West stumbles along it as if he's

sleepwalking. She's powerless to stop him, or to wake him either. What sort of match is skinny,

awkward, and boneheaded Tony, with her oversized spectacles and walks in the park and cups

of tea, for the memory of shimmering Zenia that West carries next to his heart, or else instead

of it?

Tony is worried sick about him. She loses sleep. Inky rings appear beneath her eyes, her skin turns to paper. She writes her final exams in a frantic trance rather than with her usual cool rationality, calling upon reserves of stashed-away knowledge she didn't even know she had.

West on the other hand doesn't even turn up, at least for the Modern History exam. The vortex is taking him down.

Roz passes Tony in the hallway of McClung and notes her dreadful appearance.

"Hey. Tone," she says. (She has reverted to this pet name since the defection of Zenia, which she knows about, of course. The grapevine here has many tendrils. Tony without Zenia

is no longer viewed with trepidation, and can be treated as a diminutive again.) "Hey, Tone, how's it goin'? Holy cow, you look awful." She puts her big warm hand on Tony's pointy bird-shoulder. "It can't be that bad. -What's the matter?"

Who else does Tony have to talk to? She can't talk to West about himself, and Zenia is absent. Once upon a time she would have talked to no one, but ever since Christie's Coffee Shop she has developed an appreciation for confidences. So

208

they go to Roz's overstuffed room and sit on Roz's pillowcovered bed, and Tony disgorges. She doesn't tell Roz about the forged term paper or the thousand dollars. In any case they are not the story. The story is about West. Zenia is gone, with West's soul stuffed into her over-the-shoulder bag, and without it West will die. He will kill himself, and then what will Tony do? How will she live with herself?

This isn't how she puts it though. She outlines the bare facts, and facts they are. She isn't being melodramatic. Merely objective.

"Listen, sweetie," says Roz, when Tony stops talking. "I know you like him, I mean, he seems like a nice enough guy, but is he worth it?"

He is, says Tony. He is, he definitely is, but she is without hope. (He will dwindle and fade, as in ballads. He will pine and wane. Then he will blow off his head.)

"Sounds to me he's acting like a jerk! Zenia's a floozie, we all knew that. A couple of years ago she went through half the fraternities - more than half! You never heard that poem about her - 'Trouble with your penia? Try Zenia! He should wake up, eh?'" says Roz, who has yet to

encounter love, having yet to encounter Mitch. She has however just encountered sex and thinks it's the new wonder drug, and she's always had trouble keeping secrets. She lowers her

voice. "You should take him to bed," she says, nodding her head sagely. She's enjoying the role

of wise woman, counsellor to the afflicted. It helps not to be afflicted yourself

"Me?" says Tony. The girls in McClung Hall, although they talk endlessly about their boyfriends, are never very specific about what they actually do with them. If they go to bed with them they don't mention it. Zenia is the only person Tony's ever known who has been at all open about sex, until right now.

209

"So who else?" says Roz. "You need to make him feel wanted. Give him an interest in life:"

"Oh, I don't think I could do that," says Tony. The thought of going to bed with anyone at all is terrifying. What if they rolled over on her by mistake, and she got squashed? Also the thought of giving another person that much power over her makes her flinch. Let alone her reluctance to be pawed and drooled on. Zenia was frank about sex, but she didn't make it sound all that attractive.

Still, thinking about it, Tony has to admit that if there's one person she might be able to tolerate, it would be West. Already she holds his hand, on their walks; it's nice. But the concrete details defeat her. How would she lure West into such a place as bed, and which bed?

Not her own narrow bed in McClung Hall - that's out of the question, too many eyes are on her, you can't even eat cookies in your room without everyone finding out - and surely not the

same bed he's been sleeping in with Zenia. It wouldn't be right! Also, she doesn't know how such things are done. In theory, yes, she knows what goes where, but in practice? One of the

hurdles is conversational: what would she say? And even if she could successfully manoeuvre

West into the physical location, what would happen then? She is too small, and West is too big.

She would be shredded.

She loves West, though. That much is very clear to her. And isn't it a matter of saving his life? It is. So heroism and self-sacrifice are called for.

Tony grits her teeth and sets out to seduce West. She is every bit as inept at it as she has feared she'll be. She tries bringing some candles over to West's apartment and cooking a candlelight dinner, but her activity in the kitchen seems only to depress West further, because

Zenia was such a marvellous and inventive cook; in addition to which Tony burns the tuna casserole. She takes him to movies, leading him to cheap and

210

Silly horror films that give her a chance to clutch his hand in the dark when the vampires bare

their fangs and the rubber head rolls down the staircase. But whatever she does West chooses

to regard as simply the ministrations of friendship: Or so it appears to Tony. To her despair, but also - partly - to her relief, he views her as a loyal sidekick, and that is that.

It's June, it's warm, the university term is over but Tony has signed up for a summer course, as

usual, so she won't have to move out of her room at McClung Hall. One afternoon she goes over to West's place to do his accumulated mildewed dishes and to take him out for his walk,

and finds him asleep on his bed. His eyelids are curved and pure, like those on carved tombstone saints; one arm is thrown up over his head. Breath goes into him, breath goes out:

she is so grateful that he is still, as yet, alive. His hair - uncut for weeks - is ragged on his head.

He looks so sad lying there, so deserted, so lacking in threat, that she sits carefully down beside

him, bends gingerly over, and gives him a kiss on the forehead.

West doesn't open his eyes, but his arms come around her. "You're so warm, he murmurs into her hair. "You're so kind to me.

Nobody has ever called Tony warm and kind before. No man has ever put his arms around her. While she is still getting used to it, West begins to kiss her. He gives her small kisses, all

over her face. His eyes are still closed. "Don't go away," he whispers. "Don't move."

Tony can't move anyway, because she is paralyzed with apprehension. She is dismayed by her own lack of bravery, and also by the sheer magnitude of West's body, now that she's so close to it. She can actually see the stubs of whiskers coming out of his chin! Usually they're too high up for that. It's like seeing the ants on a falling boulder, just before it crushes you.

She

feels acutely menaced.

But West is very gradual. He slides off her glasses; then he undoes one button at a time, fumbling as if his fingers are asleep, and pulls his raspy blanket over her, and smooths her as if

she's a velvet cushion, and although it does indeed hurt, as the books have said, it's less like being

torn apart by wild beasts than she'd supposed, given all that growling that used to go on with

Zenia, and more like falling into a river, because West is what other people call him, a long drink

of water, and Tony is so thirsty, she's parched, she's been wandering in the desert all of these

years, and now at last somebody truly needs her for something, and in the end she discovers

what she's always wanted to know: she is bigger inside than out.

In this way Tony, proud of herself and filled with the joy of giving, drags West from the field of defeat and carts him off behind the lines, and tends his wounds, and mends him. He has been

broken, but he knits together after a time. Though not perfectly. Tony is conscious of the scar,

which takes the form of a low-level anxiety: West is convinced he's failed Zenia. He thinks she's been tossed out into the back alley of the world, to fend (badly) for herself; because he wasn't capable enough or smart enough or simply enough for her. He thinks she needs his protection, but Tony must keep her sneers about this to herself. There is no rival like an absent one. Zenia is not there to defend herself, and for this reason Tony can't attack her. Chivalry as well as wisdom ties her hands.

West goes back to university in the fall and makes up the courses he's missed. Tony is now in graduate school. They rent a small apartment together and share tidy breakfasts and sweet, kindly nights, and Tony is happier than she's ever been.

Time passes and they both get their first postgraduate degrees, and both of them acquire teaching assistantships. After a while they get married, at City Hall; the party afterwards is small

and intellectual in tone, although Roz is there, married

212

herself already. Her husband Mitch can't come, she explains; he's away on a business trip. She

gives Tony an enveloping hug and a silver telephone cover, and after she leaves (early), Tony's

historical and West's musical colleagues ask with ironic eyebrows who on earth that was. Her

presence however has reassured Tony: although her own parents' marriage was a disaster, marriage itself must be possible and even normal if Roz is doing it.

West and Tony move into a larger apartment, and West buys a spinet, to go with his lute.

He

has a suit now, and several ties, and eyeglasses. Tony buys a coffee grinder and a roasting pan,

and a copy of *The Joy of Cooking*, in which she looks up esoteric recipes. She makes a hazelnut

torte, and buys a fondue dish with long forks, and some skewers for making shish kebab.

More time passes. Tony wonders about having babies, but doesn't bring up the subject because West has never mentioned it. There are peace marches in the streets now, and confused

sitins at the university. West brings home some marijuana, and they smoke it together, and are

frightened together by noises on the street outside, and don't do it again.

Their love is gentle and discreet. If it were a plant it would be a fern, light green and feathery and delicate; if a musical instrument, a flute. If a painting it would be a water lily by Monet, one

of the more pastel renditions, with its liquid depths, its reflections, its different falls of light.

"You're my best friend," West tells Tony, stroking her hair back from her forehead. "I owe you a

lot:" Tony is touched by his gratitude, and too young to be suspicious of it.

They never mention Zenia, Tony because she thinks it will upset West, West because he thinks it will upset Tony. Zenia does not go away, however. She hovers, growing fainter, true, but

still there, like the blue haze of cigarette smoke in a room after the cigarette has been put

out.

Tony can smell her.

*

213

One evening Zenia appears at their door. She knocks like anybody else and Tony opens, thinking it is a Girl Guide selling cookies, or else the Jehovah's Witnesses. When she sees Zenia standing there she can't think of what to say. She's holding a skewer in her hand, with chunks of lamb and tomato and green pepper threaded onto it, and for an instant she has a vision of herself plunging the skewer into Zenia, into where her heart should be, but she doesn't do this. She just stands there with her mouth open, and Zenia smiles at her and says,

"Tony darling, it was such work to track you down!" and laughs with her white teeth. She's thinner now, and even more sophisticated. She's wearing a black mini-skirt, a black shawl with

jet beading and long silken fringes, fishnet tights, and knee-high lace-up high-heeled boots.

"Come in," says Tony, motioning with her skewer. Lamb blood drips onto the floor.

"Who is it?" calls West from the living room, where he's playing Purcell on the spinet. He likes to play while Tony is making dinner: it's one of their little rituals.

Nobody, Tony wants to say. They had the wrong address. They went away. She wants to thrust

her hands at Zenia, push her back, slam the door. But Zenia is already over the threshold.

"West! My God!" she says, striding into the living room, holding out her arms to him.

"Long time no see!" West can't believe it. His eyes behind his rimless glasses are the shocked

eyes of a burned baby, the amazed eyes of an interstellar traveller. He doesn't get up, he doesn't

move. Zenia takes his upturned face in her two hands and kisses him twice, once on each cheek, and then a third time on the forehead. The fringes of her shawl caress him, his mouth is

level with her chest. "It's so good to see old friends," says Zenia, breathing out.

Somehow or other she ends up staying for dinner, because who are Tony and West to hold grudges, and what is there to hold them about anyway? Wasn't it Zenia's defection that

214

brought them together? And aren't they touchingly happy? Zenia tells them they are. They're just like a couple of kids, she says, kids on one long picnic, playing sand castles at the beach. So

darling! She says she's delighted to see it. Then she sighs, implying that life has not treated her

as well as it's been treating them. But then, she hasn't had their advantages. She s-lived on the

edges, out there where it's dark and sharp and there are scarcities. She's had to forage.

Where has she been? Well, Europe, she says, gesturing towards a higher, a deeper culture;

and the States, where the big folks play; and the Middle East. (With a wave of her hand she invokes deserts, date palms, mystic knowledge, and better shish kebab than anything capable of

being grilled in Tony's wee Canadian oven.) She avoids saying what she's been doing in these

places. This and that, she says. She laughs, and says she has a short attention span.

About the money she made off with she tactfully says nothing, and Tony decides that it

would be parochial of her to bring it up. Zenia does say, "Oh, there's your wonderful lute, I always loved it," as if she has no memory whatsoever of her own kidnapping of this

instrument. West seems to have no memory of it either. At Zenia's request he plays a few of

the old songs; though he doesn't do folksongs much any more, he says. By now he's into a cross-cultural study of polyphonal chants.

No memory, no memory. Does nobody but Tony have any memory at all? Apparently not; or rather West has no memory, and Zenia's is highly selective. She gives little nudges, little hints,

and assumes a rueful expression: she has regrets, is what she implies, but she has sacrificed

her own happiness for that of West. Hearth and home are what he needs, not a feckless, mossless rover like Zenia, and Tony is such a busy little housewife - isn't this cunning food! West is where he belongs: like a houseplant in the right window, just look how he's flourishing!

215

"You two are so lucky," she whispers to Tony, a mournful catch in her voice. West overhears, as

he is meant to.

"Where are you staying?" Tony asks politely, meaning, when are you leaving.

"Oh, you know," says Zenia with a shrug. "Here and there. I live from hand to mouth - or from feast to famine. Just like the old days, remember, West? Remember our feasts?"

She's eating

a Viennese chocolate, from a box West brought home to surprise Tony. He often brings her little

treats, little atonements for the part of himself he's unable to give her. Zenia licks the dark chocolate from her fingers, one by one, gazing at West from between her eyelashes.

"Delicious,"

she says richly.

Tony can't believe that West doesn't see through all this, this blandishment and prestidigitation, but he doesn't. He has a blind spot: his blind spot is Zenia's unhappiness.

Or else

her body. Men, thinks Tony with new bitterness, can't seem to tell one from the other.

A few days after that, West comes home later than usual. "I took Zenia out for a beer," he tells

Tony. He has the air of a man who is being scrupulously honest even though he's been tempted

not to be. "She's having a rough time. She's a very vulnerable person. I'm quite worried about

her."

Vulnerable? Where did West pick up that word? Tony thinks Zenia is about as vulnerable as a

cement block, but she doesn't say so. Instead she says something almost as bad. "I suppose she

wants some money."

West looks hurt. "Why don't you like her?" he asks. "You used to be such good friends.

She's

noticed, you know. She's upset about it:"

"Because of what she did to you," says Tony indignantly. "That's why I don't like her!"

West is puzzled. "What did she do to me?" he asks. He really doesn't know.

216

In no time at all - actually in about two weeks - Zenia has reclaimed West, in the same way she might reclaim any piece of property belonging to her, such as a suitcase left at a train station.

She simply tucks West under her arm and walks off with him. It doesn't look like that to him, naturally; just to Tony. To West it looks as if he's on a rescue mission, and who is Tony to deny

the attraction of that?

"I admire you a lot," he says to Tony. "You'll always be my best friend. But Zenia needs me."

"What does she need you for?" says Tony in a small clear voice.

"She's suicidal," says West. "You're the strong one, Tony. You've always been so strong."

"Zenia is as strong as an ox," says Tony.

"It's just an act," says West. "I always knew that about her. She's a deeply scarred person:"

Deeply scarred, thinks Tony. That can't be anyone's vocabulary but Zenia's. West has been hypnotized: it's Zenia talking, from the inside of his head. He goes on: "She's going to fall apart

completely unless I do something:"

Something means that West will move in with Zenia. This, according to West, will give Zenia

back some of her lost confidence in herself. Tony wants to hoot with derisive laughter, but how

can she? West is gazing at her earnestly, willing her to understand and to absolve him and to give

him her blessing, just as if he were still in control of his own brain. But instead he's a zombie.

He's holding Tony's hands, at the kitchen table. She withdraws them and gets up and goes into her study, and shuts the door, and immerses herself in the Battle of Waterloo. After it was

over the victorious soldiers celebrated, and drank all night, and roasted the flesh of the butchered

cavalry horses on the metal breastplates of the dead, leaving the wounded to moan and scream in

the background. Winning intoxicates you, and numbs you to the sufferings of others.

217

How well she did it, thinks Tony. How completely she took us in. In the war of the sexes, which is nothing like a real war but is instead a kind of confused scrimmage in which people

change allegiances at a moment's notice, Zenia was a double agent. Or not even that, because

Zenia wasn't working for one side or the other. She was on no side but her own. It's even possible that her antics - Tony is old enough, now, to think of them as antics - had no motive other than her own whim, her own Byzantine notions of pleasure. Maybe she hed and tortured

just for the fun of it.

Though part of what Tony feels is admiration. Despite her disapproval, her dismay, all her past anguish, there's a part of her that has wanted to cheer Zenia on, even to encourage her.

To make her into a saga. To participate in her daring, her contempt for almost everything, her

rapacity and lawlessness. It's like the time her mother disappeared downhill on the toboggan.

No! No! On! On!

But the recognition of that came later. At the time of West's defection she was devastated.

(Devastate, verb, to lay waste, to render desolate; a familiar enough term in the literature of war, thinks Tony in the cellar, surveying her sand-table and the ruins of Otto's army, and eating

another clove.) She refused to cry, she refused to howl. She listened to West's footsteps as he

tiptoed around the apartment, as if in a hospital. When she heard the apartment door shut behind him she scuttled out and double-locked it, and put on the chain. Then she went into

the bathroom and locked that door, too. She took off her wedding ring (simple, gold, no diamonds), intending to drop it down the toilet, but instead she placed it on a cabinet shelf, next to the disinfectant. Then she subsided onto the bathroom floor.

218

American Standard, said the toilet. Dradnats Nacirema. A Bulgarian skin ointment. After a while she came out of the bathroom because the phone was ringing. She stood there

looking at it, it and its bridal silver telephone cover; it continued to Ping. She lifted it. then dropped it down again. There was nobody she wanted to talk to. She wandered into the kitchen but there was nothing she wanted to eat.

Some hours later she found herself opening the box of old Christmas decorations where she also kept her father's German pistol, wrapped in red tissue paper. There were even some

bullets for it, in a metal cough-drop tin. She'd never shot a gun in her life, but she knew the theory.

You need some sleep, she told herself She could not stand the idea of sleeping in her desecrated bed, so she went to sleep finally in the living room, underneath the spinet. She had

some thoughts of destroying it, with something - the meat cleaver? - but decided that could wait until morning.

When she woke up it was noon, and someone was pounding on the door. Probably it was West, .come back because he'd forgotten something. (His underwear was gone from the drawer, his neatly arranged socks, washed by Tony and folded carefully in pairs. He'd taken a

suitcase.)

Tony went to the door. "Go away," she said.

"Sweetie, it's me," said Roz on the other side. "Open the door, honey, I really need to go to the can, I'm about to flood this entire floor."

Tony didn't want to let Roz in because she didn't want to let anyone in, but she could not turn away a friend in urinary need. So she took off the chain and undid the locks and in waddled Roz, pregnant with her first baby. "This is just what I needed," she said ruefully, "a bigger body. Hey! I'm eating for five!" Tony didn't laugh. Roz looked at Tony's face, then put her fattening arms around Tony. "Oh honey;" she said; then,

219

with new-found knowledge, both personal and political, "Men are such pigs!"

Tony had a twinge of indignation. West was not a pig. He wasn't even shaped like one. An ostrich, perhaps. It's not West's fault, she wanted to say. It's her. I loved him but he never really loved me.

How could he? He was occupied territory, -all along. But she couldn't say anything about this, because

she couldn't speak. Also she couldn't breathe. Or rather she could only breathe in. She breathed in and in and finally made a sound, a wail, a long wail that went on and on, like a distant siren. Then she burst into tears. Burst, like a paper bag full of water. She couldn't have

burst like that if the tears hadn't been there all along, a huge unfelt pressure behind her eyes.

The tears cascaded down her cheeks; she licked her lips, she tasted them. In the Middle Ages

they thought that only those without souls could not cry. Therefore she had a soul. It was no comfort.

"He'll come back," said Roz. "I know he will. What does she need him for? She'll just take one bite out of him and throw him away." She rocked Tony back and forth, back and forth, the

most mother that Tony had ever had.

Roz moved into Tony's apartment, just until Tony could function. She had a housekeeper, and

her husband Mitch was away again, so she didn't need to be at her own house. She phoned the

university and cancelled Tony's classes, saying that Tony had strep throat. She ordered in groceries, and fed Tony canned chicken noodle soup, caramel pudding, peanut butter and banana sandwiches, grapejuice: baby food. She made her take a lot of baths and played soothing music to her, and told her jokes. She wanted to install Tony in her Rosedale mansion,

but Tony didn't want to leave the apartment, even for a second. What if West should come back? She didn't know what would happen if he did, but she knew she needed to be there. She

needed to have the choice of slamming the door in his face or

220

falling into his arms. She didn't want to choose, though. She wanted to do both.

"He called you, didn't he?" said Tony after a few days of this, when she was feeling less gutted.

"Yeah," said Roz. "You know what he said? He said he was worried about you. That's kind of cute:"

Tony didn't think it was cute. She thought it was Zenia, putting him up to it. Twisting the knife.

It was Roz who suggested Tony should give up the apartment and buy a house. "The prices are

great right now! You've got the down payment -just cash in some of those bonds. Look - think of

it as an investment. Anyway, you should move out of here. Who needs the bad memories, eh?"

She got Tony a good real estate agent, drove around with her from house to house, clambered

panting up and down the stairs, peering at furnaces and dry rot and wiring. "Now this - this is a

deal," she whis=pered to Tony. "Ask low - see what they say! A few repairs and this could be

gorgeous! Your study goes in the tower, just ditch the fake wood panelling, get rid of that linoleum - it's maple underneath, I looked. It's buried treasure, trust me! Once you're out of the

old place, things will be tons better." She got a much bigger charge out of buying the house than

Tony did. She found Tony a decent contractor, and dictated the paint colours. Even at the best

of times Tony would have been incapable of making such arrangements herself.

After Tony moved in, things were indeed better. She liked the house, though not for any reasons that Roz would have approved. Roz wanted the house to be the centre of the new, outgoing life she envisaged for Tony, but for Tony it was more like a convent. A convent of one.

She didn't belong in the land of the adults, the land of the giants. She shut herself up in her house

like a nun, and went out only for supplies.

And for work, of course. Lots of work. She worked at school

221

and also at home; she worked nights and weekends. She got pitying looks from her

colleagues,

because gossip travels through universities at the speed of influenza and they all knew about

West, but she didn't care. She skipped regular meals and snacked on cheese food and crackers.

She booked an answering service so she couldn't be disturbed while thinking. She did not answer the doorbell. It did not ring.

Tony in her turret room works late into the night. She wants to avoid bed, and sleep, and especially dreaming. She is having a dream, a recurring one; she has the feeling that this dream

has been waiting for her a long time, waiting for her to enter it, reenter it; or that it has been waiting to re-enter her.

This dream is underwater. In her waking life, she is no swimmer; she has never liked immersing herself, getting cold and wet. The most she'll trust herself to is a bathtub, and on the whole she prefers showers. But in the dream she swims effortlessly, in water as green as

leaves, with sunlight filtering down through it, dappling the sand. No bubbles come out of her mouth;- she is not conscious of breathing. Beneath her, coloured fish flit away, darting like birds.

Then she comes to an edge, a chasm. Like going down a hill she drops over it, slides diagonally through the increasing darkness. The sand falls away under her like snow. The fish

here are larger and more dangerous, brighter - phosphorescent. They light up and dim, flash on

and off like neon signs, their eyes and teeth glowing - a gas-flame blue, a sulphur yellow, a red

the colour of embers. Suddenly she knows she isn't in the sea at all but miniaturized, inside her

own brain. These are her neurons, the crackle of electricity touching them as she thinks about

them. She looks at the incandescent fish with wonder: she is watching the electrochemical process of her own dreaming!

If so, then what is that, on the dim level white sand at the bottom? Not a ganglion.

Someone walking away from her.

222

She swims faster but it's no use, she's held in place, an aquarium goldfish bumping its nose against glass. Reverof, she hears. The backwards dream language. She opens her mouth to call,

but there is no air to call with and water rushes in. She wakes up gasping and choking, her throat constricted, her face streaming with tears.

Now that she's started to cry it seems impossible to stop. In the daytime, in the lamplight, when she can work, she can keep this weeping locked away. But sleep is fatal. Fatal and unavoidable.

She takes off her glasses and rubs her eyes. From the street her room must look like a lighthouse, a beacon. Warm and cheerful and safe. But towers have other uses. She could empty boiling oil out the left-hand window, get a dead hit on anyone standing at the front door.

Such as West or Zenia, Zenia and West. She broods about them too much, them and their entangled bodies. Action would be better. She thinks about going over to their apartment (she

knows where they're living, it wasn't hard to find out, West is listed in the university directory) and confronting Zenia. But what would she say? Give him back? Zenia would just laugh.

"He's a

free agent," she would say. "He's a grown-up, he can make his own choices:" Or something like that. And if she were to turn up on Zenia's doorstep, to whine and beg and plead, wouldn't

that be just what Zenia wanted?

She recalls a conversation she had with Zenia, early on, in the days when they were drinking coffee at Christie's and Zenia was such a friend.

"Which would you rather have?" said Zenia. "From other people. Love, respect, or fear?"

"Respect," said Tony. "No. Love." "Not me," said Zenia. "I'd choose fear." "Why?" said Tony.

223

"It works better," said Zenia. "It's the only thing that works."

Tony remembers having been impressed by this answer. But it wasn't fear through which Zenia had stolen West. Not a show of strength. On the contrary, it was a show of weakness. The ultimate weapon.

She could always take the gun.

For almost a year there was no word from West; no mention - for instance - of lawyers or divorce; not even any petitions about the spinet and the lute, which Tony was holding captive

in her new living room. Tony knew why West was so wordless. It was because he felt too awful

about what he'd done, or rather what had been done to him. He felt too ashamed.

After a while he began to leave timid messages with Tony's answering service, suggesting they get together for a beer. Tony did not reply, not because she was angry with him - she wouldn't have been angry with him if he'd been run over by a truck, and she viewed seduction

by Zenia as analogous - but because she couldn't imagine what form any conversation between

the two of them might take. How are you and Fine would about cover it. Thus when he finally turned up at her door, her new house door, the door of her nunnery, she simply stared at him.

"Let me in?" said West. Tony could tell at a glance that it was all finished between Zenia and West. She could tell from the colour of his skin; which was a light greenish grey, and from

his sagging shoulders and dejected mouth. He'd been dismissed, sacked, ejected. He'd been

kicked in the nuts.

He looked so pitiful, so pulled apart - as if he'd been on the rack, as if every one of his bones had been disconnected from every other bone, leaving only a kind of anatomical jelly

-

that of course she let him in. Into her home, into her kitchen, where she made him a hot drink,

and ultimately into her bed,

224

where he clutched her, shivering. It was not a sexual clutch, it was the clutch of a man drowning. But Tony was in no danger of being dragged down. She felt, if anything, strangely dry; strangely detached from him. He might be drowning, but this time she was standing on the beach. Worse: with binoculars.

She began again to cook small dinners, to boil breakfast eggs. She remembered how to care

for him, how to pat him back into shape, and she did it again; but this time with fewer illusions. She still loved him, but she didn't believe he would ever love her in return, not to the same extent. How could he, after what he'd been through? Could a man with one leg tapdance?

Nor could she trust him. He might crawl out of his depression, tell her how good she was,

bring home treats for supper, go through the routines; but if Zenia were to return, from wherever she had gone - and even West didn't seem to know - then all of these fond habits would count for nothing. He was only on loan. Zenia was his addiction; one sip of her and he'd be gone. He'd be like a dog summoned by a supersonic whistle, inaudible to human ears.

He would run off.

She never mentioned Zenia: to dwell on her might be to invoke her. But when Zenia died, when she was blown up and safely encapsulated and planted under a mulberry tree, Tony no

longer needed to fear the doorbell. Zenia was no longer a menace, not in the flesh. She was a

footnote. She was history.

Now Zenia is back, and hungry for blood. Not for West's blood: West is an instrument merely.

The blood Zenia wants to drink is Tony's, because she hates Tony and always has. Tony could

see that hatred in her eyes today, at the Toxique. There's no rational explanation for such hatred, but it doesn't surprise Tony. She seems to have been familiar with it for a long time.

It's

the rage of her unborn twin.

Or so thinks Tony, removing the vestiges of Otto the Red's

225

fallen army with her tweezers, installing the Saracens in their freshly captured territory. The flag of Islam flies above the corpse-strewn Italian beaches, while Otto himself escapes by sea.

His defeat will inspire the Slavic Wends to make another looting and pillaging foray into Germany; it will motivate uprisings, rebellions, a return to the old cannibal gods. Brutality, counter-brutality, chaos. Otto is losing his grip.

How could he have won this battle? Hard to say. By avoiding recklessness? By drawing the enemy out first to estimate its strength? Strength and cunning are both essential, but each without the other is valueless.

Tony herself, lacking strength, will have to rely on cunning. In order to defeat Zenia she will have to become Zenia, at least enough to anticipate her next move. It would help if she knew what Zenia wanted.

Tony turns out the cellar lights and climbs the stairs to the kitchen, where she runs herself a glass of water out of the spring-water dispenser foisted on her by Charis. (As full of chemicals

as anything else, she knows; but at least there's no chlorine. Eau de Swimming Pool, is what

Roz calls the Toronto tap water.) Then she unlocks the back door and creeps out into the yard,

into its flora of dry thistles and tree trunks and unpruned shrubs, its fauna of mice. Raccoons are regulars; squirrels make untidy nests in the branches. Once they had a skunk back here,

hunting for grubs, rolling up what vestiges of turf remain; once a chipmunk, miraculous survivor of the neighbourhood gamut of cats.

It refreshes Tony to sneak around at night, from time to time. She enjoys being awake when others are asleep. She enjoys occupying dark space. Maybe she will see things other people

can't see, witness nocturnal events, gain rare insights. She used to think that as a child, too

-

tiptoeing through the house, listening at doors. It didn't work then, either.

226

From this vantage point she has a novel view of her own house: the view of a lurking enemy commando. She thinks about how the house would look if she or anyone else were to

blow it up. Study, bedroom, kitchen, and hall, suspended in fiery mid-air. Her house is no protection for her, really. Houses are too fragile.

The kitchen lights go on, the back door opens. It's West, a gangling silhouette, backlit, his face indistinct. "Tony?" he calls anxiously. "Are you out there?"

Tony savours his anxiety, just a little. True, she adores him, but there's no such thing as an unmixed motive. She waits for a moment, listening, in her moonlit weedy garden, blending - possibly - with the dappled silvery shadows cast by the trees. Is she invisible? The legs of West's pyjamas are too short, and so are the arms; they lend him an untended air, like that of a

Frankenstein monster. Yet who could have tended him - over the years, and apart from finding

some pyjamas that would fit - better than Tony? If she had done it unwillingly she might deserve to feel aggrieved. Is that how grievance works? I've given you the best years of my life! But

for a gift you don't expect a return. And who would she have given them to otherwise; those years?

"I'm here," she says, and he comes outside and down the back porch steps. He has his slippers on, she's relieved to see, although not his dressing gown.

"You were gone," he says, stooping down towards her, peering. "I couldn't sleep."

"Neither could I," she says. "So I did some work, and then I came out for a breath of fresh air."

"I don't think you should wander around outside at night," he says. "It's not safe."

"This isn't wandering," she says, amused. "It's our backyard:"

"Well, there might be muggers," he says.

227

She takes his arm. Under the thin cloth, under the flesh, within the arm itself, she can feel another arm forming: the arm of an old man. His eyes shine milky white in the moonlight.

Blue

eyes, she's read, are not the basic colour of human eyes; probably they grew from a mutation,

and are therefore more prone to cataracts. She has a quick vision of West, ten years older and

stone blind, herself leading him tenderly by the hand. Training the seeing-eye dog,

arranging

the library of books-on-tape, the collection of electronic noises. What would he do without her?

"Come inside," she says. "You'll catch cold:" "Is anything wrong?" he says.

"Not a thing," she lies pleasantly. "I'll make us some hot milk."

"Good," he says. "We can put some rum in it. Look at that moon! There's been men playing golf, up there."

He is so ordinary, so cherished, so familiar to her; like the smell of the skin on her own forearm, like the taste of her fingers. She would like to hang a sign on him, like the metal ones

for liquor bottles or the plasticized ones at conventions: Gnissapsert On. She hugs, him, standing on tiptoe, stretching her arms as far around him as they can go. They don't reach all

the way.

How long can she protect him? How long before Zenia descends on them, with her bared incisors and outstretched talons and banshee hair, demanding what is rightfully hers?

S Z H O I N Z ISVIM

XXVIII

Charis follows Zenia and the man who is not Billy along Queen Street, at a distance, dodging

around her fellow pedestrians and occasionally bumping into them. She bumps into them because she feels that if she takes her eyes off Zenia, even for an instant, Zenia will vanish - not like a popped soap bubble, but like someone out of a TV kids' cartoon, turning into a bunch of dots and dashes and beaming herself off to some other locale. If you knew enough about matter you could walk through walls, and maybe Zenia does know enough; although any

such knowledge must have been acquired by her in a sinister way. Something involving chicken

blood, and the eating of still-alive animals. The collection of other people's toenails, pins driven in. Pain for someone.

Zenia must feel the stun-ray intensity of Charis's gaze burning into the small of her back, because at one point she turns around and looks, and Charis darts behind a lamppost, almost

braining herself in the process. When she recovers from the bright red sensation in her head

(It's not a hurt, it's a colour) and dares to peek, Zenia and the man have stopped and are talking:

Charis wends her way a little closer, leaving a trail of hostile glances and muttered comments on the sidewalk behind her and smiling weakly at those who, with frayed cuffs and

hands held out and the swollen, sunken faces of those who eat too much refined sugar, ask her

for the price of a meal. Charis doesn't have any small change, having left it as a tip at Kafay Nwar; she doesn't have very much money, period, although more than she thought she'd have

after lunch, because it was Roz who figured out the bill and her accounting procedures always

end up with Charis paying less, she suspects, than she

231

ought to. Anyway, Charis doesn't believe in giving money to panhandlers, being of the opinion that money, like candy, is bad for people. But she would give them some of her home-grown carrots, if she could.

She makes her way to a good vantage point behind a hot dog vendor stand with a bright yellow umbrella, and lurks there, despite the offensive smell (pigs' innards!) and the sinful cans

of pop (chemicals!) lined up beside the mustard and relish (pure salt!). The vendor asks her what she'd like today, but she hardly hears him; she's too engrossed in Zenia. Now the man with Zenia turns and his face is towards Charis, and with a jolt like putting her hand on a hotplate Charis recognizes him: he's Roz's son Larry.

It's always a jump in time for Charis to see Roz's children grown up, although of course they have grown up and she herself has watched them do it. But their aging is hard to believe.

It's like the times Augusta is in the next room and Charis walks in, expecting to see her cross-

legged on the floor playing house with her Barbie doll - Charis hadn't approved of that thing, but was too weak to forbid it - and instead finds her sitting in a chair in a wide-shouldered suit and sling-back high heels, painting her nails. Oh August! she wants to say. Where did you

get those weird dress-up clothes? But those are her real clothes. It is a true head-bender to

see

your own daughter walking around in clothes that might have belonged to your mother. There is Larry, then, in jeans and a fawn suede jacket, his taffy-haired head inclined towards Zenia, one of his hands on her arm. Little Larry! Serious little Larry, who would purse his mouth and frown at the very same time his twin sisters were laughing and pinching

each other's arms and telling each other they had big snots coming out of their noses. Charis

has never been altogether comfortable about Larry, or rather about his rigidity. She's always

felt that a good massage therapist could do

232

wonders. But Larry must have loosened up considerably if he's been having lunch at the Toxique.

But what is he doing with Zenia? What is he doing with Zenia right now? He's bending his face down, Zenia's own face is reaching up like a tentacle, they're kissing! Or so it appears.

"Listen lady, you want a hot dog or not?" says the vendor. "What?" says Charis, startled.

"Crazy broad, shove off" says the vendor. "Get back in the bin. You're bothering the customers."

If Charis were Roz, she'd say, What customers? But if Charis were Roz she'd be in a state of

deep shock. Zenia and Larry! But she's twice his age! thinks the vestige of Charis that remains

from the time when age, in female-male relationships, was supposed to matter. The present Charis tells herself not to be judgmental. Why shouldn't women do what men have been doing

for ages, namely robbing the cradle? Age is not the point. The point is not Zenia's age, but Zenia herself. Larry might as well be drinking liquid drain cleaner.

While Charis is having this uncharitable thought, Zenia steps sideways, off the curb, and disappears into a taxi. Larry gets in after her - so it was not a goodbye kiss - and the taxi is sucked out into the current of traffic. Charis dithers. What should she do now? Her urge is to phone Roz - Roz! Roz! Help! Come quickly! - but that would do no good, because she doesn't

know where Zenia and Larry are going; and even if she did, so what? What would Roz do? Burst into their hotel room or whatever, and say Let go of my son? Larry is twenty-two, he is an

adult. He can make his own decisions.

Charis sees another taxi and runs out into the street, flailing her arms. The taxi squeals to a stop in front of her and she hurries around, opens the door, and scrambles in. "Thank you," she gasps.

"You lucky you not dead:" says the driver, who has an accent Charis can't identify. "So, what can I do for you?"

233

"Follow that taxi," says Charis. "What taxi?" says the driver.

So that is that, and worse, Charis feels honour-bound to pay him three dollars, because she did after all get into his cab, but she only has a five-dollar bill and a ten, and he doesn't have change, and she doesn't want to ask the hot dog vendor, considering what he just called her, so

it ends with him saying, "Time is money, lady, do me a favour, forget it," and there are bad feelings all round.

Luckily they are digging up Queen Street, yet again, and Zenia's taxi is caught in the jam.

After running down the street some more Charis manages to find another empty taxi, only two

cars away from Zenia's, and she flings herself into it, and together the two taxis ooze slowly through the downtown core. Zenia and Larry get out at the Arnold Garden Hotel, and so does

Charis. She watches the uniformed doorman nod to them, she watches Larry put his hand on

Zenia's elbow, she watches them go through the brass-and-glass doors. She herself has never

been through those doors. Anything with an awning intimidates her.

As she's trying to decide what to do next, a bicycle courier starts swearing at her for no reason at all. Jesus lady, watch the fuck out! It's an omen: she's done enough for today.

She walks down to the ferry dock, buffeted as if by wind. Being in the city is so abrasive; it's like dust blowing into your face, it's like dancing on sandpaper. Although she's not sure why, she minds being called lady even more than she minds being called crazy broad. Why is this

word so offensive to her? (Listen, says Shanita's voice, with amused contempt. If that's all you

ever get called.~

She's feeling baffled and inept, and slightly frightened. What is she supposed to do with what she knows? What is she supposed to do next? She listens, but her body tells her nothing,

234

even though it was her body that got her into this, with its mischievous yen for caffeine, its adrenalin rushes, its megalomania. Some days - and this is becoming one of them - having a

body is an inconvenience. Although she treats her body with interest and consideration, paying

attention to its whims, rubbing lotions and oils into it, feeding it with selected nutrients, it doesn't always repay her. Right now her back - for instance - hurts, and there's a cold dark pool, an ominous pool, a pool of brownish-green septic acid, forming somewhere below her navel. The body may be the home of the soul and the pathway of the spirit, but it is also the perversity, the stubborn resistance, the malign contagion of the material world. Having a body,

being in the body, is like being roped to a sick cat.

She stands on the ferry, leaning on the railing, facing backwards, watching the wake rise and

subside into the notoriously poisonous lake, tracing and obliterating itself in the same gesture.

Light glitters on the water, no longer white but yellowing; it's afternoon and there goes the sun,

there goes this day, down to where all the other days have gone, each one carrying something

away with it. She will never get any of those days back, including the ones she should have had

but didn't, days with Billy in them. It was Zenia who made off with those days. She took them away from Charis, who now doesn't even have them to look fondly back on. It's as if Zenia has

crept into her house when she wasn't there and torn the photos out of her photo album, the photo album she doesn't possess except inside her head. In one single snatch and grab, Zenia

stole both her future and her past. Couldn't she have left it a little longer? just a month, just a week, just a little more?

In the spiritual world (which she has now entered, because the ferry, with its soporific motor and gentle sway, often has this effect on her), Charis's astral body falls to its knees,

raising imploring hands to the astral body of Zenia, which burns red, a red crown of flames like
spiky leaves or old-fashioned pen nibs

235

flaring around her head, with emptiness at the centre of each flame. More time, more time,
Charis

pleads. Give back what you took!

But Zenia turns away.

~IX

The history of Charis and Zenia began on a Wednesday in the first week of November in
the

first year of the seventies. Seventy. Charis finds both parts of this number significant, the
seven

and the zero as well. A zero always means the beginning of something and the end as well,
because it is omega: a circular self-contained O, the entrance to a tunnel or the exit from
one,

an end that is also a beginning, because although that year saw the beginning of the end of
Billy, it was also the year her daughter August began to begin. And seven is a prime
number,

composed of a four and a three - or two threes and a one, which Charis prefers because
threes

are graceful pyramids as well as Goddess numbers, and fours are merely box-like squares.
She knows it was a Wednesday, because Wednesdays were the days she went into town
to

earn some money by teaching two yoga classes. She did that on Fridays, too, except that
on

Fridays she also stayed late to put in her share of volunteer time at the Furrows Food
Co-op.

She knows it was November, because November is the eleventh month, the month of the
dead, and also of regeneration. Sun sign Scorpio, governed by Mars, colour deep red. Sex,
death, and war. Synchronicity.

The day begins as mist. Charis sees the mist as she gets out of bed, or rather off the bed,
because the bed is a mattress on the floor. She goes to the window to look out. There's a
miniature transparent rainbow stuck onto the glass, though Charis did not

236

stick it there: it was left over from the previous tenants, a batch of burned-out hippies who
also

drew pictures in Magic Marker on the flowered, faded wallpaper - naked people copulating
and

cats with halos - and played the Doors and Janis Joplin at top volume in the middle of the
night,

and left mounds of human shit in the backyard. They were finally kicked out by the landlord
with

the help of the next-door neighbours after a screaming acid parry, during which one of them
set

fire to a black plastic beanbag chair in the living room under the impression that it was a
carnivorous puffball. The landlord - an old man who lives at the other end of the street -
welcomed Charis and Billy, because there were only two of them and they did not have a
big

speaker system, and because Charis said she intended to plant a vegetable garden, which
indicated some sort of decorous coupledness; and the neighbours were so grateful for the
change

that they didn't even make a fuss about the chickens, chickens that may or may not be

illegal, but

this is the Island and strict legality is not the norm here, witness the number of house additions

that go up without a permit. Luckily they have a corner lot, so there are neighbours on only one side.

Charis painted over the naked people and cats and dug the human shit into her compost heap,

telling herself that it was the right thing to do because the Chinese used it, in China, and everyone

knew they were the world's best organic gardeners. Shit to food to shit, it was all part of the cycle.

They moved into this house in late spring, and from the very first Charis knew it was right.

She loves the house and, even more, she loves the Island. It's infused with a vibrant, brooding,

humid life; it makes her feel that everything - even the water, even the stones - is alive and aware,

and her along with it. Some mornings she goes out before daybreak and just walks around, up

and down the streets that are not real streets but more like paved bicycle paths, past the dilapidated or spruced-up former cottages with their woodpiles and hammocks and

237

patchy gardens; or else she just lies on the grass, even when damp. Billy likes the Island too, or

so he says, but not the same way she does.

The mist is rising from the ground and from the bushes, dripping from the old apple tree at the back of the yard. There are still a few brownish frostbitten apples, hanging from the twisted branches like burnt Christmas decorations. The fallen apples Charis was unable to use

for jelly lie rotting and fermented at the base of the tree. Several of the chickens have been pecking at them; Charis can tell by the way those chickens stagger around, so drunk they have

difficulty walking up the ramp into their chicken house. Billy thinks those drunken hens are cool.

The wide painted floorboards are cold under her bare feet; she hugs her goose-pimpled arms,

shivering a little. She can't see the lake from here: the mist blots it out. She makes an effort to

find the mist beautiful - everything made by nature should be beautiful - but succeeds only partly. The mist is beautiful, true, it's like solid light, but it's also ominous: when there's mist you can't see what's coming.

She leaves Billy sleeping on their mattress, under their opened-out sleeping bag, and puts on her embroidered Indian slippers, and pulls one of Billy's sweatshirts over her cotton nightgown. The nightgown is Victorian-style, second-hand; she bought it at a used-clothing place in Kensington Market. It would be cheaper to make such nightgowns, and she's bought a

pattern and enough material for two, but there's something wrong with her sewing machine - a

treadle model she traded some yoga lessons for - so she hasn't cut either of them out yet.

The

next thing she intends to trade for is a loom.

She tiptoes from the bedroom and along the narrow hallway, and down the stairs. When she moved in here with Billy, six months ago, there were several layers of worn linoleum

covering

238

the floorboards. Charis stripped off the linoleum and pulled out the nails that were holding it in

place, and scraped away the black tarry goo that had oozed from it, and painted the hall floor

blue. But she ran out of paint halfway down the stairs, and she hasn't got more paint yet, and the

bottom stairs still have the outlines of the old linoleum stair treads. She doesn't mind them, the

traces; they are like signals made by those who lived here long before. So she's left them alone.

It's like leaving a wild patch in the garden. She knows she is sharing the space with other entities,

even if they can't be seen or heard, and it's just as well to show them you're friendly. Or respectful. Respectful is what she means, because she does not intend to get too cosy with them.

She wants them to respect her, as well.

She goes into the kitchen, which is freezing cold. There's a kind of furnace in the house, beside the water heater, in the dank, dirt-floored lean-to - the root cellar, Charis calls it, and she is

indeed keeping some roots in it, some carrots and beets buried in a box of sand, the way her

grandmother used to - but the furnace doesn't work very well. Mostly it blows lukewarm air through a series of grids in the floor, and makes dustballs; anyway, it seems like a waste of money

and also like cheating to turn on the furnace before it's absolutely necessary. You should make

use of what is naturally provided, if possible, so Charis has been scavenging dead wood from

under the trees on the Island and using the ends of boards left over from building the henhouse,

and breaking the odd dead branch off her apple tree.

She kneels before the cast-iron cookstove - it was one of the things that made her want this house, the wood stove - though it turned other people off, people who wanted electric stoves, so

the rent was low. Figuring out how to work it was hard at first; it has its moods, and sometimes

makes large clouds of smoke, or goes out completely even though it's packed with wood.

You

have to cajole it. She scrapes out yesterday's ashes, into a saucepan she keeps handy - she'll

sprinkle some into the

239

compost heap later, and sift the rest for a potter she knows, to make into glazes - and stuffs some crumpled newspaper and kindling and two thin logs into the firebox. When the fire has caught she crouches before the open stove door, warming her hands and appreciating the flames. The apple wood burns blue.

After a few minutes she gets up, feeling a stiffness in her knees, and goes over to the counter and plugs in the electric kettle. Although there's no electric stove the house has some

basic wiring, a ceiling fixture in every room and a few wall sockets, though you can't plug in the

kettle and anything else at the same time without blowing the fuses. She could wait for the iron

kettle on the wood stove to boil, but that might take hours, and she needs her morning herbal

tea right now. She remembers a time when she used to drink coffee, at university, a long time

ago, in one of her other lives, when she lived in McClung Hall. She remembers the fuzzy feeling in her head, and the hankering for more. It was an addiction, she supposes. The body is

so easily led astray. At least she never smoked.

Sitting at the kitchen table - not the round oak table she would like to have, but an interim table, an artificial table, an immoral table from the fifties, with chrome legs and black curlicues

baked into its Formica top - Charis drinks her herbal tea and attempts to focus on the day ahead. The mist makes it more difficult: it's hard for her to tell the time, despite her wristwatch, when she can't see the sun.

The most immediate decision to make is: who will have breakfast first, herself or the chickens? If she does, the chickens will have to wait and then she will feel guilty. If the chickens do, she will be hungry for a while, but she will have her own breakfast to look forward to while she is feeding them. Also the chickens trust her. They are probably wondering

where she is, right this minute. They are worrying. They are reproachful. How can she let them

down?

Every morning she goes through this minor tug-of-war, in

240

her head. Every morning the chickens win. She finishes her tea and fills a pail at the sink, then

goes to the kitchen door where Billy's work overalls are hanging on a wall hook. She pulls them

on, stuffing her nightgown down the legs - she could go upstairs and get dressed, but it might

wake Billy, who needs his sleep because of the strain he's under - and kicks off her slippers and

slides her bare feet into Billy's rubber boots. This is not the most attractive feeling: the rubber

is chilly, and damp with old foot sweat. Sometimes there are wool work socks to put inside the

boots, but these seem to have wandered off somewhere; and even with the socks these boots

would be cold, and way too big for her. She might get some boots of her own, but this would violate the accepted version of reality, which is that Billy feeds the chickens. She picks up the

water pail and waddles out into the yard.

The mist is less threatening when you're actually in it. It gives Charis the illusion of being able to walk through a solid barrier. Dripping grasses brush her legs; the air smells of leaf mould and damp wood, and of wet cabbages, from the halfdozen of them still in the garden. It's the autumnal smell of slow combustion. Charis breathes it in, breathing in also the ammo-

nia and hot-feather scent of her chickens. Inside the henhouse they're making the sleepy crooning cooing sounds that show they are at ease, a sort of broody, meditative humming. Now they hear her, and change to excited cackles.

She unlatches the wire gate that leads to their enclosure. Charis's first idea had been to let

the chickens range free, totally fenceless, but there turned out to be a cat and dog problem; and also the neighbours, although tolerant of the chickens in general, didn't much appreciate

having stray ones in their own yards, scratching up their flower beds. The chickens don't like the fence and try to get out, so Charis always closes the gate behind her before opening the henhouse door.

Billy built the henhouse himself, working with his shirt off

241

and the sun on his back, whacking the nails in. It was good for him, it gave him a sense of accomplishment. The house tilts a little but it does its job. It has one door for the hens, a small

square one with a ramp going down, and another for the humans. Charis opens the chickens'

door and they crowd and strut and cluck down their ramp, blinking in the light. Then she goes

in by the human door, opens the metal garbage can where the chicken feed is kept, and scoops

up a coffee tin of feed, which she takes outside and scatters on the ground. She prefers to feed

the chickens outside. The book says you should let the straw litter and the chicken droppings

build up on the henhouse floor because the heat of decomposition will keep the chickens warm in winter, but Charis does not think that food eaten under such circumstances can possibly be healthy. The cycle of nature is one thing, but you shouldn't confuse the different parts of it.

The chickens cluck hyperactively, mobbing her legs, making small fluttering hops, jostling and pecking one another, giving out yelps of anger. When they have settled down and are feed-

ing she carries their water container outside too and tops it up from the pail.

Charis watches the chickens eat. They fill her with joy, a joy that has no rational source, because she knows - she has seen, also she remembers - how greedy chickens are, how selfish

and unfeeling, how cruel they are to one another, how they gang up: at least two of them have

naked scalps, from being picked on. Nor are they placid vegetarians: you can start a riot among

them just by tossing them a few hot-dog ends or scraps of bacon. As for the rooster, with his

eye of an insane prophet and his fanatic's air of outrage and his comb and wattles flaunted like

genitals, he's an overbearing autocrat, and attacks her rubber boots when he thinks she's not

looking.

Charis doesn't care; she excuses the chickens everything. She adores them! She has adored

them ever since the moment

242

they arrived, flowering out of the feed sacks in which they travelled, shaking their angels' feathers. She thinks they are miraculous. They are.

Inside the henhouse, she rummages through the straw in the boxes, hoping for eggs. In June

the hens were bursting with eggs, laying two a day, huge milky ovals with double and triple yolks, but now, with the declining angle of the sun, they've fallen off badly. Their feathers and

wattles are duller; several of them are moulting. She does manage to find one egg, an undersized one with a pebbly shell. She slips it into the breast pocket of her overalls; she will

feed it to Billy for his breakfast.

Back in the kitchen she takes off her boots; she leaves the overalls on, because she's cold. She slides another stick of wood into the stove, warming her hands. Should she have her own

breakfast first, or wait and have it while Billy has his? Should she wake him at all?

Sometimes

he's mad if she does, other times he's mad if she doesn't. But today is a city day for her, so if

she wakes him up now she can get him fed before she catches the ferry. That way he won't spend the morning asleep, and blame her later.

She climbs the stairs and walks gently along the hall; when she gets to the doorway she stands for

a moment, just looking. She likes looking at Billy in the same way that she likes looking at the

hens. Billy too is beautiful; and just as the hens are the essence of hen-ness, Billy is the essence of

Billy-ness. (Like the hens, too, he is a little frowsier now than when she first encountered him.

This also may have something to do with the angle of the sun.)

He lies on their mattress, the sleeping bag pulled up to his neck. His left arm is flung across his eyes; the tan on it is fading, although it's still dark, this arm, and pelted with short golden hairs, like a honeybee covered with pollen. His short yellow beard shines in the white room, in

the strange light from the mist outside - heraldic, the beard of a saint, or of a knight in an
243

old picture. Or like something on a stamp. Charis loves to watch Billy at such moments, when

he's quiet and still. It's easier to maintain her view of him that way than when he's talking and moving around.

Billy must sense her flashlight gaze on him. His arm moves away from his eyes, the eyes themselves open, such blue! Like forget-me-nots, like mountains in the distance, on postcards,

like thick ice. He smiles at her, uncovering Viking teeth.

"What time is it?" he says. "I don't know," says Charis.

"You've got a watch, don't you?" he says. Don'tcha. How can she explain about the mist?

Also that she can't take the time to look at her watch, because she's looking at him?

Looking is

not a casual thing. It takes all her attention.

He gives a small sigh, of exasperation or desire, it's so hard to tell the difference. "Come here," he says.

It must be desire. Charis goes to the mattress, sits down beside Billy, smooths back the hair

on his forehead, hair so yellow it looks painted. It's still amazing to her that the colour doesn't

come off on her skin. Although her own hair is blonde as well, it's a different blonde, pale and

bleached-out, moon to his sun. Billy's hair glows from within.

"I said here," says Billy. He pulls her down on top of him, zeroes in on her mouth, encircles her in his golden arms; squeezes her tight.

"The egg!" says Charis breathlessly, remembering it. The egg breaks.

XXX

That's what Billy was like, at the time. He was always after her then. In the mornings, in the afternoons, at night, it made no

244

difference. Maybe it was just a sort of nervousness, or boredom, because he didn't have that

much to fill up the time; or it might have been the tension of being there illegally. He would wait for her at the ferry dock and walk back to the house with her and grab her before she even had a chance to put the groceries down, pressing her back against the kitchen counter, his

hands pulling up her long flimsy skirt. His urgency confused her. God I love you, God I love you,

he would say at these times. Sometimes he did things that hurt - slapping her, pinching.

Sometimes it hurt anyway, but since she didn't mention this, how was he supposed to know about it?

What had she felt, herself? It's hard to sort out. Maybe if there had been less, less plain old sex - if she had felt less like a trampoline with someone jumping up and down on it - she would have learned to enjoy it more, in time. If she could relax. As it was she merely detached

herself, floated her spirit off to one side, filled herself with another essence - apple, plum - until

he'd finished and it was safe to re-enter her body. She liked being held afterwards, she liked

being stroked and kissed and told she was beautiful, a thing Billy sometimes did. Once in a while she cried, which Billy seemed to find normal. Her tears had nothing to do with Billy; he didn't make her sad, he made her happy! She told him that, and he was satisfied and didn't push her for answers. They talked about other things; they never talked about that.

But what was it supposed to be like? What would have been normal? She had no idea.

Every so often they smoked dope - not a lot, because they couldn't afford much of it, and when they had some it usually came from one of Billy's friends - and at those times she got an

inkling, an intimation, a small flutter. But it hardly counted, because her skin felt like rubber then anyway, like a rubber suit she had on with a grid of tiny electric wires running through it, and Billy's hands were like inflated comic-book gloves, and she would get involved with

245

the convolutions of his car or the whorl of golden hairs on his chest, and whatever her body was up to was no concern of hers. One of Billy's friends said that there was no sense in wasting

good hash on Charis because she was stoned all the time anyway. Charis didn't think that was

fair, although it was true that being stoned didn't make as much difference for her as it seemed

to make for other people.

Billy wasn't the first man she'd slept with, of course. She'd slept with several, because you were supposed to and she didn't want to be considered uptight, or selfish about her body, and

she'd even lived with one man, although it hadn't lasted. He'd ended by calling her a frigid bitch, as if she was doing him some injury or other, which puzzled her. Hadn't she been affectionate enough, hadn't she nodded her head when he talked, hadn't she cooked the meals

and laid herself down compliantly whenever he wanted her to, hadn't she washed the sheets afterwards, hadn't she tended him? She was not an ungiving person.

The good part about Billy was that this thing about her, this abnormality - she knew it must

be one, because she'd listened to other women talking - didn't bother him. In fact he appeared to expect it. He thought women were like that: without urges, without needs. He didn't pester her about it, he didn't question her, he didn't try to fix her, as the other men had done - tinkering away at her as if she was a lawnmower. He loved her the way she was. Without anything being said, he simply assumed, as she did, that what she felt about it didn't matter. Both of them were agreed on that. They both wanted the same thing: for Billy to be happy. Charis lies under the sleeping bag, propped on one elbow, touching lightly the face of Billy, who has his eyes closed and may be on his way back to sleep. Maybe one of these days she will

have a baby, Billy's baby; it will look like him. She's thought about it before - how it would just

happen, without

246

any decision or plan, and how he would stay with her then, stay on and on, and they could keep living here, like this, forever. There's even a small room in the house where she could put

the baby. At the moment it's full of stuff- some of it is Billy's, but most of it is Charis's, because despite her wish not to be pinned down by possessions she has a number of cardboard

boxes full of them. But that could all be cleared out and she could put a little cradle in there, with rockers on it, or a rush laundry basket. Not a crib, though; nothing with bars.

She runs her fingers over Billy's forehead, his nose, his gently smiling mouth; he doesn't know it, but this touching she does is not only tender, not only compassionate, but possessive.

Although he is not a prisoner, he is in a way a prisoner of war. It's war that has brought him here, war that keeps him in hiding, war that makes him stay put. She can't help thinking of him

as a captive; her captive, because his very existence here depends on her. He is hers, to do with

as she will, as much hers as if he were a traveller from another planet, trapped on Earth in this

dome of artificial interplanetary air that is her house. If she were to ask him to leave, what would happen to him? He'd be caught, deported, sent back, to where the air is heavier. He would implode.

He might as well be from another planet, because he's from the United States; not only that, but from some dim and esoteric part of it, as mysterious to Charis as the dark side of the

moon. Kentucky? Maryland? Virginia? He's lived in all three places, but what do those words

mean? Nothing to Charis, except that they verge on the South, a word also lacking in solid content. Charis has a few images connected with it - mansions, wisteria, and, once upon a time,

segregation - she has seen movies, back in her other life, before she was Charis - but Billy does

not seem to have lived in a mansion or to have segregated anybody. On the contrary, his father

was almost run out of town (which town?) for being what Billy calls a "liberal,"

247

which is not at all the same thing as the solid, the orthodox, the bland-faced and interchangeable Liberals that appear on Toronto election posters with such stultifying monotony.

The United States is just across the lake, of course, and on clear days you can almost see it

-

a sort of line, a sort of haze. Charis has even been there, on a high-school day trip to Niagara

Falls, but that part of it looked disappointingly similar; not like the part Billy comes from, which must be very strange. Strange, and more dangerous - that much is clear - and maybe because of that, superior. The things that happen there are said to matter in the world.

Unlike

the things that happen here.

So Charis runs her fingers over Billy, gloating a little, because here he is, in her bed, in her hands, her very own mythological creature, odd as unicorns, her very own captive draft dodger,

part of a thousand headline stories, part of history, tucked away in secret in her house, the house for which she alone has had to sign the rental lease because nobody must know

Billy's

name or where he is. Some of the draft dodgers have visas, but others - such as Billy - don't,

and once you're inside this country you can't get a visa, you'd have to go back across the border

and apply from there, and then you'd be nabbed for sure.

Billy has explained all this; also that the Mounties are not really the Mounties of Charis's childhood, not the picturesque men on horseback, in red uniforms, upright and true, who always get their man. Instead they are devious and cunning and in cahoots with the US government, and if they put their finger on Billy he's a dead duck, because - and she must never tell this to anyone, even his friends here don't know about it - dodging the draft wasn't the only thing he did. What else? He blew things up. A couple of people too, but they were an

accident. That's why the Mounties are after him.

If he's lucky they'll go through the extradition process, and he might have a chance. If unlucky they'll just tip off the CIA

248

and Billy will be kidnapped, some dark night, and whisked back across the border, maybe across the lake in a speedboat, the way the Canadians smuggled liquor during Prohibition, he's heard of guys they've done that to - he'll be spirited away and thrown into jail and that will be the end of him. Someone will cut his throat, in the shower, for being a draft dodger. That's what happens.

When he says things like this he holds onto Charis very tightly, and she puts her arms around him and says, "I won't let them," although she knows she has no power to prevent such a thing. But just saying this has a soothing effect, on both of them. She doesn't quite believe it anyway, this doom-laden scenario of Billy's. Things like that might happen in the United States - anything can happen there, where the riot police shoot people and the crime rate is so high - but not here. Not on the Island, where there are so many trees and people don't lock the door when they go out. Not in this country, familiar to her and drab, undramatic and flat. Not in her house, with the hens cooing peacefully in the yard. No harm can come to her, or to Billy either, with the hens watching over them, feathery guardian spirits. The hens are good luck.

So she says, "I'll keep you here with me," even though she knows that Billy is an unwilling voyager. She suspects something worse, as well: that she herself is just a sort of way station

for him, a temporary convenience, like the native brides of soldiers who are posted abroad. Although he doesn't know it yet, she isn't his real life. But he is hers.

This is painful.

"Well." says Charis, sliding her mind quickly away, because pain is an illusion and should be

circumvented, "how about some breakfast?"

"You're beautiful," says Billy. "Bacon, huh? We got any coffee?" Billy drinks real coffee, with caffeine in it. He makes

249

fun of Charis's herbal teas and won't eat salad, not even the lettuce Charis grows herself.

"Rabbit food," he calls it. "Fit for nothing but little bunnies, and women." Li'l.

"There would have been an egg," says Charis reproachfully, and Billy laughs. (The overalls with their breast pocket full of squished egg are of course no longer on Charis but on the floor.

She will wash them, later. She will avoid hot water or the egg will scramble. She will have to turn the pocket inside out.)

"Can't make an omelette without breaking a few eggs," he says. Cain't. Charis turns the sound over, silently in her mouth, tasting it. Cherishing, storing away. She would like his name

to be Billy Joe or Billy Bob, one of those double-barrelled Southern names, as in films. She hugs him.

"Billy, you are so . . .:" she says. She wants to say young, because he is young, he's seven years younger than she is; but he doesn't like being reminded of it, he'd think she's pulling rank. Or she could say innocent, which he'd find even more of an insult: he'd think it was a comment on his sexual inexperience.

What she means is pristine. What she means is his unscratched surface. Despite the suffering he's gone through and is still going through, there's something shiny about him. shiny

and new. Or else impermeable. She herself is so penetrable; sharp edges stick into her, she

bruises easily, her inner skin is puffy and soft, like marshmallows. She's covered all over with

tiny feelers like the feelers on ants: they wave, they test the air, they touch and recoil, they warn

her. Billy has no such feelers. He doesn't need them. Whatever slams into him bounces right

off- either he dismisses it, or instead of hurting him it makes him angry. It's a kind of hardness,

which exists quite apart from any sadness or melancholy or even guilt that he may be experiencing at the time.

Maybe it's this: his own sadness and melancholy and guilt are his, and therefore important to him, but they're contained inside. Those of other people don't get in. Whereas Charis is a 250

screen door, an open one at that, and everything blows right through.

"I'm so what?" says Billy, grinning. Ahm. Charis smiles back at him.

"So ... well, you know," she says.

Charis did not exactly meet Billy. Instead he was allotted to her, at the Furrows Food Co-op, where she knew a good many people although not well. It was a woman called Bernice who got

her into it. Bernice was Peace Movement and in some church or other, and they were parcelling out the draft dodgers they had collected, sticking them here and there in people's houses, like the English children who were shipped across the ocean during the Second World

War. Charis just happened to be at the co-op that day, and Bernice more or less raffled off the

draft dodgers, and Billy was left over, him and another boy (Bernice called them "boys"), so Charis said she would put them up for a few nights, in her sublet Queen Street warehouse room, one on the broken-sprunged Goodwill sofa she had then and one on the floor, just until

they could find some other place, if Bernice would supply the sleeping bags because Charis didn't have any extras.

Charis did not do this for political reasons: she didn't believe in politics, in getting involved in an activity that caused you to have such negative emotions. She didn't approve of wars, or of thinking about them. So she didn't understand the Vietnam War or want to understand it - although some of it had seeped into her head, despite her precautions, because it was in the air

molecules - and above all she didn't watch it on TV She didn't even have a TV, and she did not

read newspapers because they were too upsetting and anyway there was nothing she could do

about all that misery. So her reason for taking Billy in had nothing to do with any of that.

Instead she did it out of a sense of hospitality. She felt an obligation to be kind to strangers, 251

especially strangers who were down on their luck. Also it would have been too weird to have

been the only person at the co-op who refused to take anyone in.

So that was how it started. After a few days the other boy moved out and Billy stayed; and then after a few more days she realized she was expected to go to bed with him. He didn't push it; in that early time he was diffident and shy, disoriented, uncertain of himself. He'd thought it was going to be more or less the same on this side of the border as on the other side, only safer, and when it turned out that it wasn't either one of those things he was confused and upset. He realized he'd done something monumental, something he couldn't reverse; that he'd landed himself in exile, perhaps forever. He'd made life hard for his family

-

they'd supported his decision about the draft but not about the other stuff, the explosives, and they were getting what he called "a lot of flak." Also he'd deserted his country, a notion that has a good deal more meaning for him than it does for Charis, because in Billy's schools

they started the day with their hands over their hearts, saluting their flag, instead of praying to

God as they did at Charis's schools. For Billy his country was a kind of God, an idea that Charis finds idolatrous and even barbaric. She finds the standard God with his white beard and anger and lamb sacrifices and death angels barbaric too, of course. She has gone beyond

all that. - Her God is oval.

Also Billy worried about his friends back there, back home; guys he'd gone to school with, who hadn't escaped with him and were probably, even now, on their way across the sea or being shot at in rice paddies or blown up by guerrillas as they walked along some hot mud road. He felt he'd betrayed them. He knew the war was wrong and that what he'd done was right, but he felt like a coward anyway. He was homesick. A lot of the time he wanted to go back.

This was how he talked to Charis, in fits and starts, in bits

252

and pieces. He said he didn't expect her to understand, but she did understand some of it. She

understood his emotions, which came at her in a deluge - watery, chaotic, a melancholy blue in

colour, like a great wave of tears. He was so lost, so wounded, how could she refuse to offer

him whatever comfort she had?

xXXI

Things have changed since then. Since they moved to the Island, and into this house. Billy is still nervous, but less so. He seems more rooted. Also he has friends now, a whole network of

exiles like himself. They even have meetings, on the mainland; Billy goes over there a couple of

times a week. They help out the new arrivals, they pass them around and hide them out, and Charis has had to put up more than one of them, briefly, on the living-room sofa - a different sofa now, still second-hand but with better springs. Living with someone, Charis has discovered, leads to real furniture, although having real furniture was one of the things she renounced years ago.

Occasionally the exiles forgather at her house to drink beer and talk and smoke dope, though they take care to keep the parties quiet: the last thing they need is the police. They come across on the ferry and they bring their girlfriends, stringyhaired girls quite a lot younger

than Charis, girls who take baths in Charis's bathroom because they live in places where they

don't have bathrooms of their own, and they use up Charis's few towels and leave rings in Charis's old claw-footed bathtub. Dirt is an illusion, it's just one way of thinking about matter, and Charis knows she shouldn't be upset about it, but if she has to deal with an illusion of dirt

she would rather it be her own dirt, not the dirt of these vacant-eyed girls. The men, or boys, refer to these girls as "my old lady," though they are the

253

opposite of old, which makes Charis feel some better about the fact that Billy calls her by this

name; as well.

Billy's group is always talking about plans. They think they should do something, take some action, but what kind? They've gone so far as to make up a list of names, the names of the others in the group, though they're first names only and false names at that. Charis - peeking at

Billy's copy of the list, although she shouldn't have - was taken aback to discover that some of

them were women's names: Edith, Ethel, Emma. During the parties, as she gets cold beer out

of her tiny refrigerator, as she dumps chips and mixed nuts from the co-op into bowls, as she

finds the shampoo for some girl who wants to wash her hair, as she sits on the floor beside Billy, breathing in second-hand pot smoke and smiling and gazing into space, she has listened

in, she has overheard, and she knows that Billy is really Edith, or vice versa. He's named after

Edith Cavell, some person in the past. There are telephone numbers, too; some of them are scrawled on the wall beside the phone, but Billy tells her it's safe because they're just the numbers of places where you can leave messages. They also have a plan to put out a newspaper, although there are several draft-dodger newspapers already. A lot of other guys got

here before Billy and his newfound friends.

Charis isn't sure all these cloak-and-dagger props, the sneaking around and the codes and the pretend names, are really necessary. It's like kids playing. But the activity seems to give Billy

more energy, and a purpose in life. He's venturing out more, he's less cooped up. On the days

when Charis thinks the danger isn't real she rejoices in this, but on the days when she believes in it she worries. And every time Billy steps on board the ferry to go to the mainland, there's a corner of her that panics. Billy is like a tightrope walker, stepping carelessly blindfolded along a clothesline strung between two thirty-storey buildings, thinking he's only four feet above the ground. He

254

believes that his actions, his words, his tiny little newspaper, can change things, can change things

out there in the world. Charis knows that there is no change possible in the world at large, no

change for the better that is. Events are deceptive, they are part of a cycle; to get caught up in

them is to be trapped in a whirlpool. But what does Billy know about the relentless malice of the

physical universe? He is too young.

Charis feels that the only thing she herself can change is her own body, and through it her spirit.

She wishes to free her spirit: this is what led her to yoga. She wants to rearrange her body, get rid

of the heaviness hidden deep within it, that core of evil treasure she buried some time ago and

has never dug up; she wants to make her body lighter and lighter, release it so that she's almost

floating. She knows it's possible. She gives the yoga lessons because they pay for the rent and the

phone and for the bulk food she gets cut-rate through her work at the co-op, but she gives them

also because she wants to help other people. Other women, really, because most of the people

who take the classes are women. They too must have heavy metals hidden in them, they too must

yearn for lightness. Although this class isn't about weight loss: she tells them that straight out,

right at the beginning.

After she's dressed, after she's cooked Billy his bacon and toast and coffee, Charis packs her

leotard and tights -into her Peruvian carry-bag and runs around the house unearthing spare change for the trip from all the places where she's hidden it, for emergencies such as today, when

she's run out of cash. The mist has evaporated now and the weak November sunlight is filtering

through the grey overcast, so she can trust her watch again and she doesn't miss the ferry. She

hardly ever misses it anyway unless it's a case of Billy, Billy and his spontaneous and overpowering urges. What can she tell him then? I have to work or else we don't eat? That doesn't go

over too well: he thinks it's a

255

criticism of him because he doesn't have a job, and then he sulks. He prefers to believe that she's like a lily of the field; that she neither toils nor spins; that bacon and coffee are simply

produced by her, like leaves from a tree.

The yoga classes are held in the apartment above the co-op, or what used to be an apartment. Right now two of the rooms are offices, one for the co-op, one for a small poetry magazine called Earth Germinations, and the big front room is kept for meetings and for classes like the yoga ones. Charis will teach only ten people at a time: any more would overload her circuits, break her focus. They bring their own towels and mats, and usually they already have their leotards on under their clothes so they don't have to change. Charis gets there before the others, changes in the bathroom, and spreads out her mat, which she keeps in a cupboard in the co-op office. The old hardwood floor gives you splinters if you aren't careful.

Her first work is to abolish her surroundings. The faded wallpaper with the mauve trellis pattern on it must recede, the squares of darker wallpaper left by former pictures, the stale smell of used house and of the dank pee-stained carpet on the stairs coming up and of the lunch relics in the office wastebaskets, which nobody ever empties. The traffic noises from outside must go, the voices from the street and from downstairs - she erases them from her mind with a firm hand, as if they're on a blackboard. She lies down on her back, knees bent, arms loose overhead, and concentrates on her breathing, preparing, centring herself. The breath must go in and down, fully in and down to the solar plexus. The furtive scurrying trivial mind must be shut off: The I must be transcended. The self must be cut loose. It must drift.

The first class goes as usual. Charis knows she has a good voice for this, low and reassuring, and a good pace. "Honour the spine," she murmurs. "Salute the sun:" The sun she

means is inside the body. She uses her voice and also her hands, a
256

touch here, a touch there, nudging the bodies into the right poses. To each individual woman

she speaks in a whisper, so as not to call attention or embarrass her or interrupt the concentration of the others. The room fills with the sound of breathing, like wavelets on a shore, and with the scent of tensed muscles. Charis feels energy flowing out of her, through her fingers, into the other bodies. She doesn't move much - this is not what anyone else would call exertion - but at the end of the hour and a half she's exhausted.

She has an hour's break, to replenish herself. She drinks an orange-and-carrot juice from the juice bar downstairs to get some living enzymes into her system, and helps the others sort

out the dried-bean pricing, and then it's time for her second class. Charis never much notices

who is in which class; she counts to ten and registers the colours of the leotards, and once she's into the class she notes the particularities of the bodies and especially the spines and their wrong positioning, but the faces are not important to her, because the face is the individualism, the very thing Charis wants to help these women transcend. Also, the first exercises are done on the floor, with the eyes closed. So she's a quarter of the way through before she realizes that there's a new person, someone she's never seen before: a dark-haired

woman in an indigo leotard and plum-coloured tights, who - strange for such a dimly lighted day - is wearing sunglasses.

This woman is tall, and thin as a razor, so thin Charis can see her ribcage right through the leotard, each rib in high relief as if carved, with a line of darkness beneath it. Her knees and elbows stick out like knots in rope, and the poses, as she performs them, are not fluid but practically geometrical, cages made of coat-hangers. Her skin is white as mushrooms, and a

dark-light phosphorescence glimmers around her like the sheen on bad meat. Charis knows

unhealth when she sees it: this woman needs a lot more than just one yoga class. A big hit of
257

vitamin C and a dollop of sunlight would-be a start, but they wouldn't even begin to touch what's wrong with her.

What's wrong with her is partly an attitude of the soul: the sunglasses are its manifestation, they symbolize a barrier to inner vision. So just before the lotus meditation Charis goes over

and whispers to her, "Wouldn't you like to take your sunglasses off? They must be a distraction:"

For answer the woman slips the glasses down, and Charis gets a shock. The woman's left eye is blackened. Black and blue, and half shut. The other eye regards her, hurt, wet, appealing.

"Oh," Charis breathes. "Sorry." She winces: she can feel the blow on her own flesh, her own eye.

The woman smiles, a harrowing smile in that emaciated and damaged face. "Aren't you Karen?" she whispers.

Charis doesn't know how to explain that she is but she isn't. She is once-Karen. So' she says, "Yes," and looks more closely, because how would this woman recognize her? "I'm Zenia," the woman says. And she is.

Charis and Zenia sit at one of the little tables beside the juice bar at the far end of the co-op.

"What would you recommend?" says Zenia. "This is all new to me," and Charis, flattered by this call upon her expertise, orders her up a papaya-and-orange, with a dash of lemon in it and

some brewer's yeast. Zenia keeps her glasses on and Charis doesn't blame her. Still, it's hard to talk with someone whose eyes she can't see.

She does remember Zenia, of course. Everyone in McClung Hall knew who Zenia was; even Charis, who drifted through her university years as if through an airport. Educationally she was a transient, and she left after three years without completing her degree: whatever it

was that she needed to be taught, it wasn't on the curriculum there. Or maybe she wasn't ready

for it. Charis believes that when you are ready to learn a thing the

258

right teacher will appear, or rather will be sent to you. This has worked out for her so far, more

or less, and the only reason she isn't learning anything at the moment is that she's so fully occupied with Billy.

Though maybe Billy is a teacher, in a way. She just hasn't figured out exactly what she's supposed to be learning from him. How to love, perhaps? How to love a man. Though she already does love him, so what next?

Zenia sips her juice, with the two ovals of her dark glasses turned towards Charis. Charis isn't sure what she can say to her. She didn't really know Zenia at university, she never spoke

to her - Zenia was older, she was ahead of Charis, and she was in with all those artistic, intellectual people - but Charis remembers her, so beautiful and confident, striding around campus with her boyfriend Stew, and then later with short little Tony as well. What Charis remembers about Tony is that Tony followed her one night when Charis went outside to sit under a tree on the McClung lawn. Probably Tony thought Charis was sleepwalking; which showed some insight, because Charis had certainly done some sleepwalking in the past, though

she wasn't doing it then. -

This action of Tony's revealed a good heart, a quality much more important to Charis than Tony's academic brilliance, which was what she was known for. Zenia was known for other things as well - most notoriously for living with Stew, right out in the open, at a time when such things were not done. So much has changed. It's the married people, now, who are considered immoral. The nukes, they are called, for nuclear family. Radioactive, potentially lethal; a big leap from Home Sweet Home, but in Charis's opinion more appropriate. Zenia too has changed. In addition to being thin she's ill, and in addition to being ill she is cowed somehow, beaten, defeated. Her shoulders hunch inwards protectively, her fingers are

awkward claws, the corners of her mouth droop downwards.

259

Charis wouldn't have known her. It's as if the former Zenia, the lovely Zenia, the Zenia of obvious flesh, has been burned away, leaving this bone core.

Charis doesn't like to question - she doesn't like to intrude on the selfhood of others - but Zenia is so drained of energy it's unlikely she will say anything at all, otherwise. So Charis chooses something non-invasive. "What brought you to my class?" she asks.

"I heard about it from a friend," says Zenia. Every word seems an effort. "I thought it might help."

"Help?" says Charis.

"With the cancer," says Zenia.

"Cancer," says Charis. It isn't even a question, because didn't she know it? There's no mistaking that whiteness, that sickly flicker. An imbalance of the soul.

Zenia smiles crookedly. "I beat it once before," she says, "but it's come back."

Now Charis remembers something: didn't Zenia disappear suddenly at the end of the year? The second year Charis lived in McClung Hall, that's when it was: Zenia vanished without an explanation, into thin air. The girls used to talk about it over breakfast and Charis would listen

in, on the rare occasions when she bothered with listening, or with breakfast. They didn't have

much there that she could eat: bran flakes was about it. The gossip was that Zenia had run away with another man, dumping Stew flat and taking some of his money as well, but now Charis divines the real truth: it was the cancer. Zenia went away without telling anyone about it

because she didn't want a lot of fuss. She went away to cure herself, and to do that you need to

be alone, to be free of interruption. Charis can understand that.

"How did you do it, the first time?" says Charis. "Do what?" says Zenia, a little sharply.

"Beat it," says Charis. "The cancer."

260

"They did an operation," says Zenia. "They took out - they did a hysterectomy, I can never have babies. But it didn't work. So then I went to the mountains, by myself. I stopped eating meat, I cut out alcohol. I just had to concentrate. On getting well."

This sounds exactly right to Charis. Mountains, no meat. "And now?" she says.

"I thought I was better," says Zenia. Her voice has sunk to a hoarse whisper. "I thought I was strong enough. So I came back. I've been living with Stew - with West. I guess I let him take me back into our old way of living, you know, he drinks a lot - and the cancer came back. He can't take it - he really can't! A lot of people can't stand to be around sickness, they're afraid of it." Charis nods: she knows this, she knows this deeply, at the level of her cells. "He just denies that there's anything wrong with me," Zenia continues. "He tries to get me to eat ... mounds of food, steak and butter, all those animal fats. They make me nauseated, I can't, I just can't!"

"Oh," says Charis. This is a horrible story, and one that has the ring of truth. So few people understand about animal fats. No, more: so few people understand about anything. "How awful," she says, which is only a pallid reflection of what she feels. She is troubled; she is on the verge of tears; above all she is helpless.

"Then he gets angry" Zenia goes on. "He gets furious with me, and I feel so weak ... he hates me to cry, it just gets him angrier. He was the one who did this:" She gestures towards

her eye. "It makes me so ashamed, I feel like I'm the one responsible..."

Charis tries to remember Stew, or West, whose name once changed so abruptly, just like her own. What she sees is a tall man, a somewhat inturned and unconnected man, gentle as

a giraffe. She can't picture him hitting anyone, much less Zenia; but people can have deceptive exteriors. Men especially. They

261

can put on a good act, they can make you believe they are model citizens and that they are right

and you are wrong. They can fool everyone and make you seem like a liar. West, no doubt, is

one of these. Indignation rises in her, the beginning of anger. But anger is unhealthy for her so

she pushes it away.

"He says if I really have cancer I should have another operation, or else chemotherapy," says

Zenia. "But I know I could heal myself again, if only . . .:" she trails off. "I don't think I can drink any more of this right now," she says. She nudges the juice glass away. "Thank you ...

you've been really nice." She reaches across the table and touches Charis's hand. Her thin white

fingers look cold but they are hot, hot as coals. Then she pushes back her chair, takes up her

coat and purse, and hurries away, almost staggering. Her head is bent, the hair is falling over

her face like a veil, and Charis is sure she's crying.

Charis wants to jump up and run after her and bring her back. This desire is so strong in her it's like a fist on her neck. She wants to sit Zenia down again in her chair and put both hands on her, and summon up all her energy, the energy of the light, and heal her, right on the

spot. But she knows she can't do that, so she doesn't move.

On Friday Zenia isn't in the yoga class, and Charis is anxious _ about her. Maybe she's collapsed, or maybe West has hit her again, this time more than once. Maybe she's in the hospital with multiple fractures. Charis takes the ferry boat to the Island, fretting all the way. Now she's feeling inadequate: there must have been something she could have said or done,

something better than what she did do. A glass of juice was not enough.

That evening the fog returns, and with it a chilly drizzle, and Charis makes a good fire in the stove and turns on the furnace as well, and Billy wants her to come to bed early. She's brushing her teeth in the drafty bathroom downstairs when she hears a knock at the kitchen door. What she thinks is that it's one of

262

Billy's group, with yet another draft dodger to be parked overnight on her living-room sofa. She has to admit she's getting a bit tired of them. For one thing, they never help with the dishes.

But it's not a draft dodger. It's Zenia, her head framed in the wet glass square of the door like a photo under water. Her hair is soaked and streaking down her face, her teeth are chattering, her sunglasses are gone, and her eye, purple now, is piteous. There's a fresh cut on her lip.

The door opens as if by itself, and she stands in the doorway, swaying slightly. "He threw me out," she whispers. "I don't want to disturb you ... I just didn't know where else to go." Mutely Charis holds out her arms, and Zenia stumbles over the threshold and collapses into them.

XXXII

It's a sunless noon. Charis is in her garden, watched by the hens, who peer greedily through the hexagons of their wire fence, and by the remaining cabbages, goggling at her like three dull green goblin-heads emerging from the ground. The garden in November has a mangy, thumbled appearance: wilted marigolds, nasturtium leaves faded a pale yellow, the stumps of

broccoli, the unripe tomatoes frost-killed and mushy, with silvery slug tracks wandering here and there.

Charis doesn't mind this vegetable disarray. It's all ferment, all fertilizer. She lifts her spade, shoves it into the earth, and steps on the top edge of its blade with her right foot in Billy's rubber boot, digging in. Then she heaves, grunting. Then she turns over the shovelful of soil. Worms suck themselves back into their tunnels, a white grub curls. Charis picks it up and tosses it relentlessly over the fence, in

263

for the gabbling hens. All life is sacred but hens are more sacred than grubs.

The hens fluster and racket and abuse one another, and chase the one with the grub.

Charis

once thought it might be a good spiritual discipline to refuse to feed her hens anything she wouldn't eat herself, but she has since decided that this would be pointless. The ground-up shells, for instance, the crushed bones - hens need them to make eggs, but Charis doesn't. It's the wrong season of the year to be turning the garden. She should wait till spring, when the new weeds poke through; she'll have to do it all over again at that time. But this is the only

way she can be out of the house without either Zenia or Billy wanting to come with her. Each is eager to be with her alone, away from the other one. If she tries to go for a walk, just to be by herself for a short time, just to unwind, there's a rush for the door: a subdued, oblique rush

(Zenia) or a gangling, obvious one (Billy). Then there's a psychic collision, and Charis is forced

to choose. It's bothering her a lot. But luckily, neither one of them has any great desire to help

her dig up the garden. Billy doesn't like mucking in the dirt - he says why do so much work, because all that comes up is vegetables - and Zenia of course is in no shape. She is managing to

take feeble, occasional walks, down to the lakeshore and back, but even those exhaust her. Zenia has been here for a week now, sleeping on the sofa by night, resting on it by day. The evening of her arrival was almost festive - Charis ran a hot bath for her and gave her one of her

own white cotton nightgowns to put on, and hung her wet clothes up on the hooks behind the stove to dry, and after Zenia was finished with the bath and had put on the nightgown Charis wrapped her in a blanket and sat her in a chair beside the stove, and combed her wet hair, and

made her a hot milk with honey. It pleased Charis to do these things; she experienced herself

as competent and virtuous, overflowing with good will

264

and good energy. It pleased her to give this energy to someone so obviously in need of it as Zenia. But by the time she'd settled Zenia on the sofa and had gone upstairs to bed, Billy was

angry with her, and he's been angry ever since. He's made it clear that he doesn't want Zenia in the house at all.

"What's she doing here?" he whispered that first night. "It's just for a bit," said Charis, whispering too because she didn't want Zenia to hear them and feel unwanted. "We've had lots

of others. On the same sofa! It's no different:"

"It's way different," said Billy. "They don't have any place else to go:"

"Neither does she," said Charis. The different thing, she was thinking, was that the others were Billy's friends and Zenia was hers. Well, not friend exactly. Responsibility.

That was before Billy had even laid eyes on Zenia, or spoken a single word to her. The next day he'd grunted a surly "Morning" over the scrambled eggs - not home-grown, unfortunately,

the hens had dried up - and the toast with apple jelly that Charis was serving to both of them.

He'd hardly looked at Zenia where she sat hunched over, still in Charis's nightgown. with a blanket wrapped around her, sipping her weak tea. If he had looked, thought Charis, he would

have relented, because Zenia was so pitiable. Her eye was still discoloured and swollen, and

you could practically count the blue veins on the backs of her hands.

"Get her out of here," said Billy when Zenia had gone to the bathroom. "Just out:"

"Shh," said Charis. "She'll hear you!"

"What do we know about her, anyway?" said Billy.

"She has cancer," said Charis, as if this was all anyone needed to know.

"Then she should be in a hospital," said Billy.

"She doesn't believe in them," said Charis, who didn't either.

265

"Bullshit," said Billy.

This remark struck Charis as not only ungenerous and crude, but faintly sacrilegious as well.

"She has that black eye," she murmured. The eye was living proof of something or other. Of Zenia's neediness, or else her goodness. Of her status.

"I didn't give it to her," said Billy. "Let her go eat someone else's food." Charis was incapable of mentioning that if anyone ought to decide who ate what around this place it should be her, since she was the one who either grew it or paid for it herself.

"He doesn't like me, does he?" said Zenia, when Billy in his turn was out of hearing. Her voice quivered, her eyes were filling. "I'd better go . . .:"

"Of course he does! It's just his way," said Charis warmly. "Now you stay right where you are!"

It took Charis a while to figure out why Billy was so hostile to Zenia. At first she thought it was because he was afraid of her - afraid she would tell on him, tip off the wrong people, turn

him in; or that she would just say something to someone by accident, something indiscreet. Loose lips sink ships used to be a slogan, during the war, the old war; it was on posters, and

Charis's Aunt Viola used to quote it as a sort of joke, to her friends, in the late forties. So Charis explained all that to Zenia, how precarious Billy felt and how difficult things were for him. She even told Zenia about the bombs, about blowing things up, and about how Billy

might get kidnapped by the Mounties. Zenia promised not to tell. She said she understood perfectly.

"I'll be careful, cross my heart," she said. "But Karen - sorry Charis - how did you get mixed up with them?"

"Mixed up?" said Charis.

"With the draft dodgers," said Zenia. "The revolutionaries. You never struck me as a very political person. At university, I

266

mean. Not that there were a whole bunch of revolutionaries, around that dump."

It hadn't occurred to Charis that Zenia would have taken any notice of her at all, back then, back in her vague, semi-forgotten university days, when she was still Karen, outwardly at least. She hadn't participated in anything, she hadn't stood out. She had stayed in the shadows, but it turned out that Zenia at least had spotted her there and had considered her worthy of notice, and she was touched. Zenia must have been a sensitive person; more sensitive than people gave her credit for.

"I'm not," said Charis. "I wasn't political at all!"

"I was," said Zenia. "I was totally anti-bourgeois, back then! A real bohemian fellow-traveller." She frowned a little, then laughed. "Why not, they had the best parties!"

"Well," said Charis, "I'm not mixed up. I don't understand any of those things. I just live with Billy, that's all:"

"Sort of like a gun moll," said Zenia, who was feeling a little better. It was a warmish day, for November, so Charis had decided it was safe for Zenia to go out. They were down by the

lake, watching the gulls; Zenia had walked the whole way without once holding onto Charis's arm. Charis had offered to get her some new sunglasses - Zenia had left the old ones behind,

the night she ran away - but she hardly needed them any more: her eye had faded to a yellowy-blue, like a washedout ink stain.

"A what?" said Charis.

"Shit," said Zenia, smiling, "if living with someone isn't mixed up, I don't know what is:"

But Charis didn't care what people called things. Anyway, she wasn't listening to Zenia, she was watching her smile.

Zenia is smiling more, now. Charis feels as if that smile has been accomplished single-handedly by her, Charis, and by all the work she's been putting in: the fruit drinks, the cabbage juice

267

made from her own cabbages, ground up fine and strained through a sieve, the special baths she

prepares, the gentle yoga stretches, the carefully spaced walks in the fresh air. All those positive

energies are ranging themselves against the cancer cells, good soldiers against bad, light against

darkness; Charis herself is taking meditation time every day, on Zenia's behalf, to visualize that

exact same result. And it's working, it is! Zenia has more colour now, more energy. Although still

very thin and weak, she is visibly improving.

She knows it and she's grateful. "You're doing so much for me," she says to Charis, almost every day. "I don't deserve it; I mean, I'm a total stranger, you hardly know me:"

"That's all right," says Charis awkwardly. She blushes a little when Zenia says these things. She

isn't used to people thanking her for what she does, and she has a belief that it isn't necessary. At

the same time, the sensation is very agreeable; also at the same time, it strikes her that Billy could be showing a bit more gratitude himself, for everything she's done for him. Instead of which he scowls at her and doesn't eat his bacon. He wants her to make two breakfasts - one for Zenia and a separate one for him - so he doesn't have to sit at the same table with Zenia in the mornings.

"The way she sucks up to you makes me puke," he said yesterday. Charis knows now why he

says such things. He's jealous. He's afraid Zenia will come between them, that she'll somehow

take Charis's full attention away from him. It's childish of him to feel like that. After all, he doesn't have a life-threatening illness, and he ought to know by now that Charis loves him.

So

Charis touches his arm.

"She won't be here forever," she says. "Just till she's a little better. Just till she can find a place

of her own."

"I'll help her look," says Billy. Charis has told him about West punching Zenia in the eye, and his response was not charitable. "I'll do the other one for her, is what he said. "Wham, bam, thank you ma'am, a real pleasure:"

268

"That's not very pacifist of you," said Charis reproachfully. "I never said I was a goddamn pacifist," said Billy, insulted. "Just because one war's wrong doesn't mean they all are!"

"Charis," Zenia called fretfully, from the front room. "Is the radio on? I heard voices. I was just having a nap."

"I can't say spit in my own goddamn house," hisses Billy. It's at moments like these that Charis goes out to dig in the garden.

She pushes her shovel down, lifts, turns the soil over, pauses to look for grubs. Then she hears

Zenia's voice behind her. "You're so strong," Zenia says wistfully. "I was that strong, once. I could carry three suitcases:"

"You will be again," says Charis, as heartily as she can. "I just know it!"

"Maybe," says Zenia, in a small, sad voice. "It's the little everyday things you miss so much. You know?"

Charis feels suddenly guilty for digging in her own garden; or as if she ought to feel guilty. It's the same way with a lot of the other things she does: scrubbing the floor, making the bread.

Zenia admires her while she does these things, but it's a melancholy admiration, Sometimes

Charis senses that her own healthy, toned-up body is a reproach to Zenia's enfeebled one; that

Zenia holds it against her.

"Let's feed the hens," she says. Feeding the hens is something Zenia can do. Charis brings out the hen feed in its coffee can, and Zenia scatters it, handful by handful. She loves the hens,

she says. They are so vital! They are - well, the embodiment of the Life Force. Aren't they?

Charis is made nervous by this kind of talk. It's too abstract, it's too much like university.

The hens are not an embodiment of anything but hen-ness. The concrete is the abstract. But how could she explain this to Zenia?

"I'm going to make a salad," she says instead.

269

"A Life Force salad," says Zenia, and laughs. For the first time Charis is not delighted to hear this laughter, welcome as it ought to be. There's something about it she doesn't understand. It's like a joke she's not getting.

The salad is raisins and grated carrots, with a lemon juice and honey dressing. The carrots themselves are Charis's own, from the box of damp sand in the root cellar lean-to; already they're beginning to grow small white whiskers, which shows they're still alive. Charis and Zenia eat the salad, and the lima beans and boiled potatoes, by themselves, because Billy says

he has to go out that night. He has a meeting.

"He goes to a lot of meetings," murmurs Zenia, as Billy is putting on his jacket. She has given up trying to be nice to Billy, since she wasn't getting any results; now she's taken to speaking of him in the third person even when he's standing right there. It creates a circle, a circle of language, with Zenia and Charis on the inside of it and Billy on the outside. Charis wishes she wouldn't do it; on the other hand, in a way Billy has only himself to blame.

Billy gives Zenia a dirty look. "At least I don't just sit around on my butt, like some," he says angrily. He too speaks only to Charis.

"Be careful," Charis says. She means about going into the city, but Billy takes it as a reproof.

"Have a real good time with your sick friend," he says nastily. Zenia smiles to herself, a tiny bitter smile. The door slams behind him, rattling the glass in the windows.

"I think I should leave," says Zenia, when they are eating some of the applesauce Charis bottled earlier in the fall.

"But where would you live?" says Charis, dismayed. "Oh. I could find a place," says Zenia.

"But you don't have any money!" says Charis.

"I could get a job of some sort," says Zenia. "I'm good at

270
that. I can always lick ass somewhere, I know how to get jobs:" She coughs, muffling her face in

her spindly-fingered hands. "Sorry," she says. She takes a bird-sip of water.

"Oh, no," says Charis. "You can't do that! You're not well enough yet! You will be soon," she adds, because she doesn't want to sound negative. It's health and not sickness that must be reinforced.

Zenia smiles thinly. "Maybe," she says. "But Karen, really - don't worry about me. It's not your problem."

"Charis," says Charis. Zenia has trouble remembering her real name.

And yes, it is her problem, because she has taken it upon herself. Then Zenia says something

worse. "It's not just that he hates me," she says. Her tongue comes out, licking the applesauce off

the tip of her spoon. "The fact is, he can hardly keep his hands off me."

"West?" says Charis. A cold finger runs down her back. Zenia smiles. "No," she says. "I mean

Billy. Surely you've noticed it."

Charis can feel the skin of her entire face sliding down in dismay. She has noticed nothing. But why hasn't she? It's obvious to her, now that Zenia's said it - the energy that leaps out of Billy's finger-ends and hair whenever Zenia is near. A sexual bristling, like tomcats. "What do you

mean?" she says.

"He wants to haul me into bed," says Zenia. Her voice is lightly regretful. "He wants to jump me."

"He loves you?" says Charis. Her entire body has gone slack, as if her bones have melted. Dread is what she feels. Billy loves me, she protests silently. "Billy loves me," she says, in a

choked

voice. "He says so." She sounds to herself like a whiny child. And when was the last time he said

that?

"Oh, it's not love," says Zenia gently. "Not what he feels for me, I mean. It's hate. Sometimes it's so hard for men to tell the difference. But you knew that already, didn't you?"

271

"What are you talking about?" Charis whispers.

Zenia laughs. "Come on, you're not a baby. He loves your ass. Or some other body part, how would I know? Anyway, for sure it's not your soul, it's not you. If you didn't put out he'd just take anyway. I've watched him, he's a greedy shit, they're all just rapists at heart. You're an

innocent, Karen. Believe me, there's only one thing any man ever wants from a woman, and that's sex. How much you can get them to pay for it is the important thing."

"Don't say that," says Charis. "Don't say it!" She can feel something breaking in her, collapsing, a huge iridescent balloon ripped and greying like a punctured lung. What's left, if you take away love? Just brutality. Just shame. Just ferocity. Just pain. What becomes of her

gifts then, her garden, her chickens, her eggs? All her acts of careful tending. She's shaking now, she feels sick to her stomach.

"I'm just a realist, that's all," says Zenia. "The one reason he wants to stick his dick into me is that he can't. Don't worry, he'll forget all about it after I've left. They have short memories. That's why I want to go, Karen - it's for you." She's still smiling. She looks at Charis, and her face against the weak light of the ceiling bulb is in darkness, with only her eyes gleaming, red as

in car headlights, and the look goes into Charis, down and down. It's a resigned look. Zenia is

accepting her own death.

"But you'll die," says Charis. She can't let that happen. "Don't give up!" She starts to cry. She clutches Zenia's hand, or Zenia clutches hers, and the two of them hang onto each other's

hands across the tableful of dirty dishes.

Charis lies awake in the night. Billy has come back, long after she went to bed, but he hasn't reached for her. Instead he turned away in bed and closed himself off and went to sleep. It's like that a lot, these days. It's as if they've had a fight. But now

272

she knows there's another reason too: she is not wanted. It's Zenia who is the wanted one. But Billy wants Zenia with his body only. That's why he's so rude to her - his body is divided from his spirit. That's why he's being so cold to Charis, as well: his body wants Charis out of the

way, so he can grab Zenia, shove her up against the kitchen counter, take hold of her against her

will, even though she's so ill. Maybe he doesn't know that's what he wants. But it is.

A wind has come up. Charis listens to it scraping through the bare trees, and to the cold waves slapping against the shore. Someone is coming towards her across the lake, her bare feet

touching the tops of the waves, her nightgown tattered by the years of weathering, her colourless

hair floating. Charis closes her eyes, focusing on the inner picture, trying to see who it is.

Inside

her head there's moonlight, obscured by scudding clouds; but now the sky lightens and she can

see the face.

It's Karen, it's banished Karen. She has travelled a long distance. Now she's coming nearer,
with that cowed, powerless face Charis used to see in the mirror looming up to her own face,
blown towards her through the darkness like an ousted ghost, towards this house where she has
been islanded, thinking herself safe; demanding to enter her, to rejoin her, to share in her body
once again.
Charis is not Karen. She has not been Karen for a long time, and she never wants to be Karen
again. She pushes away with all her strength, pushes down towards the water, but this time Karen
will not go under. She drifts closer and closer, and her mouth opens. She wants to speak.

Karen was born to the wrong parents. That's what Charis's grandmother said could happen,
and
it is what Charis believes

273

as well. Such people have to look for a long time, they have to search out and identify their
right parents. Or else they have to go through life without.

Karen was seven when she met her grandmother for the first time. On that day she wore
a cotton dress with smocking across the front and a sash, and matching hairbows on the
ends of her pale blonde pigtails, which were braided so tight her eyes felt slanted. Her
mother

had starched the dress, and it was stiff and also a little sticky because of the damp late
June

heat. They took the train, and when Karen got up off the hot plush seat she had to peel the
skirt of the dress off the backs of her legs. That hurt, but she knew better than to say so.

Her mother wore an ivory-coloured linen outfit with a sleeveless dress and a short-sleeved
jacket over it. She had a white straw hat and a white bag and shoes to match, and a pair of
white cotton gloves, which she carried. "I think you'll enjoy this," she kept telling Karen
anxiously. "You're a lot like your grandmother in some ways:" This was news to Karen,
because for a long time her mother and her grandmother had hardly been on speaking
terms.

She knew from listening in that her mother had run away from the farm when she was only
sixteen. She'd worked at grinding hard jobs and saved up her money so she could go to
school and become a teacher. She'd done this so she could be out from under the thumb of
her own mother; the crazy old bat. Wild horses would not drag her back to that rubbish
heap,

or this was what she said.

Yet here they were, heading straight to the farm that Karen's mother hated so much, with
Karen's summer clothes packed neatly into a suitcase and her mother's overnight bag
beside

it on the rack above their heads. They passed dirt fields, isolated houses, grey sagging
barns,

herds of cows. Karen's mother hated cows. One of her stories was about having to get up in
the winter, in blizzards, before sunrise even, and go out shivering through the

274

whirling snow to feed the cows. But, "You'll like the cows," she said now, in the too-sweet
voice

she used on the Grade Twos at school. She checked her lipstick in the mirror of her
compact,

then smiled at Karen to see how she was taking it. Karen smiled back uncertainly. She was used to smiling even when she didn't feel like it. She would be in Grade Two in September; she was hoping she wouldn't be put in her mother's class.

This wasn't her first time staying away from home. Other times she'd been sent to her aunt, her mother's older sister Viola. Sometimes it was just overnight, because her mother was going out; sometimes it was for weeks, especially in the summers. Her mother needed a long rest in the summers because of her nerves. Well, who wouldn't have nerves, considering? said Aunt Vi with disapproval, as if what could Karen's mother expect? She was speaking to Uncle Vern but looking sideways at Karen as if the nerves were Karen's doing. But surely not all of them were, because Karen tried to do what she was told, although sometimes she made mistakes; and there were other things, like the sleepwalking, that she couldn't help.

The nerves were the fault of the war. Karen's father was killed in the war when Karen wasn't even born yet, leaving Karen's mother to bring up Karen all by herself - a thing that was understood to be very hard, practically impossible. There was something else too, which had to

do with Karen's mother's wedding, or else the absence of it. Whether her father and her mother were actually married was one of the many things Karen wasn't sure about, although her mother

called herself Mrs. and wore a ring. There were no wedding photos, but things had been done

differently during the war; everyone said so. There was something in Aunt Vi's tone of voice that

alerted Karen: she was an embarrassment, someone who could only be spoken of obliquely. She

wasn't quite an orphan but she had the taint of one.

Karen didn't miss her dead father, because how could you
275

miss someone you never even knew? But she was told by her mother that she ought to miss him. There was a framed snapshot of him - not with her mother, but alone, in his uniform, his long bony face looking solemn and somehow already dead - which appeared and disappeared from the mantelpiece, depending on the state of Karen's mother's health.

When

she was up to looking at it, the picture was there; , otherwise not. Karen used the picture of her father as a sort of weather report. When it vanished she knew there was going to be trouble, and she tried to keep out of the road, out from underfoot, out of her mother's hair (road, feet, hair, how could she be on or under or in all of them at the same time?). But she didn't always succeed, or else she succeeded too well and her mother would accuse her of daydreaming, of not helping, of not caring, of not giving a sweet Jesus about anyone but herself, and her voice would go up high, up higher, up dangerously high, like a thermometer, into the red part.

Karen tried to help, she tried to care. She would have cared except she didn't know what she was supposed to care about, and also there were so many things she needed to watch, because of the colours, and other things she needed to listen to. Hours before a storm, when

the sky was still windless and blue, she would feel the whisper of the distant lightning

running

up her arms. She heard the phone before it rang, she heard pain gathering in her mother's hands, building up there like water behind a dam, getting ready to spill over, and she would stand terrified in the middle of the floor with her eyes elsewhere, looking - her mother said - like an idiot. Stupid! Maybe she was stupid, because sometimes she didn't understand what

was being said to her. She wasn't hearing the words, she was hearing past the words; she heard the faces instead, and what was behind them. At night she would wake up, standing by

the door, holding onto the door handle, and wonder how she got there.

Why do you do that? Why? said her mother, shaking her, and

276

Karen couldn't answer. My God, you're an idiot! Don't you know what could happen to you out there?

But Karen didn't know, and her mother would say, I'll teach you! Little bitch! Then she would hit

the backs of Karen's legs with one of her shoes, or else the pancake flipper or the broom handle, whatever was nearby, and thick red light would pour out of her body and some of it would get on Karen, and Karen would squirm and scream. "If your Daddy was alive it'd be him doing this, and he'd do it a damn sight harder, believe you me!" Hitting Karen was the only function Karen's mother ever ascribed to her father, which made her secretly relieved that

he wasn't there.

Ordinarily Karen's mother did not say Jesus and God and bitch, she didn't swear; only when she was heading into a patch of bad nerves. Karen cried a lot when her mother hit her, not just

because it hurt but because she was supposed to show that she was sorry, although she was

confused about why. Also, if she didn't cry her mother would keep right on hitting her until she did. You hard girl! But she had to stop at the right moment or her mother would hit her for

crying. Stop that noise! Stop right now! Sometimes Karen couldn't stop and neither could her

mother, and those were the worst times. Her mother couldn't help it. It was her nerves.

Then Karen's mother would fall on her knees and wrap her arms around Karen's body and squeeze her so she could scarcely breathe, and cry, and say, "I'm sorry, I love you, I don't know

what got into me, I'm sorry!" Karen would try to stop crying then, she would try to smile, because her mother loved her. If someone loved you that made it all right. Karen's mother sprayed herself every day with Tabu perfume; she had a horror of smelling bad. So that was the

smell in the room, during these beatings: warm Tabu.

Karen's Aunt Vi didn't like Karen very much, but at least she didn't touch her, and it wasn't bad at her place. Karen slept in

277

the guest room, which had large disturbing roses on the curtains, orange and pink ones, like

cauliflowers. She stayed out of the way as much as possible. She helped with the dishes without

being asked, and kept her handkerchiefs folded in the top bureau drawer and her socks in pairs, and did not get dirty. "She's a nice enough little thing, but there's not that much to her,"

said Aunt Vi on the telephone. "Milk and water. Well, I keep her clean and fed, it's not that

hard. Anyway it's only Christian charity, and it's not as if we have children of our own. I don't mind, really."

Uncle Vern went further than that. "Who's my girl?" he would exclaim. He wanted Karen to sit on his knee, he rubbed her head, he put his face down close to hers and grinned at her,

and tickled her under the arms; Karen didn't like this but she laughed nervously anyway, because she could tell he wanted her to. "We have a good time, don't we?" he said boisterously;

but he didn't believe it, it was only his idea of how he should behave towards her. "Don't pester her," said Aunt Vi coldly.

Uncle Vern's skin was white on top but red underneath. He mowed the lawn in his shorts, on Sunday evenings when Aunt Vi was at church, and at those times he got even redder, though the light around his body was dim and a muddy green-brown. In the mornings, when she was still lying in bed, Karen could hear him grunting and groaning in the bathroom. She would put her pillow over her ears.

"She does sleepwalk, but not that much," said Aunt Vi on the phone. "I just keep the doors locked, she can't get out. I don't know what Gloria makes such a fuss about. Of course her nerves are shot. Left with a - well, a child on her hands, like that - I feel I have to help out. But then, I'm her sister." She dropped her voice when saying this, as if it was a secret.

Her aunt and uncle did not live in an apartment, the way her mother did. They lived in a house, a new house in the suburbs,

278

with carpets all over the floor. Uncle Vern was in the home furnishings business; there was a real demand for home furnishings because it was right after the war, so Uncle Vern was doing

well, and right now Uncle Vern and Aunt Vi had gone on a vacation. They had gone to Hawaii.

This was why Karen couldn't stay with them, but had to go to her grandmother's instead. She had to go, because her mother needed a rest. She needed it badly; Karen knew how badly. When she peeled the starched skirt away from the backs of her legs, some of the skin

came off too, because last night her mother had used the pancake flipper, not the flat way but

sideways; she had used the cutting edge and there had been blood.

The grandmother met them at the train station in a battered blue pickup truck.

"How are you, Gloria," she said to Karen's mother, shaking hands with her as if they were strangers. Her hands were large and sunburned and so was her face; her head was topped with

a straggly whitish grey nest, which Karen realized after a moment was her hair. She was wearing overalls, and not clean ones either. "So this is wee Karen:" Her big, crinkly face swooped down, with a beak of a nose and two small bright blue eyes under wiry eyebrows, and

her teeth appeared, large too and unnaturally even, and so white they were almost luminous.

She was smiling. "I'm not going to eat you," she said to Karen. "Not today. You're too skinny,

anyway - I'd have to fatten you up."

"Oh, Mother," said Karen's own mother reproachfully, in her sweet Grade Twos voice.

"She won't know you're only joking!"

"Then she better find out fast," said the grandmother. "Part of it's true, anyway. She's too skinny. If I had a calf like that I'd say it was starving:"

279

There was a black-and-white collie on the seat of the pickup truck, lying on a filthy plaid

rug. "Into the back, Glennie," said the grandmother, and the dog pricked up its ears, wagged its tail, jumped down, and scrambled into the back of the truck via the back fender. "In you go," said the grandmother, picking Karen up as if she were a sack and hoisting her onto the seat.

"Shove over for your mother." Karen slid along the seat; it hurt, because of her legs. Karen's mother looked at the dog hairs, hesitating.

"Get in, Gloria," said the grandmother drily. "It's just as dirty as it always was."

She drove the truck fast, whistling tunelessly, one elbow jauntily out the window. Both windows were open and the gravel dust billowed in, but even so the inside of the car stank of

old dog. Karen's mother took off her white hat and stuck her head partway out the window. Karen, who was squashed in the middle and feeling a little sick, tried to imagine she was a dog

herself, because if she was, then she would think the smell was nice.

"Home again, home again, jiggy jog jog," said the grandmother jovially. She swung up a bumpy driveway, and Karen caught a glimpse of a huge skeleton, like a dinosaur skeleton, in

the long weedy grass in front of the house. This thing was a rusty red, with sharp spines and many encrusted bones sticking out of it. She wanted to ask what it was but she was still too afraid of her grandmother, and anyway the truck was no longer moving and now there was a commotion, a barking and hissing and cackling outside, and a grunting, and her grandmother

was yelling, "Be off, be off with you, shoo, shoo, boys and girls!"

Karen couldn't see out, so she looked at her mother. Her mother was sitting bolt upright, her hat on her knees, with her eyes tight shut, scrunching her white cotton gloves into a ball.

The grandmother's face appeared at the window. "Oh, for 280

Christ's sake, Gloria," she said, jerking open the door. "It's only the geese:"

"Those geese are killers," said Karen's mother, but she clambered down out of the truck.

Karen thought that her mother shouldn't have worn her white shoes, because the yard in front

of the house wasn't a lawn, it was an expanse of mud, some of it dry, some of it not, and some

of it not mud at all but animal poo of various kinds. Karen was familiar only with the dog kind,

because they had that in the city. There were now two dogs, the black-and-white collie and a

larger, brown-and-white one, and at the moment they were herding a flock of geese back towards the barnyard, barking and waving their brushy tails. There were a lot of flies buzzing around.

"Yeah, they can give you a good peck," said Karen's grandmother. "You just have to stand up to them! Show some willpower!" She reached in for Karen, but Karen said, "I can get down

by myself" and her grandmother said, "That's the ticket." Karen's mother had gone ahead, carrying her overnight case in one hand and waving her purse at the flies, picking her way across the yard through the clumps of poo in her high heels, and the grandmother took this opportunity to say, "Your mother's weak-minded. Hysterical. Always has been. I hope you're not."

"What's that thing?" said Karen, finding some courage because she sav~ that it was required of her.

"What thing?" said her grandmother. Leaning against her grandmother's legs was a medium-

sized pig. It snuffled at Karen's socks with its alarming snout, wet and tender as an eyeball, drooly as a mouth. "This here's Pinky. She's a pig."

"No," said Karen. She could tell it was a pig, she'd seen pictures. "The big thing, at the front."

"Old cultivator," said her grandmother, leaving Karen to wonder what a cultivator was.

"Come on!" She strode off towards the door with Karen's suitcase under one arm, and
281

Karen trotted along behind. In the distance there was more barking and cackling. The pig followed as far as the house, and then, to Karen's surprise, came right in. It knew how to nose open the screen door.

They were in the kitchen, which was a lot less like a rubbish heap than Karen had thought it would be. There was an oval table covered with oilcloth - light green with a design of strawberries - with a huge teapot and some used plates on it. There were some chairs painted

apple green, and a wood range and a saggy maroon velvet sofa piled with newspapers. On the

floor there were more newspapers, with a ravelled afghan thrown on top of them.

Karen's mother was sitting in a rocking chair beside the window, looking exhausted. Her linen outfit was all creased. She had her shoes off and was fanning herself with her hat, but when the pig came into the room she gave a slight scream.

"It's okay, she's house-broken," said the grandmother. "That is the limit," said Karen's mother, in a tight, furious voice.

"Cleaner than most people," said the grandmother. "Smarter, too. Anyways, this is my house. You can do what you like in yours. I didn't ask you to come here and I won't ask you to leave, but while you're here you can take things as you find them."

She scratched the pig behind the ears and gave it a slap on the rump, and it grunted gently and squinted up at her and then went over and flopped down sideways on the afghan.

Karen's mother burst into tears and scrambled out of her chair, and headed out of the room in her stocking feet, with her white gloves crushed to her eyes. Karen's grandmother laughed.

"It's okay, Gloria," she called. "Pinky can't climb stairs!"

"Why not?" said Karen. Her voice was almost a whisper. She'd never heard anyone talk to her mother like that. "Legs're too short," said her grandmother. "Now, you can
282

take off that dress, if you've got any other kind of clothes, and help me wash the potatoes."

She sighed. "I should've had sons:" Karen opened her suitcase and found her long cotton pants, and changed into them in a room her grandmother called the back parlour. She didn't want to put on shorts because of the backs of her legs. They were a secret between her and her

mother. She wasn't supposed to tell, about the broom handle or the pancake flipper, or there

would be trouble, the way there was when her mother punched one of the Grade Two boys in

the face and almost lost her job, and then what would they eat?

"I'll show you your own room later, when Gloria's over the sniffles," said her grandmother.

Then Karen helped her grandmother wash the potatoes. They did this in a smaller kitchen off

the main one where there was an electric stove, and a tin sink with a cold-water tap. Her grandmother called this room the pantry. The pig came in with them and grunted hopefully until it was sent away. "Not now, Pinky," said the grandmother. "Too many raw potatoes make

her sick. She loves 'em, though. She'll take a drink too, and that's just as bad for her. Most ani-

mals like to go on a good drunk if they get the chance.'

For dinner they had the potatoes, boiled, and chicken stew with biscuits. Karen wasn't all that hungry. She fed pieces of her dinner furtively to the pig and also to the two dogs, who were underneath the table. Her grandmother saw her doing it but didn't object, so she knew it

was all right.

Her mother came down for dinner, still in the linen dress, with her face washed and a fresh mouth painted on and a grim set to her lips. Karen knew that expression: it meant her mother

was going to see this through or else. Or else what? Or else things would not be so good, for

Karen.

"Mother, are there any serviettes?" said Karen's mother. Her mouth jerked into a smile, as if there were strings pulling up the ends of it.

283

"Any what?" said the grandmother. "Table napkins," said her mother.

"La-di-da, Gloria, use your sleeve," said the grandmother. Karen's mother wrinkled her nose at Karen. "Do you see any sleeves?" she said. Her jacket was off, so her arms were bare.

She was taking a new line: she'd decided that they would both find the grandmother comical.

The grandmother caught this look and frowned. "They're in the dresser drawer, same as always," she said. "I'm not a savage, but this is no dinner party neither. Those who wants can

get them."

For dessert there was applesauce, and after that strong tea with milk in it. The grandmother passed a cup to Karen, and Karen's mother said, "Oh, Mother, she doesn't drink tea," and the

grandmother said, "She does now" Karen thought there might be an argument, but her grandmother added, "If you're leaving her with me, you're leaving her with me. 'Course, you can always take her with you." Karen's mother clamped her mouth shut.

When Karen's grandmother had finished eating she scooped the chicken bones off the dinner plates, back into the stewpot, and set the plates down on the floor. The animals crowded around them, licking and slurping.

"Not from the dishes," said Karen's mother faintly.

"Less germs on their tongues than on a human's," said the grandmother.

"You're crazy, you know that?" said Karen's mother in a choking voice. "You should be locked up!" She jammed her hand over her mouth and ran out into the yard. The grandmother

watched her go. Then she shrugged and went back to drinking her tea.

"There's clean inside and clean outside," she said. "Clean inside is better, but Gloria never could tell the difference." Karen didn't know what to do. She thought about her stomach,

284

with animal slobber and dog and pig germs in it; but strangely, she didn't feel sick.

When Karen went upstairs later, she heard her mother crying, a sound she had heard many times before. She went carefully into the bedroom where the sound was coming from. Her mother was sitting on the edge of the bed, looking more desolate than Karen had ever seen her. "She was never like a real mother," she sobbed. "She never was!"

She squeezed Karen tight and cried onto her hair, and Karen wondered what she meant.

Karen's mother left the next day, before breakfast. She said she had to get back to the city, she

had a doctor's appointment. Karen's grandmother drove her to the station and Karen went

too, to say goodbye. She wore her long pants, because of her legs, which were hurting again.

Her mother kept one arm around her all the way to the station.

Before starting the truck the grandmother let the geese out of their pen. "They're watch-geese," she said. "Them and Cully'll take care of everything. Anyone tries to get in here, Cully'll

knock them down and the geese'll poke out their eyes. Stay, Cully! Come, Glenn." She drove

just as fast as before, almost in the centre of the road, but this time she didn't whistle.

When the time came to say goodbye at the station, Karen's mother kissed Karen on the cheek and squeezed her tight and said she loved her, and told her to be a good girl. She did not

kiss the grandmother. She didn't even say goodbye to her. Karen watched the grandmother's

face: it was shut tight like a box.

Karen wanted to wait until the train was actually moving, so they did. Her mother waved at her out of the train window, her white gloves fluttering like flags. That was the last she saw of her real mother, the one that could still smile and wave, although she didn't know it at the time.

285

Then Karen and her grandmother went back to the farmhouse and had their breakfast, which was oatmeal porridge with brown sugar and thick new cream on it. With Karen's mother

gone, her grandmother was not so talkative.

Karen looked at her grandmother across the table. She looked thoroughly. The grandmother was older than Karen had thought the day before; her neck was bonier, her eyelids were more wrinkled. Around her head there was a faint pale blue light. Karen had already figured out that her teeth were false.

After breakfast Karen's grandmother says to her, "Are you sick?"

"No," says Karen. Her legs are still hurting but that isn't a sickness, it's nothing because her mother says it's nothing. She doesn't want to be put to bed, she wants, to go outside. She wants

to see the chickens.

Her grandmother looks at her sharply but only says, "Don't you want to put on your shorts? Today'll be a scorcher," but Karen says no again and they go to collect the eggs.

The

dogs and the pig aren't allowed to come with them, because the dogs would try to herd the hens, and the pig likes eggs. The three of them lie on the kitchen floor, the dogs' tails thumping

slowly, the pig looking thoughtful. Karen's grandmother takes a sixquart basket with a dishtowel in it, to put the eggs in.

The sky is bright, bright blue like a fist pushed into an eye, that puddle of hot colour; the thin piercing voices of the cicadas go straight into Karen's head like wires. The edges of her

grandmother's hair catch the sunlight and burn like fiery wool. They walk along the path, tall weeds beside them, this

28G

tles and Queen Anne's lace, smelling deeper and greener than anything Karen has ever smelled

before, mixing in with the sweet pungent barnyard smells so that she doesn't know whether it

smells good or bad or just so powerful and rich it's like being smothered.

The henhouse is near the chicken-wire and rail fence that's around the garden; inside the fence are potato hills, and lettuce in a frilly row, and tripods of poles with climbing beans on them, their red flowers humming with bees. "Potatoes, lettuce, beans," Karen's grandmother says, to Karen, or possibly to herself: "Hens," she says, when they get as far as the henhouse.

The hens are two kinds: white with red wattles, and reddish brown. They scratch and cluck, and peer at Karen with their yellow lizards' eyes, one eye and then the other; sparkles of many-

coloured light run off their feathers, like dew. Karen looks and looks at them, until her grandmother takes her arm. "No eggs out here," she says.

The henhouse is musty inside, and dim. Karen's grandmother gropes in the straw-filled boxes, and under the two hens still inside, and puts the eggs into her basket. She gives Karen

one egg to carry, for herself. A tender glow comes from inside it. It is a little damp; there are bits of henshit and straw clinging to it. Also it's warm. Karen feels the backs of her legs throbbing and the heat running from the egg up into her head. The egg is soft in her hands, like a beating heart with a rubber shell around it. It's growing, swelling up, and as they walk back past the garden through the sun's glare and the vibration of the bees it gets so large and

hot that Karen has to drop it.

After that she was in bed, lying on her stomach. Her grandmother was washing off her legs. "I

wasn't the right mother for her," said the grandmother. "Nor she the right daughter, for me. And now look. But it can't be helped." She put her large
287

nubbly hands on Karen's legs and at first it hurt more, and then Karen got warmer and warmer, and then cool, and after that she went to sleep.

When she woke up she was outside. It was quite dark but there was a half moon; in the moonlight she could see the trunks of trees, and the shadows the branches made. At first she

was afraid because she didn't know where she was or how she'd got there. There was a deep

sweet smell, a glimmering of flowers, milkweeds as she learned later, and a fluttering of many

moths, the white flakes of their wings kissing against her. Somewhere near was running water.

She heard breathing. Then she felt a wet nose pushed into her hand, and something brushed against her. The two dogs were with her, one on either side. Had they barked when she came out of the house? She didn't know, she hadn't heard them. But she didn't worry any

more because they would know the way back. She stood for a long time, breathing in and breathing in, the scent of trees and dogs and night flowers and water, because this was the best

thing, it was what she wanted, to be outside in the night by herself. She wasn't sick any longer.

Finally the dogs nudged her gently, turning her around, herding her back towards the dark bulk of the house. No lights were on anywhere; she thought she might go in and up the stairs and into her bed without her grandmother knowing. She didn't want to be shaken or told she was hard, or hit with anything. But when she reached the house her grandmother was standing

beside it, in a long pale nightgown with her hair feathery in the moonlight, holding the door open, and she didn't say anything at all. She simply nodded at Karen, and Karen went

inside.

She felt welcomed, as if the house were a different house, at night; as if this was the first time she had entered it. She knew now that her grandmother walked in her sleep, too, and that

her grandmother also could see in the dark.

288

In the morning Karen ran her hands over the backs of her legs. Nothing hurt. All she could feel, instead of the sticky welts that had been there before, were some tiny thin lines, like hairs;

like the cracks in a mirror.

The room Karen slept in was the smallest bedroom upstairs. It used to be her mother's. The bed was narrow, with a scratched headboard of dark varnished wood. There was a white bed-

spread on it that looked like a lot of caterpillars sewn together, and a chest of drawers painted

blue, with a straight-backed wooden chair to match. The drawers were lined with old newspapers; Karen put her folded clothes into them. The curtains were a faded forget-me-not

print. In the mornings the sunlight came in through them, showing the dust on the surfaces, and on the rungs of the chair. There was a braided rug, shabby from use, and a dark wardrobe

jammed into one corner.

Karen knew her mother hated this room; she hated the whole house. Karen didn't hate it, although there were some things about it she found strange. In the big front bedroom where her grandmother slept, there was a row of men's boots in the closet. There was no bathroom,

only an outhouse, with a wooden box of lime and a little wooden paddle, to put the lime down

the hole. There was a front parlour with dark curtains and a collection of Indian arrowheads picked up in the fields, and huge stacks of old newspapers all over the floor. On the wall was a

framed photo of Karen's grandfather, from a long time ago, before he got crushed by a tractor.

"He didn't grow up with tractors," said the grandmother. "Only horses. Damn thing rolled on him. Your mother saw it happen, she was only ten at the time. Maybe that's where she went off

the rails. He said it was his own fault, for meddling with the Devil's inventions. He lived for a week, but there was nothing I could do. I can't do a thing about bones." She said these things

more to herself than to Karen, as she said many things.

289

The tractor itself was still in the drive shed; her grandmother used to drive it before she got too old. Now the fields were worked by Ron Sloane from down the road, and he used his own

tractor, his own baler, all his own stuff: The second week Karen was there one of the hens went broody and made a nest on the tractor seat instead of in her box. Karen found her, sitting

on twenty-three eggs. "They'll do that," said the grandmother. "They know we take their eggs,

so they sneak off by themselves. The other hens've been dropping their own eggs on her. Saving themselves the bother. Lazy sluts:"

That hen had to be moved back into the henhouse though, because of the weasels. "They come at night," said Karen's grandmother. "They bite the chickens in the neck and suck out

their blood:" The weasels were so thin they could get through the smallest crack. Karen imagined them, long thin animals like snakes, cold and silent, slithering in through the walls, their mouths open, their sharp fangs ready, their eyes shining and vicious. Her grandmother sent her into the henhouse one night after dark, with the lantern, while she herself stayed outside, looking for cracks in the boards where the light shone through. One weasel in a henhouse, she said, and that would be that. "They don't kill to eat," she said. "They kill for the pleasure of it:"

Karen looked at the photo of her grandfather. She could never tell much from pictures; the bodies in them were just flat, made from black-and-white paper, and no light came out of them. The grandfather had a beard and heavy eyebrows and was wearing a black suit and a hat;

he was not smiling. Karen's grandmother said he was a Mennonite, before he married her and

broke with the rest of them. Karen was not able to make any sense of this at all, because she

didn't know what a Mennonite was. Her grandmother said they were a religion. They wouldn't

use anything newfangled, they kept themselves to themselves, they were good farmers. You could always tell a

290

Mennonite farm because they farmed right to the edges of the fields. Also, they didn't hold with war. They wouldn't fight. "In wartime they aren't too popular," she said. "There's people on this line who still aren't speaking to me, because of him."

"I don't hold with war, either," said Karen solemnly. She had just decided that. It was the war that gave her mother so many nerves.

"Well, I know Jesus said turn the other cheek, but God said an eye for an eye," said her grandmother. "If people start killing your folks, you should fight back. That's my opinion."

"You could just go somewhere else," said Karen.

"That's what the Mennonites did," said her grandmother. "Trouble is, what happens when there's no place else to go? Answer that one, I say to him!" Her grandmother often spoke of the grandfather as if he were still alive - "He likes a good pot roast for dinner," or "He never cuts corners." Karen began to wonder whether he was indeed still alive, in some way. If anywhere, he would be in the front parlour.

Maybe that was why they never used the front parlour, only the back one. They would sit in it and Karen's grandmother would knit, one bright afghan square after another, and they would

listen to the radio, the news and weather mostly. Karen's grandmother liked to know if it was going to rain, though she said she could tell better than the radio, she could feel rain in her bones. She fell asleep in there every afternoon, on the sofa, wrapped in one of the finished afghans, with her teeth in a glass of water and the pig and the two dogs guarding. In the morn-

ings she was brisk and cheerful; she whistled, she talked to Karen and told her what to do; because there was a right and a wrong way to do everything. But in the afternoons, after lunch,

she would droop and begin to yawn, and then she would say she was just going to sit down for

a minute.

Karen didn't like being awake while her grandmother was asleep: This was the only part of the day she found frightening.

291

The rest of the time she was busy, she could help. She pulled weeds out of the garden, she collected the eggs, at first with her grandmother and then by herself. She dried the dishes,

she

fed the dogs. But while her grandmother slept she didn't even go outside, because she didn't

want to get too far away. She stayed in the kitchen. Sometimes she looked at the old newspapers. She would search for the weekend comic pages and study them: if you put your

eye up close to the page, the faces dissolved into tiny coloured dots. Or she would sit at the kitchen table, drawing with the stub of a pencil on pieces of scrap paper. At first she tried to write letters to her mother. She knew how to print, she had learned at school. Dear Mother, How

are you, Love, Karen. She would walk down to the mailbox beside the road and put the letter in,

and lift the red metal flag. But no letters came in return.

So instead she would sit there drawing with the pencil stub; or else not drawing. Listening. Her grandmother snored, and mumbled in her sleep sometimes. There were flies buzzing, dis-

tant cows, chuckling of geese, a car going by, way down on the gravel road at the front of the

property. Other sounds. The tap dripping into the sink, in the pantry. Footsteps in the front parlour, a creaking, what was it? The rocker in there, the hard sofa? She sat very still, chilled in

the afternoon heat, with the small hairs on her arms lifting, waiting to see if the footsteps would come closer.

On Sundays her grandmother would put on a dress, but she didn't go to church - not like Aunt

Vi, who went twice a day on Sundays. Instead she would take the huge family Bible out of the

front parlour and stand it up on the kitchen table. She would close her eyes and poke between

the pages with a pin, and then open to the page that the pin had chosen. "Now you," she would say to Karen, and Karen would take the pin and close her own eyes, and let her hand hover over the page

292

until she felt it pulled down. Then her grandmother would read the part where the pin had stuck in.

"If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise," she read. "For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God: Well now, I know who that must mean." And she would nod her head.

Sometimes though she would be puzzled. "The dogs shall eat Jezebel by the wall of Jezreel," she read. "Now I don't know at all who that could be. Must be too far ahead!" She only read one verse a Sunday. After that she would close up the Bible and put it back in the front parlour, and change into her overalls and go outside to do the chores.

Karen kneels in the garden. She's picking beans into a six-quart basket, yellow beans. She picks

slowly, one bean at a time. Her grandmother can pick with both hands at once, not even look-

ing, the same way she knits, but Karen has to look, to find the bean first and then pick it. The

sun is white-hot; she's wearing her shorts- and a sleeveless blouse, and the straw sunhat her

grandmother makes her wear so she won't get sunstroke. Crouched down like that she's almost

hidden, because the bean plants are so big. The sunflowers watch her with their huge

brown

eyes, their yellow petals like spikes of dry fire.

The air shimmers like cellophane, a clear sheet of it shaken over the flat fields; it crackles with grasshopper static. Good haying weather. From two fields over comes the drone of Ron

Sloane's tractor, the clack and thump of the baler. Then it stops. Karen reaches the end of the

bean row. She pulls a carrot up for herself, wipes off the dirt with her fingers, then rubs the carrot on her leg, then bites into it. She knows she's supposed to wash it first but she likes the

earth taste.

There's a motor noise. A dark green pickup truck is coming up the drive. It comes fast, skewing from side to side on the gravel. Karen knows the truck: it's Ron Sloane's truck.

293

Why isn't he in the field, why is he coming here? Mostly nobody visits. Her grandmother has no opinion of the neighbours. She says they think stupid things and they gossip, and they

stare at her when they pass her on the street, when she goes shopping in town. Karen has seen

people doing that, all right.

The truck skids to a stop; there's a rush of geese, the dogs barking. The door of the truck opens and Ron Sloane falls out. Staggering out, holding his arm. The tanned skin of his face looks like a brown paper bag, all the pinky-red gone out of it. "Where is she?" he says to Karen. He smells of sweat and fear. His sleeve is torn, his arm is dripping blood, pouring blood, she sees now. The hurt, the danger comes off the arm in shock waves of brilliant red. Karen wants to scream, but she can't, she can't move. She calls to her grandmother inside her

head, and her grandmother comes around the corner of the house carrying a pail, and sees the

blood too and drops the pail. "God Almighty," she says. "Ron."

Ron Sloane turns his face to her and it is a look of abject, helpless appeal. "Fuckin' baler," is

what he says.

Karen's grandmother is hurrying towards him. "Boys and girls, boys and girls," she says to the dogs and geese. "Cully, out," and there is a barking, cackling retreat.

"It'll be fine," she says to Ron. She puts out her hand and touches him, touches his arm, and says something. What Karen sees is light, a blue glow coming out from her grandmother's

hand, and then it's gone and the blood has stopped. "It's done," she says to Ron. "But you need to get to a hospital. All I can do is the blood. I'll drive you, you're not fit. That was a vein;

it'll start again in half an hour. Get a wet cloth," she says to Karen. "A tea towel. Cold water."

Karen sits in the back of her grandmother's truck, with Glennie the dog. She always sits in the back now, if she can. The air whirls around her, her own hair ripples against her face, 294

the trees blur by, it's like flying. They go to the hospital, twenty miles away, in the same town as the train station, and Ron gets out, and then he has to sit and put his head down, and then

Karen's grandmother gets an arm around him and they hobble together into the hospital like people in a three-legged race. Karen and Glennie wait in the truck.

After a while her grandmother comes out. She says they're leaving Ron Sloane at the hospital to get sewed up, and he will be all right now. They drive back to tell Mrs. Sloane what's happened to Ron, so she won't worry. They sit at Mrs. Sloane's kitchen table and

Karen's grandmother has tea and Karen has a glass of lemonade, and Mrs. Sloane cries and says thank you, and the grandmother doesn't say you're welcome. She only nods, a little stiffly,

and says, "Don't thank me. It isn't me does it."

Mrs. Sloane has a fourteen-year-old daughter with pale hair, paler than Karen's, and pink eyes, and skin devoid of colour. She passes a plate of store cookies, and stares and stares at

Karen's grandmother as if her pink eyes are about to fall out. Mrs. Sloane doesn't like Karen's

grandmother, although she urges her to have more tea. Neither does the white-haired daughter.

Instead they are afraid of her. Their~fear is all around their bodies, little grey icy shivers, like wind blowing on a pond. They're afraid and Karen isn't; or not as much. She would like to touch blood too, she would like to be able to make it stop.

In the evenings, when it's cooler, Karen and her grandmother visit the cemetery. It's less than a

mile away. At these times Karen's grandmother puts on her dress, but Karen doesn't have to.

They always walk, they never take the truck. They go along the gravel road beside the fences and the ditches and the dustcoated weeds, and Karen holds her grandmother's hand. It's

the

295

only time she does. She holds it in a new way now, feeling its stringy veins and its knobs of bone and the loose skin on it not as old but as a colour. The colour of light blue. It's a hand with power.

The cemetery is small; the church beside it small too, and vacant. The people who used to be there have built a new church, a bigger one, out beside the main highway.

"That's where we put the women and children, when the Fenians came," says Karen's grandmother. "Inside that very church."

"What are Fenians?" says Karen. The word makes her think of a laxative, she's heard it on the radio. Feen-a-mints.

"Trash up from the States," says the grandmother. "Irish. They wanted war. Their eyes were bigger than their stomachs though:" She talks about this event as though it just happened the other day, but really it was a long time ago. Over seventy years.

"We're not Irish," says Karen.

"Not by a long shot," says Karen's grandmother, "though your great-grandmother was."

She herself is Scotch, partly, so Karen is part Scotch too. Part Scotch, part English, part Mennonite, and part of whatever her father was. According to her grandmother, Scotch is the

best thing to be.

The cemetery is weedy, though people still come here: some of the graves are mowed. Grandmother knows where everyone's buried, and why: a car crash at a crossroads, four dead,

they'd been drinking; a man who blew himself in two with his own shotgun, everyone knew only they didn't want to say because then it would be suicide and that was a disgrace. A lady

and her baby, the baby's grave smaller, like a tiny bedstead; another disgrace, because that baby

had no real father. But "All fathers are real," says the grandmother, "though they're not all right:" There are angel heads on the grave- - stones, urns with willow trees, stone lambs, stone

flowers; real

296

flowers too, wilting in jam jars. The grandmother's mother and father are in here, and her two

brothers. She takes Karen to look at them; she doesn't say "their graves," she says "them:" But

mostly she wants to see Karen's grandfather. His name is carved on his stone, and his two numbers - when he was born, and when he died.

"Maybe I should've sent him back to the Mennonites," she says. "He might like to be with his own people. But most likely they wouldn't've took him. Anyways, he's best here with me. Grandmother's own name is carved underneath his, but her righthand date is a blank. "I had to get it fixed beforehand," she says to Karen. "Nobody around here to do it, after. That Gloria and that Vi would probably just dump me into the ditch, save the money. They're waiting for me to die so they can sell the farm. Or else they'd move me into that city, some hole in the ground. So I fooled them, I bought my own gravestone. I'm all set, come hell or high water."

"I don't want you to die," says Karen. She doesn't. Her grandmother is a safe place for her, although hard. Or because hard. Not shifting, nQt watery. She doesn't change.

Her grandmother sticks out her chin. "I don't intend to die," she says. "Only the body dies:" She glares at Karen; she looks almost ferocious. Her hair on top is like thistles, after they've gone to seed.

Did Karen love her grandmother? thinks Charis, halfway to the Island, sitting at the back of the ferry, remembering herself remembering. Sometimes yes, sometimes no. Love is too simple

a word for such a mixture of harsh and soft colours, of pungent tastes and rasping edges.

"There's more than one way to skin a cat," her grandmother would say, and Karen would flinch, because she could picture her grandmother actually skinning one. Her grandmother went out at dawn with her .22

297

rifle and shot woodchucks; also rabbits, which she made into stews. She killed the chickens when they were too old to lay or just when she wanted a chicken; she chopped their heads off

with an axe, on the wooden chopping block, and they ran silently around the barnyard with their necks fountaining blood and the grey smoke of their life rising up from them and the rainbow of light around them fading and then going out. Then she plucked and gutted them and singed off their pinfeathers with a candle, and after they were cooked she saved their wish-

bones and dried them on the windowsill. She had five there already. Karen wanted them to break one, but her grandmother said, "Have you got a wish?" and Karen couldn't think of one.

"You save these for when you need them," said her grandmother.

Karen asks more questions now; she does more things. Her grandmother says she is toughening up. When she goes to the henhouse by herself to get the eggs, she swats at the hens

if they hiss and try to peck her, and if the rooster jumps at her bare legs she kicks him; sometimes she carries a stick, to beat him off. "He's a mean old devil," her grandmother says.

"Don't you take anything from him. Just give him a good whack. He'll respect you for it."

One morning they're eating bacon, and her grandmother says, "This here is Pinky."

"Pinky?" says Karen. Pinky the pig is lying on her afghan where she usually is during meals, blinking with her bristlylashed eyes and hoping for scraps. "Pinky's right here!"

"This is last year's Pinky," says her grandmother. "There's a new one every year." She looks

across the table at Karen. She has a sly expression; she's waiting to see how Karen will take it.

Karen doesn't know what to do. She could start to cry and jump up from the table and run out of the room, which is what her mother would do and is also what she herself feels like doing. Instead she sets her fork down and takes the rubbery

298

chewed piece of bacon out of her mouth and places it gently on her plate, and that's the end of bacon for her, right then and there, forever.

"Well, for heaven's sake," says her grandmother, aggrieved but with some contempt. It's as if Karen has failed at something. "It's only pigs. They're cute when they're young, smart too, but if I let them stay alive they'd get too big. They're wild when they grow up, they're cunning, they'd eat you, yourself. They'd gobble you up as soon as look at you!"

Karen thinks about Pinky, running around the barnyard with no head, the grey smoke of her life going up from her and her rainbow light shrinking to nothing. Whatever else, her grandmother is a killer. No wonder other people are afraid of her.

xxxv

It was Labour Day. That was when Karen's mother was supposed to come on the train and take Karen back to the city. Karen had her suitcase all packed. She cried, in her narrow bed,

under her chenille spread, under her pillow. She didn't want to leave her grandmother, but she

wanted to see her mother, who - already - she couldn't remember clearly. All she could remember was her dresses, and the smell of Tabu, and one of her voices, her sweet voice, the

too-sweet voice she used on the Grade Twos.

Her mother didn't come. Instead there was a phone call from Aunt Vi, and Karen's grandmother said there had been a hitch and Karen would be staying a little longer. "You can

help me put up the tomatoes," she said. Karen picked tomatoes and washed them in the pantry, and her grandmother scalded them and peeled them and boiled them in jars.

299

Then it was time for school to begin, and still nothing happened. "There's no point starting you at that school," said Karen's grandmother. "You'd just be in and out:" Karen didn't mind. She didn't much like school anyway, it was hard to pay attention to so many people in the same

room at once. It was like the radio when there was a thunderstorm near: she could hardly hear

a thing.

Her grandmother brought the Bible out of the front parlour and stood it on the kitchen table. "Let me see, said the blind man," she said. She closed her eyes and poked with a pin.

"Psalm Eighty-eight. I've had that before. `Lover and friend hast thou put far from me, and mine acquaintance into darkness.' Well, that's right enough; it means I should get ready to go,

myself, pretty soon. Now you."

Karen took the pin and closed her eyes, and her hand followed the strong current that pulled it downwards. "Ah," said her grandmother, squinting. "Jezebel again. Revelations, Two,

Twenty. `Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman

Jezebel, which callest herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit for-

nication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.' Now that's a strange thing, for a little girl:'

And she smiled at Karen, the smile of a withered apple.

"You must be living ahead of yourself." Karen had no idea what she meant.

Finally it was Aunt Vi who arrived, not Karen's mother. She didn't even stay at the grandmother's house. She stayed at the one hotel in town, and the grandmother drove Karen

in. Karen didn't sit in the back of the truck this time. She sat in the front seat with the dog hairs, wearing her dress, the same as the day she came, looking out the window and not saying

a thing. Her grandmother whistled softly.

Aunt Vi wasn't all that pleased to see Karen but she pretended

300

to be. She gave Karen a peck on the cheek. "Look how tall you've grown!" she said. It sounded

like an accusation. "You've got her suitcase?" she said to the grandmother:

"Viola, I'm hardly senile yet," said the grandmother. "I'm not likely to forget her suitcase.

Here you go," she said to Karen softly. "I put a wishbone in it." She crouched down and put her bony arms around Karen, and Karen could feel her square body, solid as a house, and then

her grandmother wasn't there any longer.

Karen sat on the train beside Aunt Vi, who fussed and fussed. "We'll have to get you enrolled in school, right away," she said. "You've missed almost a month already! My goodness,

you're brown as a berry!"

"Where's my mother?" said Karen. She couldn't think of any berries that were brown.

Aunt Vi frowned and looked away. "Your mother isn't well," she said.

When Karen got to Aunt Vi's house she went into her usual room with the orange-and-pink flowered curtains and opened up her suitcase right away. There was the hen wishbone, wrapped in a piece of wax paper, with a rubber band around it, from her grandmother's jar of

saved-up rubber bands that was kept beside the sink. She took the wishbone out. It smelled sour, but rich and full, like a hand with dirt on it. She hid it in the hem of one of the curtains.

She knew that if Aunt Vi found it she would throw it away.

Karen's mother is in a building, a new flat yellow building that looks like a school. Aunt Vi and

Uncle Vern take Karen to visit her. They sit in the waiting room, on hard chairs covered with a

nubby fabric, and Karen is frightened because Aunt Vi and Uncle Vern are so solemn; solemn,

and at the same time avid. They are like the people who stop their cars and get out to see when

there's been a car accident. Something is bad, something

301

is wrong, but they want to participate in it, whatever it is. Karen would rather not, she would like to go back right now, back in time, back as far as the farm, but a door opens and her mother comes into the room. She walks slowly, putting a hand out to touch the furniture as if to guide herself: Sleepwalking, thinks Karen. Before, her mother's fingers were slim, the nails

polished. She was proud of her hands. But now her hands are swollen and clumsy and there is

no ring any more on her wedding finger. She's wearing a grey housecoat and slippers that Karen has never seen before, and also she has never before seen her mother's face.

Not this face. It's a flat face with a dull shine on it, like the dead fish in the white enamel

trays at the fish store: A fading light, silvery, like scales. She turns this face towards Karen;

it's

expressionless as a plate. Eyes of china. Suddenly Karen is framed in those eyes, a small pale

girl sitting on a nubby chair, a girl her mother has never seen before. Karen brings her two hands up to her mouth and breathes in, a gasp, the reverse of a scream.

"Gloria. How're you feeling?" says Uncle Vern.

Karen's mother's head swings towards him, a ponderous head, heavy. The hair on it is pulled back, held with clips. Karen's mother used to do her hair up in pincurls, and when she combed it out it would be wavy. This hair is plain and straight, and filmed over, as if it's been

kept in a cupboard. Karen thinks about her grandmother's root cellar, with its smell of indoor earth and its rows of preserve bottles, bright berries glassed over, powdered with dust.

"Fine," says Karen's mother, after a minute.

"I can't stand it," says Aunt Vi. She dabs at her eyes with a hankie. Then, in a firmer voice:

"Karen, aren't you going to give your mother a kiss?"

Aunt Vi's questions are like orders. Karen slides off her chair and goes over to this woman.

She doesn't put her arms around

302

her, she doesn't touch her with her hands. She bends her body from the waist and places her

lips against the woman's cheek. She hardly presses at all, but her mouth sinks in and down, on

the cheek that is like cool rubber. She thinks of Pinky without a head, collapsing in the barnyard, becoming ham. Her mother has the texture of luncheon meat. She feels sick to her

stomach.

Her mother receives the kiss passively. Karen steps back. There is no red fight around her mother now. Only a faint mauve-brown shimmer.

In the car on the way home, Karen sits between Aunt Vi and Uncle Vern instead of in the back where she usually sits. Aunt Vi wipes at her eyes: Uncle Vern asks Karen if she wants an

ice cream cone. She says no thank you, and he pats her knee.

"I felt so bad, my own little sister; but I had to do it," Aunt Vi says, on the phone. "It was the third time, and what could I do? I don't know where she got them! Lucky the empty bottle was right there beside her so at least we could tell the doctor what she took. It's just a wonder

we were in time. Something in her voice, I guess; well, it's not like I hadn't heard it before!

When we got there she was out cold. She had bruises on her mouth for weeks, they had to pry

it open to get the hose down, and today it was like you wouldn't of known her. I don't know - shock treatments, I guess. If that doesn't work, they'll have to do an operation," She says operation in that solemn voice, the voice she uses for saying grace, as if it's a holy word.

She

wants it, this operation, Karen can tell. If her mother has an operation, some of that holiness will rub off on Aunt Vi.

Karen went to school, where she said little and did not make friends. She was not teased either,

she was mostly ignored. She knew how to do that, make herself invisible. All she had to do was

to suck in the light around her body; it was like sucking in her breath. When the teacher looked

at her the look went right through, to whoever was sitting behind her. This way

303

Karen hardly needed to be in the classroom at all. She let her hands do whatever was required: long rows of a's and b's, neat columns of numbers. She got gold stars for neatness.

Her paper snowflake and her paper tulip were among the ten pinned up on the corkboard. Every week, then every two weeks, then every three, she went with her aunt and uncle to visit her mother. Her mother was in a different hospital now. "Your mother is very ill," Aunt Vi told her, but Karen didn't need to be told. She could see the illness spreading on her mother's skin, like the hairs on arms, gone out of control; like filaments of lightning, only very small and slow. Like grey mould spreading through bread. When her mother was veined

through and through like that, then she would die. Nobody could stop her, because that was what she wanted to do.

Karen thought about using her wishbone but she knew it wouldn't be any good. To make a wish work you had to really want it, and she didn't want this woman to stay alive. If she could have had her mother back the way she was before, during the good times, yes. But she

knew this was impossible. There wasn't enough of that mother left. So she kept the wishbone

in the hem of the curtain, checking once in a while to make sure it was still there.

Karen sat in her room. Sometimes she banged her head softly against the wall, so she wouldn't have to think. Or she looked out the window a lot. Or she looked out the window at school. What she looked at was the sky. She thought about the summer. Maybe next summer her aunt and uncle would go on a vacation and she could be back at her grandmother's farm, gathering the eggs, picking yellow beans in the sun.

On her eighth birthday Karen has a cake. Aunt Vi has baked it, and put sugar roses on it from

the store, and eight candles. She asks Karen if she wants to have a little friend over, but Karen

304

says no. So they eat the birthday dinner by themselves, the three of them, Oh Lord, bless this food

to our use, Amen, and there are tuna and egg salad sandwiches, and peanut butter and jelly, and

Aunt Vi says, "Isn't this nice," and then there is Neapolitan ice cream in three colours, white, pink, and brown. After that the cake. Aunt Vi lights the candles and tells Karen to blow them out and make a wish, but Karen just sits there, looking at the flames.

"I don't think she's ever had a cake before," Aunt Vi says to Uncle Vern, and Uncle Vern says, "Poor little tyke" and ruffles Karen's hair. He does this often these days and Karen doesn't like it. Uncle Vern's hands have a heavy luminescence around them, thick like jelly, sticky, brown-green. Sometimes Karen examines her blonde hair in the mirror to see if any of

it has come off.

"Make a wish," says Uncle Vern heartily. "Wish for a bicycle!"

"You have to close your eyes," says Aunt Vi.

So to humour them Karen closes her eyes, and sees nothing but the sky, and opens her eyes

again and obediently blows out the candles. Aunt Vi and Uncle Vern clap their hands, applaud-

ing, and Uncle Vern says, "Well, what do you know! Look what we have here!" and out of the

kitchen he wheels a brandnew bicycle, bright red. It's decorated with pink ribbons and has a balloon tied to one handle. "What do you think of that?" says Uncle Vern eagerly.

It's dusk; the smell of mowed grass comes in through the open window, the June bugs

batter themselves against the screen. Karen looks at the bicycle, at its glinting spokes and chains and its two black wheels, and knows that her mother is dead.

Her mother did not die for another three weeks, but it was the same thing, because sometimes

(thinks Charis) there is a fold in time, like the way you fold the top bedsheet down to make a
305

border, and if you stick a pin through at any spot, then the two pinholes are aligned, and that's the way it is when you foresee the future. There's nothing mysterious about it, any more than there is with a backwash in a lake or with harmony in music, two melodies going on at the same time. Memory is the same overlap, the same kind of pleat, only backwards. Or maybe the fold is not in time itself but in the mind of the person watching. In any case, Karen looks at the bicycle and sees her mother's death, and collapses onto the floor, crying, and Aunt Vi and Uncle Vern are baffled and then angry, and tell her she is a lucky girl;

a lucky, ungrateful girl, and she can't explain.

There was a funeral but not very many people came. A few teachers from her mother's old school, some friends of Aunt Vi's. Her grandmother wasn't there, but Karen didn't find that strange - her grandmother in the city would have been out of place. There was another reason

as well - stroke, said Aunt Vi, and nursing home, in the tone of voice that was supposed to enlist

other people's sympathy for her - but these words meant nothing to Karen and she didn't want

to hear them, so she put them out of her mind. She had on a navy blue dress, which was the closest Aunt Vi could get to black, at short notice, although - she said on the phone - she should've seen it coming. Karen wasn't allowed to visit her mother's body in the coffin because

Aunt Vi said it was too shocking a thing for a young child, but she knew anyway what it would

look like. The same as alive, only more so.

Uncle Vern and Aunt Vi have had part of their cellar re-done. They've had plasterboard put over the cement-block walls, linoleum with thick carpeting over it on the floor. They've made a

rec room down there, rec not like wreck but like recreation. There's a bar with bar stools, and a

set of chinese chequers

306

for Karen, and a television set. It's the second television set they've bought; the first one is kept

in the living room. Karen likes to watch the set in the rec room, out of everyone's way. She doesn't actually have to pay attention to what's in front of her on the screen; she can be by herself, inside her head, and no one will ask what she's doing.

It's September, but outside, upstairs, it's still dry and hot. Karen sits on the carpet, in the rec room where it's cooler, in bare feet and shorts and a sleeveless top, watching Kukla, Fran & Ollie

on TV Kukla, Fran and Ollie are puppets, or two of them are. Overhead, Aunt Vi's shoes clack

busily back and forth across the kitchen floor. Karen hugs her own knees, rocking gently.

After a

while she gets up and goes to the bar sink and runs herself a glass of water, and puts in an ice

cube out of the little refrigerator, and sits back down on the rug.

Uncle Uern comes down the stairs. He's been mowing the lawn. He is a deeper red than

usual, and the smell of sweat encircles him, like the water drops when a wet dog shakes itself. He

goes to the bar and gets out a beer, takes the cap off the bottle and drinks down half, and wipes

his wet face with the towel beside the sink. Then he sits down on the sofa. The sofa is a sofa-bed,

in case they have visitors, because Karen has the room that used to be the guest room.

That

room is still called "the guest room," although Karen is living in it. They don't have visitors, though.

Karen gets up. She intends to go upstairs, because she knows what will happen next, but she

isn't fast enough. "Come on," says Uncle Vern. He pats his huge, hairy knee, and Karen goes

reluctantly towards him. He likes her to sit on his knee. He thinks it's fatherly. "You're our little

girl now," he says fondly. But he isn't really fond of her, Karen knows that. She knows she is unsatisfactory to him, because she doesn't talk to him, she doesn't hug him, she doesn't smile

enough. It's his smell she doesn't like. That, and his greeny-brown light.

307

She sits on Uncle Vern's knee and he pulls her higher up onto his lap and encircles her with one of his red arms. With the other hand he strokes her leg. He often does this, she's used to

it; but this time he moves his hand up higher, between her legs. Kukla, Fran and Ollie continue

to talk in their made-up voices; Kukla is some sort of a dragon. Karen squirms a little, trying to

move herself away from the enormous fingers, which are inside her shorts now, but the arm tightens around her stomach and Uncle Vern says into her ear, "Hold still!" He does not sound

hearty, wheedling, the way he usually does; he sounds angry. He has both hands on her now,

he rubs her back and forth across himself as if she's a washcloth; his sticky breath is all over

her ear. "You like your old Uncle Vern, don't you?" he says furiously.

"You two!" Aunt Vi calls gaily down the cellar stairs. "Supper time! There's corn on the cob!"

"Be right there!" Uncle Vern yells hoarsely, as if the words have been expelled from him by a kick in the stomach. He shoves one finger right up inside Karen, and groans as if he's been

stabbed. He holds Karen against himself for another minute: the energy is leaking out of him

and he needs a bandage. Then he lets her go.

"Scamper upstairs," he tells her. He's trying for his fake voice, his uncle voice, but he hasn't got it back; his voice is desolate. "Tell your Auntie Vi I'll be up in a minute." Karen looks behind herself, to see if the back of her shorts is brownish-green, but it isn't; only wet. Uncle Vern is wiping himself off with the bar towel.

Uncle Vern lurks, he lies in wait. Karen evades him, but she can't evade him all the time.

The

strange thing is that Uncle Vern never comes looking for her when Aunt Vi isn't in the house. Maybe he likes the danger; or maybe he knows that with Aunt Vi there, Karen won't dare to make a sound. It's

unclear how he knows this, or why this is so, but it's true. Karen's fear of Aunt Vi's finding out is greater than her fear of Uncle Vern's sausage fingers.

Soon one finger isn't enough for him. He stands Karen in front of him, facing away so she can't see, a big knee holding her on either side, and puts his hands up under her pleated school

skirts and slides her panties right down, shoving something hard in between her legs from behind. Or he uses two fingers, three. It hurts, but Karen knows that people who love you can

do painful things to you, and she tries hard to believe that he does love her. He says he does.

"Your old uncle loves you," he tells her, scraping his face against hers.

When they are having dinner afterwards he laughs more, he talks louder, he tells jokes, he kisses Aunt Vi on the cheek. He brings them both presents: boxes of chocolates for Aunt Vi,

stuffed animals for Karen. "You're just like our daughter," he says. Aunt Vi smiles thinly.

Nobody can say they aren't doing the right thing.

Karen loses her appetite: the effort of not thinking about Uncle Vern, both when he's there and when he isn't, is making her weak. She becomes thinner and paler, and Aunt Vi discusses

her on the phone - "It's the loss of her mother, she's the quiet type but you can tell she feels it.

She just mopes around. I wasn't expecting it to go on this long. She's almost ten!" She takes

Karen to the doctor to see if she has anemia, but she doesn't.

"Tell me what's wrong," says Aunt Vi. "It's better if you talk about it. You can tell me!" She has that solemn, avid look on her face, she's expecting to hear about Karen's mother. She urges

and urges.

"I don't like Uncle Vern touching me," says Karen finally. Aunt Vi's face goes slack, then hardens. "Touching you?" she says suspiciously. "What do you mean, touching?"

"Touching," says Karen miserably. "Down there." She points.

She knows already she's done a wrong, an unforgivable thing. Up to now Aunt Vi has been willing to tolerate her, even to put on a show of liking her. Not any more.

Aunt Vi's lips are white, her eyes are sparkling dangerously. Karen looks down at the floor so as not to see. "You're exactly like your mother," says Aunt Vi. "A liar. I wouldn't be surprised if you went crazy, just like her. God knows it runs in the family! Don't you ever say such an evil thing about your uncle! He loves you like a daughter! Do you want to destroy him?" She starts to cry. "Pray to God to forgive you!" Then her face changes again. She wipes

her eyes, she smiles. "We'll just forget you ever said that, dear," she says. "We'll both forget it. I

know things have been hard on you. You never had a father."

After that, what can be done? Nothing at all. Uncle Vern knows Karen has told. He is nicer than ever to Aunt Vi. He is even nice to Karen, in front of people; but sadly, as if he's forgiving her. When Aunt Vi isn't looking he stares across the dinner table at Karen, his eyes in his face of uncooked beef shining with triumph. You can't win this fight, he's telling her. She can

hear the words as clearly as if he's spoken them. For the time being he's-avoiding her, he no

longer tracks her through the house, but he's waiting. He's itching to get his hands on her, but

not with any pleading whispers. Now he won't ask if she likes him, now he's more like her mother used to be, before she would start screaming and reach for the broom handle. That ominous lull, that softness.

Karen sleeps with her head under her pillow, because she doesn't want to hear or see; but she's sleepwalking again, more than ever. She wakes up in the living room, trying to get out through the French windows, or in the kitchen, shaking the back door handle. But Aunt Vi locks all the doors.

Karen is sitting straight up in her bed, holding her pillow against her chest. Her heart is beating with terror. There's a
310

man standing in her dark bedroom; it's Uncle Vern, she can see his face in the light that comes

through from the hall, just before he eases the door shut. His eyes are open, but he's sleepwalking; he has his striped pyjamas on, he has a glazed look. Don't ever wake a person sleepwalking,

said her grandmother. It breaks their journey.

Uncle Vern sleepwalks quietly across the floor to Karen's bed. With him comes a smell of stale sweat and rancid meat. He kneels and the bed heaves like a boat, he pushes and Karen falls

backwards. "You're a little bastard, that's what you are," he whispers softly. "A sly little bastard."

He's talking in his sleep.

Then he falls on top of Karen and puts his slabby hand over her mouth, and splits her in two. He splits her in two right up the middle and her skin comes open like the dry skin of a cocoon,

and Charis flies out. Her new body is light as a feather, light as air. There's no pain in it at all. She

flies over to the window and in behind the curtain, and stays there, looking out through the cloth,

right through the pattern of pink and orange roses. What she sees is a small pale girl, her face

contorted and streaming, nose and eyes wet as if she's drowning - gasping for air, going under

again, gasping. On top of her is a dark mass, worrying at her, like an animal eating another animal. Her entire body - because Charis can see right through things, through the sheets, through the flesh to the bone - her body is made of something slippery and yellow, like the fat in

a gutted hen. Charis watches in amazement as the man grunts, as the small child wriggles and

flails as if hooked through the neck. Charis doesn't know she is Charis, of course. She has no

name yet.

The man sits up, his hand over his heart, gasping for air now himself. "There," he says, as if he's completed something: a task. "Shut up now I didn't hurt you. Shut up! You keep your dirty

little mouth shut about this or I'll kill you!" Then he groans, the way he does in the bathroom in

the mornings. "Oh God, I don't know what got into me!"

The small girl is rolling over onto her side. As Charis watches, she leans over and vomits onto the floor, onto the man's feet. Charis knows why. It's because that brown-green light is inside her body now, thick and sticky, like goose turds. It came out of Uncle Vern and went into Karen, and she has to get it out.

The door opens Aunt Vi is standing there, in her nightgown. "What is it, what's going on?"

she says.

"I heard her in here," says Uncle Vern. "She was calling - I think she's got the stomach flu."

"Well, for heaven's sake," says Aunt Vi: "You should've had sense enough to take her into the bathroom. I'll get the floor cloth. Karen, are you going to do that again?"

Karen has no speech, because Charis has taken all the words with her. Karen opens her mouth, and Charis is sucked back, it's as if she's being vacuumed into their shared throat.

"Yes," she says.

After the third time Karen knows she is trapped. All she can do is split in two; all she can do is

turn into Charis, and float out of her body and watch Karen, left behind with no words, flailing and sobbing. She will have to go on like this forever because Aunt Vi will never hear her, no matter what she says. She would like to take an axe and chop Uncle Vern's head off, and

Aunt

Vi's too, as if they were chickens; she would watch the grey smoke of their lives twist up out of

them. But she knows she could never kill anything. She isn't hard enough.

She takes the wishbone out of the hem of her curtain and closes her eyes, and holds both stems of the wishbone, and pulls. What she wishes for is her grandmother. Her grandmother is

is

far away now, almost like a story she was told once; she can hardly believe she once lived at

such a place as the farm, or even that there is such a place. But she wishes anyway, and

312

when she opens her eyes her grandmother is there, coming right into her room through the closed door, wearing her overalls and frowning a little, and smiling also. She walks towards Karen and Karen feels a cool wind against her skin, and the grandmother holds out both of her

knobby old hands, and Karen puts out her own hands and touches her, and her hands feel as if

sand is falling over them. There's a smell of milkweed flowers and garden soil. The grandmother keeps on walking; her eyes are light blue, and her cheek comes against Karen's,

cool grains of dry rice. Then she's like the dots on the comic page, close up, and then she's only a swirl in the air, and then she's gone.

But some of her power stays there, in Karen's hands. Her healing power, her killing power. Not enough to get Karen out of the trap, but enough to keep her alive. She looks at her hands

and sees a trace of blue.

What she has to do is wait. She must wait like a stone, until it's time. So this is what she does. As soon as Uncle Vern touches her she splits in two, and the rest of the time she waits.

Her grandmother is dead, or dead to this life, though Karen has seen her and she knows there isn't any death really. The Bible arrives in a large box, addressed to Karen, and Karen puts it in her suitcase under her bed, ready for when she can leave. Her grandmother has left

her the farm, but because Karen's not old enough she can't have it or even go there, although

she wants to. Uncle Vern and Aunt Vi are her guardians. They are in control.

When she grows breasts and hair under her arms and on her legs and between them, and has her first period, Uncle Vern leaves her alone. There is a space between them, but it isn't like an absence. It's a presence, transparent but thicker than air. Uncle Vern is afraid of her now, he's afraid of what she's going to do or say; he's afraid of what she remembers,

313

he's afraid of being judged. Maybe it's because her eyes are no longer timid, no longer vacant or beseeching. Her eyes are stone. When she looks at him with her stone eyes it's as if she's reaching in through his ribs and squeezing his heart so it almost stops. He says he has a heart condition, he takes pills for it, but they both know it's a thing she's doing to him. Every time she looks at him she feels loathing, and a deep nausea. She's disgusted with him, but also with her body, because it still has his dirt inside it. She must think of ways to get clean inside. When she feels those things she has to seal them off. She has to or else she will be destroyed. She splits herself in two and stays with the cooler part, the clearer part of herself. She has a name for this part now: she is Charis. She picked the hint for her new name out of the Bible, with a pin: "The greatest of these is Charity." Charity is better than Faith and Hope. She can use this new name only to herself, of course. Everyone else still calls her Karen.

Charis is more serene than Karen, because the bad things have stayed behind, with small Karen. She's polite to her aunt, but remote: One day, when she is over eighteen, she asks the two of them what they have done with her grandmother's money. Her uncle says he's invested it for her and she can have all of it when she's twenty-one, and meanwhile some of it can be used for her education. Aunt Vi acts as if this is an act of great generosity, as if the money belongs to them and they're giving it away. But nevertheless they're both relieved when she goes to university and moves into McClung Hall. Aunt Vi is nervous of her because of her stony eyes; as for Uncle Vern, he doesn't know what she remembers. He hopes she's forgotten it all, but he isn't sure.

She remembers everything, or rather Karen does; but Karen is in storage. Charis only remembers when she takes Karen out, from the suitcase under her bed where she has put her.

She
314

doesn't do this often. Karen is still little, but Charis is growing up. Charis turned twenty-one; but nothing was said about her grandmother's money. She didn't care. She wouldn't take money from them anyway, because even though it was really her own money it had been in their hands, it was dirty. She wouldn't be able to get it anyway without a fight. She didn't want to fight. Instead she wanted to go away somewhere else, and as soon as she felt ready she simply dropped out of sight. Out of their sight. It wasn't so hard when you knew no one would come looking for you. She left university before finishing - she was flunking her courses anyway, because they failed to hold her attention - and went travelling. She hitchhiked, she took buses. She worked as a waitress, she worked in an office. For a while she was in an ashram on the West Coast, for a while she stayed on a communal farm in Saskatchewan. She did various things.

Once she went back to the farm, her grandmother's farm; she wanted to see it. But it wasn't a- farm any more, it was a subdivision. Charis tried not to mind, since nothing that was or had been would perish; and the farm was still inside her, it was still hers because places belonged to the people who loved them.

When she was twenty-six she dumped her old name. A lot of people were changing their names, then, because names were not just labels, they were also containers. Karen was a leather

bag, a grey one. Charis collected everything she didn't want and shoved it into this name, this

leather bag, and tied it shut. She threw away as many of the old wounds and poisons as she

could. She kept only the things about herself that she liked or needed.

She did all of this inside her head, because the events there are just as real as the events anywhere else. Still inside her head,

315

she walked to the shore of Lake Ontario and sank the leather bag into the water.

That was the end of Karen. Karen was gone. But the lake was inside Charis really, so that's where Karen was too. Down deep.

XXXVI

Until now, in her house on the Island, until this windy night with the scraping branches. Karen is

coming back, Charis can't keep her away any more. She's torn away the rotting leather, she's

come to the surface, she's walked through the bedroom wall, she's standing in the room right

now. But she is no longer a nine-year-old girl. She has grown up, she has grown tall and thin and

straggly, like a plant in a cellar, starved for light. And her hair isn't pale any more, but dark.

The

sockets of her eyes are dark too, dark bruises. She no longer looks like Karen. She looks like

Zenia.

She walks towards Charis and bends, and blends into her, and now she's inside Charis's body.

With her she brings the ancient shame, which feels warm.

Charis must have said something or made a sound, because Billy's awake now. He has turned

over, he's pulling her to him, he's kissing her, burrowing into her with his old urgency. It isn't me,

Charis wants to tell him, because she's no longer in charge of her own body. This other woman

has taken over; but Charis doesn't float away, doesn't watch from behind the curtain. She's in the

body too, she can feel everything. She can feel the body moving, responding; she can feel the

pleasure shoot through her like electricity, unfold in a hundred colours; like a peacock's tail on

fire. She forgets about Karen, she forgets about herself. Everything in her has been fused together.

316

"Hey, that was different," Billy says. He's kissing her eyes, her mouth; she's lying in his

arms, limp as a sick person; she can't move. It wasn't me, she thinks. But it was, partly. What she feels is difficult: guilt, relief. Anguish. Resentment, because Billy has the power to do that; resentment also, because she has lived for so many years without knowing about it. Deep inside, far inside her body, something new is moving. . (That was the night her daughter was conceived. Charis is sure of it. She has always known who the father was, of course. There weren't any other choices. But the mother? Was it herself and Karen, sharing their body? Or was it Zenia, too?) In the morning she feels more like herself, like Charis. She doesn't know where Karen has gone. Not back underneath the lake; it doesn't feel like that. Possibly Karen is hiding somewhere else inside their shared body; but when she closes her eyes and searches with the mind's eye, here and there within herself, she can't find her, although there is a dark patch, a shadow, something she can't see. When she makes love with Billy she doesn't think about being Karen, or Charis either. She thinks about being Zenia. "Promise me she's leaving soon," says Billy. By now he's no longer angry. He's insistent, pleading, almost desperate. "She's leaving soon," says Charis, as if reassuring a child. She loves Billy more now, in some ways; but in some ways less. Once greediness comes into a thing, the greediness of the body, it gets in the way of pure giving. She wants Billy's body now, for itself, not just as a manifestation of his essence. Instead of simply ministering to him, she wants something back. Maybe this is wrong; she doesn't know. They're lying in bed, it's morning, she's stroking his face. "Soon, soon," she sings, crooning, to soothe him. She no

317

longer thinks his body wants Zenia. How could he want Zenia, now that Charis wants him? It's the middle of December. The frost is in the ground, the leaves are off the trees, the wind is gathering momentum. Tonight it's straight off the lake, hurling itself through the trees and bushes, tearing at the plastic sheeting that Charis has stapled over the windows to keep out the drafts. There are no storm windows for this house and the landlord has no intention of buying them any, because in his opinion all the houses on the Island will soon be bulldozed flat, so why spend the money? There's also no insulation. Charis is beginning to see the drawbacks of living here. Already two of the houses on her street are empty, their windows boarded up. She wonders whether they will have enough wood to keep themselves warm when the real winter comes. There's a man at the co-op who might trade some yoga lessons for wood, but wood is heavy, so how will she get it to the Island? They will all need winter clothing too. Billy is in the city tonight, at another one of those meetings. She pictures him at the ferry dock, waiting for the last boat back, shivering in his thin jacket. She should be knitting him something. She'll go to the Goodwill store, soon, and try for some second-hand coats.

One for Billy, one for herself, and one for Zenia as well, because Zenia has only the clothes on her back. She's afraid to go to West's place to get the rest of her clothes, or so she says. She's afraid West will kill her. He has an obsessive personality - gentle on the outside, but sometimes he goes berserk, and the thought of her dying drives him crazy. If he's going to lose

her, if she's going to be dead, he wants to be in control of her death himself. A lot of men are

like that, says Zenia, with a reminiscent stare into space, a tiny smile. Love drives them mad.

318

Once upon a time, Charis would never have understood a statement like that. Now she does.

Charis is certain she's pregnant. She's missed a period, but that isn't all: her body feels different, no longer taut and sinewy but sponge-like, fluid. Saturated. It has a different energy,

a deep orangy-pink, like the inside of a hibiscus. She hasn't told Billy yet, because she isn't sure

how he'll take it.

She hasn't told Zenia either. For one thing, she doesn't want to hurt her. Zenia can't have babies because of her hysterectomy for cancer, and Charis doesn't want to flaunt or boast.

But

also Zenia is now sleeping in the small room upstairs, the one that used to have all Charis's cardboard boxes in it. They moved her up there because Billy complained about never having

any privacy in the living room. It's this little room that Charis wants to make over into a nursery for the baby, after Zenia is gone. So how can she tell Zenia she's pregnant without practically booting her out onto the street?

And she couldn't do that, not yet; although when Zenia mentions leaving, Charis no longer tells her not to even think about it. She is torn: she wants Zenia to go, but she doesn't want her

to die. She would like to cure her and then never see her again. They don't have all that much

in common, and now that she has part of Zenia inside herself, the only part that's necessary to

her, she would rather -not have the actual, fleshly Zenia around. Zenia takes up a lot of time.

Also - though Charis hates to think this way - a certain amount of money. Charis doesn't really

have enough money for the three of them.

Zenia is looking a lot better, but this can be deceptive. Sometimes she'll eat a good meal and then rush to the bathroom and throw up. And just yesterday, after they'd been discussing

when Zenia might be ready to leave - after she'd been saying she was sure the tumours were

shrinking, she was really getting on top of it - Charis walked into the bathroom

319

and found the toilet bowl full of blood. If it were any other woman she'd have assumed that the woman was having her period and had forgotten to flush. But Zenia can't have periods. She has made that clear.

Charis was concerned, and asked about the blood; Zenia was offhand. It was just a hemorrhage, she said. More or less like a nosebleed. Minor. Charis admires her courage, but who is she trying to fool? Herself, maybe. She doesn't fool Charis. From time to time Charis wonders whether she should suggest a hospital. But she can't stand hospitals. Because her mother died in one she thinks of them as places where you go

to die. She is already making plans to have the baby at home.

Charis and Zenia are sitting at the kitchen table. They're finishing supper: baked potatoes, mashed-up squash, a cabbage salad. This cabbage came from the market, because Charis's own cabbages have all been used up. They've been turned into juice and poured into Zenia, green transfusions.

"You're looking stronger today," says Charis hopefully. "I'm strong as an ox," says Zenia. She puts her head down on the table for a moment, then -raises it with an effort. "Really, I am."

"I'll make you a cup of ginseng," says Charis. "Thanks," says Zenia. "So, where is he tonight?" "Billy?" says Charis. "Some meeting, I guess." "Don't you ever worry?" says Zenia.

"About what?" says Charis. "That it's not just some meeting."

Charis laughs. She has more confidence lately. "You mean, some chick," she says. "No. Anyway, it wouldn't interfere." She believes that. Billy can do what he wants with other women, because it wouldn't count.

Billy has begun speaking to Zenia. He now says good morning to her, and when he comes into a room she's already in, he

320

nods and grunts. What he calls his Southern manners are having a struggle with his aversion to

Zenia, and the manners are winning. The other night he even offered her a puff on the joint he

was smoking. But Zenia shook her head and Billy felt - rebuffed, and that was that. Charis would like to ask Zenia to take it easy on Billy, to meet him halfway, but after the way he's behaved she can hardly do that.

Behind Zenia's back, Billy is if anything even ruder than he was at first. "If she has cancer I'll eat my hat," he said two days ago.

"Billy!" said Charis, appalled. "She's had an operation! She has a big scar!"

"You seen it?" said Billy.

Charis hadn't. Why would she? Why would she ask to see a person's cancer scar? It wasn't something you could do.

"You want to place a little bet?" said Billy. "Five bucks there isn't one."

"No," said Charis. How could you prove such a thing? She had a short vision of Billy rushing into Zenia's room and tearing off her nightgown. That was not something she wanted.

"Penny for your thoughts," says Zenia.

"What?" says Charis. She is thinking about Zenia's scar. "Billy's a big boy," says Zenia.

"You

shouldn't get too anxious about him. He can take care of himself. "

"I was thinking about the winter," says Charis. "How we're going to get through it:"

"Not how - if," says Zenia. "Oh, sorry, too morbid. One day at a time!"

Mostly Zenia goes to bed early because Charis tells her to, but sometimes she stays up.

Charis

makes a good fire in the wood stove and they sit at the kitchen table and talk. Sometimes they

listen to music, sometimes they play solitaire.

321

"I can read the cards," Zenia says one evening. "Here, I'll read yours.

Charis isn't sure about this. She doesn't think it's such a good idea to know the future, because you can hardly ever change it, so why suffer twice? "Just for fun," says Zenia. She

has

Charis shuffle the deck three times and cut away from her so the bad luck won't come towards

her, and then she lays the cards out in rows of three, for the past, the present, and the future. She studies the rows, then adds another set of cards, crossways.

"Someone new is

coming into your life," she says. Oh, thinks Charis. That must be the baby. "And someone else

is . going out of it. There's water involved; a crossing of the water."~~ Zenia herself, thinks Charis. She'll get better, she'll leave soon. And anyone who leaves here has to cross water.

"Anything about Billy?" she says.

"There's a jack," says Zenia. "Jack of Spades. That could be him. Crossed by the Queen of Diamonds."

"Is that money?" says Charis.

"Yes," says Zenia, "but it's a cross card. There's something off about the money. Maybe he'll take up dealing drugs or something."

"Not Billy," says Charis. "He's too smart." She doesn't really want to go on with this.

"Where did you learn?" she asks. "My mother was a Roumanian gypsy," says Zenia carelessly. "She said it ran in the family."

"It does," says Charis. This makes sense to her: she knows about gifts like that, there's her own grandmother. Zenia's black hair and dark eyes, and also her fatalism - they'd go with being a gypsy.

"She was stoned to death, during the war," says Zenia. "That's terrible!" says Charis. No wonder Zenia has cancer - it's the past lying inside her, an oppressive heavy-metals past that

she's never cleaned out of herself. "Was it the Germans?" Being

322

stoned to death seems worse to her than being shot. Slower, more bruising, more painful; but

not very German. When she thinks of Germans she thinks of scissors, of white enamel tables. When she thinks of stoning, it's dust and flies and camels and palm trees. As in the Old Testament.

"No, by a bunch of villagers," says Zenia. "In Roumania. They thought she had the evil eye, they thought she was hexing their cows. They didn't want to waste their bullets so they used stones. Stones and clubs. Gypsies weren't the most popular item, there. I guess they still

aren't. But she knew it was going to happen, she was a clairvoyant. She handed me over to a

friend she had, in another village, the night before. That's what saved me."

"So you must speak some Roumanian," says Charis. If she'd known all of this, she would have gone about curing Zenia some other way. Not just with yoga and cabbages. She would

have tried more visualization, and not just about the cancer: about the Roumanians.

Perhaps

the keys to Zenia's illness are hidden in another language.

"I've repressed it," says Zenia. "You would too. I got a look at my mother after they'd finished with her. They left her there, lying in the snow. She was just a big lump of rotting meat:"

Charis flinches. This is a stomach-turning image. It explains why Zenia throws up so much - if that's what's inside her head. She needs to get such poisonous images out of her.

"Where was your father?" she says, to steer Zenia away from the dead mother.

"He was a Finn," says Zenia. "It's where I get my cheekbones."

Charis has only a vague notion of where Finland is. It has trees, and people with saunas and skin boots, and reindeer. "Oh," she says. "Why was he in Roumania?"

"He wasn't," says Zenia. "They were both Communists, before the war. They met at a youth congress in Leningrad. He

323

was killed later, in Finland, fighting the Russians, in the Winter War. Ironic, isn't it? He thought

he was on their side, but it was them who killed him.'

"My father was killed in the war, too," says Charis. She's glad they have a bond in common.

"I guess a lot of people were," says Zenia dismissively. "But that's history." She has gathered up the cards and is laying out a new batch. "Ah," she says. "The Queen of Spades."

"Is that still my cards?" says Charis.

"No," says Zenia. "These are mine." She isn't looking at the cards now, she's looking at the ceiling, obliquely, out of her half-closed eyes. "The Queen of Spades is bad luck. Some say it's

the death card:" Her long black hair falls like a heavy veil around her head.

"Oh, no," says Charis, dismayed. "I don't think we should do this. This is too negative."

"Okay," says Zenia, as if she doesn't care what she does. "I think I'll go to bed:"

Charis listens to her as she climbs up the stairs, dragging one foot after the other.

XXXVII

The winter wore on. It wore them down. Taking a bath was an arctic experience, feeding the chickens was a polar expedition: trudging through the snow, battling the fierce winds that swept in off the lake. The chickens themselves were cosy enough, inside the house that Billy

built. The straw and droppings kept them warm, the way they were supposed to.

Charis wished there were a layer of straw under her own house. She tacked some old blankets over the walls, she stuffed some obvious cracks with wadded newspapers. Luckily they

324

had enough wood: Charis had managed to acquire some, cheap, from a person who had given

up and gone back to the mainland. It wasn't split, and Billy split most of it, working outside with the axe, on warmer days: he liked chopping. But the house was still cold, except when Charis built the fire up to danger level. At those times the air inside got muggy and smelled like

heated mouse nest. There were real mice living under the floor, driven in by the cold; they came out at night to clean up crumbs and leave their droppings on the table. Zenia brushed the

droppings off onto the floor, wrinkling her nose.

Nothing more was being said about her leaving. Every morning she gave Charis a bulletin on her health: better, worse. One day she felt up to a walk, the next day she told Charis that her hair was falling out. She no longer expressed any hope, she no longer seemed to be participating in her own body. She took the things Charis offered her - the carrot juice, the herb teas - passively and without much interest; she was humouring Charis, but she didn't really think they would do any good. She had periods of depression, when she would lie on the

livingroom couch, wrapped in a blanket, or slump at the table. "I'm a terrible person," she would tell Charis, her voice tremulous. "I'm not worth all this trouble:"

"Oh, don't say that," Charis would say. "We all have those feelings. They're from the shadow side. Think of the best things about yourself." Zenia would reward her with a little wavering smile. "What if there isn't anything?" she would say weakly.

Zenia and Billy kept their distance from each other. Each still complained to Charis; they seemed to enjoy this, chewing each other over. Each liked the querulous taste of the other's name, the flavour of accusation, the bad taste. Charis would have liked to warn Billy not to be

so harsh to Zenia: he could drive her to snitch on him, about the bombing. But Charis couldn't

tell Billy this without admitting that she'd betrayed his

325

confidence, that Zenia knew. Then he would be furious with her.

Charis didn't want fury. She wanted only happy emotions, because any other emotions would smudge her baby. She tried to spend time only with the things that gave her peace: the

whiteness just after it snowed, before the soot of the city had a chance to fall; the gleam of icicles, the week they had the ice storm that took the telephone lines down. She walked around

the Island by herself, being careful not to slip on the frozen paths. Her stomach was growing harder and rounder now, her breasts were swelling. She knew that most of her white-light energy was being directed into the baby now, not into Zenia or even Billy. The baby was responding, she could sense it; inside her it was listening, it was attentive, it was absorbing the

light like a flower.

She hoped the other two didn't feel neglected, but there was nothing much she could do about it. She only had so much energy, and increasingly there was none to spare. She was becoming a more ruthless person, a harder one; she could feel her grandmother's ferociousness

in her hands more strongly now. The baby inside her was Karen again, unborn, and with Charis watching over her she would have a better chance. She would be born to the right mother, this time.

In her head she spent time decorating the small room, the baby's room. She would paint it white, later, when she had the money, when Zenia was gone. In the summer, when it was hot,

Billy could build a sauna in the backyard, beside the henhouse. Then next winter they could sit

inside it and get heated through, and go outside and roll around in the snow. That would be a

good way of using the snow; better than sitting inside and complaining about it, the way Zenia

did. And Billy too.

In April, when the snow had melted and the shoots of Charis's

326

three daffodil bulbs were poking up through the brown earth, and the chickens were outside again, scratching up the dirt, she told Billy and Zenia about the baby: She had to. Soon it would

be obvious; also, soon there would have to be some changes. She wouldn't be able to carry on

with the yoga classes, so the money would have to come from elsewhere. Billy would have to

get a job of some sort. He didn't have the right papers but there were jobs to be had anyway,

because some of his draftdodging friends had them. Billy would have to get off his butt.

Charis

wouldn't have thought like this, before the baby, but now she did.

And Zenia would finally have to go. Charis had been a teacher to her, but if Zenia failed to

take advantage of what Charis had given her, that was her own concern.

Enough is enough, said her grandmother's voice within her head. First things first. Blood is thicker than water.

She tells them one at a time, Zenia first. They're having dinner - baked beans from a can, frozen peas. Charis has not been so meticulous about organic lately; somehow she lacks the

time. Billy's in the city, again.

"I'm going to have a baby," Charis blurts out over the canned peaches.

Zenia is not hurt, not the way Charis has feared she would be. Nor does she offer any wistful congratulations or woman-to-woman hugs or pats on the hand. Instead she's contemptuous. "Well," she says, "you've certainly screwed up!"

"What do you mean?" says Charis.

"What makes you think Billy wants a kid?" says Zenia. This takes Charis's breath away.

She

recognizes that she's been going on a certain assumption: that everyone else will welcome this

baby as much as she does. She also recognizes that she hasn't been taking Billy into account.

She did make one attempt to imagine what it would be like to be a man, to be

327

Billy, having a baby, but she just couldn't do it. After that she made no effort to divine his reaction.

"Well of course he does," she says, trying for conviction. "You haven't told him yet, have you," says Zenia. It's not a question.

"How do you know?" says Charis. How does she know? Why are they fighting?

"Wait'll he finds out," says Zenia grimly. "This house is going to be one whole hell of a lot smaller with a screaming brat in it. You could've waited till I was dead."

Charis is amazed by her brutality and selfishness; amazed; and angry. But what comes out of her is close to appeasement. "There's nothing I can do about it now," she says.

"Sure there is," says Zenia, patronizingly. "You can get an abortion."

Charis stands up. "I don't want one," she says. She is close to tears, and when she goes upstairs - which she does right away, without for once doing the dishes - she does cry. She cries

into their sleeping bag, wounded and confused. Something is going wrong and she isn't even

sure what it is.

When Billy gets home she is still lying on the sleeping bag, with the light out and her clothes still on.

"Hey, what's the matter?" he says. "What's happening?" He kisses her face.

Charis heaves herself up, then throws her arms around him. "Haven't you noticed?" she says tearfully.

"Noticed what?" says Billy.

"I'm pregnant!" says Charis. "We're going to have a baby!" She's making it sound like a reproach; this isn't what she means. She wants him to celebrate with her.

"Oh shit," says Billy. He goes slack in her arms. "Oh Jesus Christ. When?"

"In August," says Charis, waiting for him to be glad. But he isn't glad. Instead he's treating this like a big catastrophe; like a

328

death; not a birth. "Oh shit," he says again. "What're we gonna do?"

In the middle of the night Charis finds herself standing outside, in the garden. She's been sleepwalking. She's in her nightgown and her feet are bare; the mud and leaf mould crumble

under her toes. She can smell a skunk, a distant one, like those run over on highways; but

how

could a skunk be here? This is the Island. But maybe they can swim.

Now she is fully awake. In her hand there's the imprint of another hand: it's her grandmother, trying to tell her something, trying to get through. A warning.

"What?" she says out loud. "What is it?"

She's aware that there's someone else in the garden, a dark shape leaning against the wall by

the kitchen window. She sees a small glow. It wasn't a skunk she smelled, it was smoke.

"Zenia, is that you?" she says.

"I couldn't sleep," says Zenia. "So, how's Big Daddy taking it?" "Zenia, you shouldn't be smoking," says Charis. She's forgotten she's angry with her. "It's so bad for your cells."

"Fuck

my cells," says Zenia. "They're fucking me! I might as well enjoy myself while I've got the time." Her voice comes out of the darkness, lazy, sardonic. "And I have to tell you I'm sick to death of your do-gooder act. You'd be one hell of a lot happier if you'd mind your own business:"

"I was trying to help you," Charis wails.

"Do me a favour," says Zenia. "Help someone else:" Charis can't understand it. Why was she brought out here to listen to this? She turns and goes inside, and gropes her way up the stairs. She doesn't turn on the light.

The next day Billy takes the early ferry into the city. Charis works feverishly in her garden, digging in the spring compost, trying to blank her mind. Zenia stays in bed.

329

When Billy comes back after dark, he is drunk. He's been drunk before but never this much. Charis is in the kitchen, doing the dishes, dishes left over from several days. She feels

heavy, she feels clogged; there's something in her head that won't come clear. No matter how

hard she looks, she can't see past the surfaces of things. She's being blocked, shut out; even

the garden today wouldn't let her in. The earth has lost its shine and is just an expanse of dirt,

the chickens are petulant and frowsy, like old feather dusters.

So when Billy comes in, she turns to look at him, but she doesn't say anything. Then she turns away from him, back to the dishes.

She hears him bump into the table; he knocks over a chair. Then his hands are on her shoulders. He turns her around. She hopes he's going to kiss her, tell her he's changed his mind, that everything is wonderful, but instead he begins to shake her. Back, forth, slowly.

"You ... are ... just ... so ... goddamn ... stupid," he says, in time to the shaking. "You are just so goddamn dumb!" His voice is almost fond.

"Billy, don't do that," she says.

"Why not?" he says. "Why the hell not? I can do what I like. You're too dumb to notice."

He lets go of her shoulder with one hand and slaps her across the face. "Wake up!" He slaps

her again, harder.

"Billy, stop that!" she says, trying to be firm and gentle, trying not to cry.

"Nobody ... tells ... me ... what to do:" He steps back from her, then brings his leg up, knee into her stomach. He's too drunk to aim well, but it hurts her.

"You'll kill it!" She's screaming now. "You'll kill our baby!" Billy puts his head down on her shoulder and begins to cry, hoarse choking sobs that sound torn out of him. "I told you," he said. "I told you, but you wouldn't listen."

"Told me what?" she says, stroking his yellow hair.

330

"There's no scars," he says. "Nothing. There's no scars at all." Charis doesn't put it together, what he's talking about. "Come on now," she says. "We're going up to bed." They do,

and she rocks him in her arms. Then they are both asleep.

In the morning Charis gets up to feed the chickens, as she always does. Billy is awake: he stays

warm underneath the sleeping bag, watching her dress. Before she goes downstairs she comes

over to give him a kiss on the forehead. She wants him to say something, but he doesn't.

First she lights the stove, then she fills the pail at the sink. She can hear Billy moving around upstairs; also Zenia, which is unusual. Maybe she's packing, maybe she'll leave.

Charis

certainly hopes so. Zenia can't stay here any more, she's causing too much disturbance in the

air.

Charis goes outside and unlatches the gate to the chickens' compound. She can't hear them

rustling around this morning, she can't hear their sleepy cooing. Sleepyheads! She opens the

chickens' door, but none of them come out. Puzzled, she goes around to the door for humans

and steps inside.

The chickens are all dead. Every single one of them, dead in their boxes, two of them on the floor. There is blood all over the place, on the straw, dripping down from the boxes. She picks up one of the dead hens from the floor: there's a slit in its throat.

She stands there, shocked and dismayed, trying to hold herself together. Her head is cloudy,

red fragments are swirling behind her eyes. Her beautiful chickens! It must have been a weasel.

What else? But wouldn't a weasel drink all the blood? Maybe it was a neighbour, not anyone

right next to her but somebody else. Who hates them that much? The chickens; or her and Billy. She feels violated.

"Billy," she calls. But he can't hear her, he's inside. She walks unsteadily towards the house; she thinks she's going to faint.

331

She reaches the kitchen, then calls again. He must have fallen asleep. Heavily she goes up the

stairs:

Billy isn't there. He isn't anywhere in the room, and when she looks into Zenia's room he isn't there either. Why would she expect him to be?

Zenia is gone also. They are both gone. They aren't in the house. Charis runs, she runs gasping, down towards the ferry dock. She knows now. It's finally happened: Billy has been kidnapped. When she reaches the dock the ferry is hooting, it's pulling away, and there is Billy

standing on it, with two strange men close to him. Two men in overcoats, just the way they would look. Beside him is Zenia. She must have told, she must have turned him in.

Billy doesn't wave. He doesn't want the two men to know Charis has anything to do with him. He's trying to protect her.

She walks slowly back to the house, goes slowly into it. She searches it from top to bottom, looking for a note, but there is nothing. In the sink she finds the bread knife, with blood on the blade.

It was Zenia. Zenia murdered her chickens.

Maybe Billy wasn't kidnapped. Maybe he's run -away. He's run away with Zenia. That's what he meant by no scars: there are no scars on Zenia. He knows because he's looked. He has looked at Zenia's body, all over it, with the light on. He knows everything there is to know about that body. He has been inside it.

Charis sits at the kitchen table, banging her head softly against it, trying to drive out thought. But she thinks anyway. If there are no scars there must be no cancer. Zenia doesn't have cancer, just as Billy said. But if that's true, what has Charis been doing for the past six months? Being a fool, that's what. Being stupid. Being so deeply stupid it's a wonder she has a brain at all.

332

Being betrayed. For how long, how many times? He tried to tell her. He tried to make Zenia go away, but then it was too late.

As for the dead chickens and the bread knife, it's a message. Slit your wrists. She hears a voice, a voice from a long time ago, more than one voice. You are so stupid. You can't win this

fight. Not in this life. She's had almost enough of this life anyway; maybe it's time for the next one. Zenia has taken away the part of herself she needs in order to live. She is dumb, she is a

failure, she is an idiot. The bad things that have happened to her are a punishment, they are to

teach her a lesson. The lesson is that she might as well give up.

That is Karen speaking. Karen is back, Karen has control of their body. Karen is angry with her, Karen is desolate, Karen is sick with disgust, Karen wants them to die. She wants to kill

their body. Already she has the bread knife in her hand, moving it towards their shared arm. But if she does that, their baby will die too, and Charis refuses to let that happen. She calls all of

her strength, all of her inner healing light, her grandmother's fierce blue light, into her hands; she wrestles Karen silently for possession of the knife. When she gets it, she pushes Karen away from her as hard as she can, back down into the shadows. Then she throws the knife out

the door.

She waits for Billy to come back: She knows he won't, but she waits anyway. She sits at the kitchen table, willing her body not to move, not moving. She waits all afternoon. Then she goes to bed.

By the next day she's no longer so spaced out. Instead she's frantic. The worst thing is not knowing. Maybe she's misjudged Billy, maybe he hasn't run away with Zenia. Maybe he's in prison, having his throat cut in the showers. Maybe he's dead.

She calls all the numbers scribbled on the wall beside their phone. She asks, she leaves messages. None of his friends has

333

heard anything, or will admit to it. Who else could know where he is, where he might have gone? Him, or Zenia, or both of them together. Who else knows Zenia?

She can think of only one person: West. West was living with Zenia before she turned up on Charis's doorstep with a black eye. Charis views that black eye from a different angle, now.

It could have had a valid reason for existing.

West teaches at the university, Zenia told her that. He teaches music or something. She wonders if he calls himself West, or Stewart. She will ask for both. It doesn't take her long to track down his home number.

She dials, and a woman answers. Charis explains that she's looking for Zenia.

"Looking for Zenia?" says the woman. "Now why in hell would anyone want to do that?"

"Who is this?" says Charis. "Antonia Fremont," says Tony.

"Tony," says Charis. Someone she knows, more or less. She doesn't stop to wonder what Tony is doing answering West's phone. She takes a breath. "Remember when you tried to help

me, on the front lawn of McClung Hall? And I didn't need it?" "Yes," says Tony guardedly.

"Well, this time I do."

"Help with Zenia?" says Tony. "Sort of," says Charis.

Tony says she'll come.

XXXVIII

Tony takes the ferry to the Island. She sits at Charis's kitchen table and drinks a cup of mint tea and listens to the whole story, nodding from time to time, with her mouth slightly open.

She

334

asks a few questions, but she doubts nothing. When Charis tells her how stupid she has been,

Tony says that Charis has not been particularly stupid; no more stupid than Tony was herself.

"Zenia is very good at what she does," is how she puts it.

"But I was so sorry for her!" says Charis. Tears roll down her face; she can't seem to stop them. Tony hands her a crumpled Kleenex.

"So was I," she says. "She's an expert at that."

She explains that West couldn't have punched Zenia in the eye, not only because West would never punch anyone in the eye but because at that time West wasn't living with Zenia.

He hadn't been living with Zenia for over a year and a half. He had been living with Tony.

"Though I suppose he might have done it just walking along the street," she says. "It would be a definite temptation. I don't know what I'd do if I ran into Zenia again. Soak her with gasoline maybe. Set fire to her."

As for Billy, Tony is of the opinion that Charis shouldn't waste time looking for him; first, because she'll never find him; second, because what if she did? If he's been kidnapped by the

Mounties she won't be able to rescue him, he's probably in some cement cubicle in Virginia by

now, and if he wants to get in touch with her he will. They do allow letters. If he hasn't been kidnapped, but has been bagged by Zenia instead, he won't want to see Charis anyway.

He'll be

feeling too guilty.

Tony knows, Tony's been through it: it's as if Billy has been put under a spell. But Zenia won't be content with Billy for long. He's too small a catch, and - Charis will excuse Tony for saying so - he was too easy. Tony has thought a lot about Zenia and has decided that Zenia likes challenges. She likes breaking and entering, she likes taking things that aren't hers.

Billy,

like West, was just target practice. She probably has a row of men's dicks nailed to her wall, like

stuffed animal heads.

"Leave him alone and he'll come home, wagging his tail

335

behind him," says Tony. "If he still has a tail, after Zenia gets through with him."

Charis is astonished at the ease with which Tony expresses hostility. It can't be good for her. But it brings an undeniable comfort.

"What if he doesn't?" says Charis. "What if he doesn't come back?" She is still sniffing.

Tony rummages under the sink and finds her a paper towel.

Tony shrugs. "Then he doesn't. There are other things to do."

"But why did she murder my chickens?" says Charis. No matter how she considers this, she

just can't get her head around it. The chickens were lovely, they were innocent, they had nothing to do with stealing Billy.

"Because she's Zenia," says Tony. "Don't fret about motives. Attila the Hun didn't have motives. He just had appetites. She killed them. It speaks for itself."

"Maybe it was because her mother was stoned to death by Roumanians, for being a gypsy,"

says Charis.

"What?" says Tony. "No, she wasn't! She was a White Russian in exile! She died in Paris, of

tuberculosis!"

Then Tony begins to laugh. She laughs and laughs. "What?" says Charis. puzzled.

"What is it?"

Tony makes Charis a cup of tea, and tells her to take a rest. She has to look after her health now, says Tony, because she is a mother. She wraps Charis up in a blanket and Charis lies on

the living-room sofa. She feels drowsy and cared for, as if things are out of her hands.

Tony goes outside with some plastic garbage bags - Charis knows plastic is bad, but she's found no alternative - and collects up the dead chickens. She sweeps out the chicken house.

She fills a pail of water and does the best she can with the blood.

336

"There's a hose," says Charis sleepily.

"I think I got most of it," says Tony. "What was this bread knife doing in the garden?"

Charis explains about trying to slit her wrists, and Tony doesn't scold her. She simply says that bread knives are not a viable solution, and washes it off and puts it back in the knife rack.

After Charis has had her rest, Tony sits her down at the table again. She has a sheet of paper

and a ballpoint pen. "Now, think of everything you need," she says. "Everything practical."

Charis thinks. She needs some white paint, for the nursery; she needs insulation for the house, because after the summer there will be a winter. She needs some loose dresses.

But she

can't afford any of these things. With Billy and Zenia eating up the groceries, she hasn't been

able to save. Maybe she will have to go on welfare.

"Money," she says slowly. She hates to say it. She doesn't want Tony to think she's begging.

"Good. Now, let's think of all the ways you can get some."

With the help of her friend Roz, whom Charis remembers dimly from McClung Hall, Tony finds Charis a lawyer, and the lawyer goes after Uncle Uern. He's alive, though Aunt Viola is not. He's still living in the house with the wall-to-wall and the rec room. Charis doesn't have to

go and see him - the lawyer does that for her, and reports to Tony. Charis doesn't have to tell

the whole story about Uncle Uern because everything the lawyer needs is there in the wills, her

mother's and her grandmother's. What has happened is perfectly clear: Uncle Uern has taken

the money he got from selling the farm, Charis's money, and put it into his own business. He claims he tried to find Charis after her twenty-first birthday, but he couldn't. Maybe this is true.

337

Charis doesn't get as much money as she should have - she doesn't get interest, and Uncle Vern has spent some of the capital, but she gets more than she's ever had before. She also

gets

a creepy note from Uncle Vern, saying he'd love to see her again because she was always like a

daughter to him. He must be going senile. She burns the note in the stove.

"I wonder if my life would've been better if I'd had a real father," she says to Tony.

"I had one," says Tony. "It was a mixed blessing:"

Roz invests some of Charis's money for her. It won't bring in very much, but it will help.

Charis

spends part of what's left buying the house - the landlord wants it off his hands, he thinks the city

will tear it down any day now, so he's happy to take a low price. After she's bought the house she

fixes it up, not totally but enough.

Roz comes over to the Island, because she loves renovating houses, or so she says. She is even larger than Charis remembers her; her voice is louder, and she has a bright

lemon-coloured

aura that Charis can see without even looking hard.

"Oh, this is terrific," says Roz, "it's just like a doll's house! But sweetie - you need a different table!" The next day, a different table arrives. It's round and oak, just what Charis wants.

Charis

decides that - despite all appearances - Roz is a sensitive person:

Roz busies herself with the layette, because Tony doesn't like shopping and anyway wouldn't

have a clue what to buy. Neither does Charis. But Roz has had a baby of her own, so she knows

everything, even how many towels. She tells Charis how much it all costs so Charis can pay her

back, and Charis is surprised at the lowness of the prices. "Honey, I'm the original bargain hunter," says Roz. "Now, what you need is a Happy Apple. They're those plastic apples, they

dingle in the bath - I swear by them!"

338

Charis, once so tall and thin, is now tall and bulgy. Tony spends the last two weeks of the pregnancy at Charis's house. She can afford to, she says, because it's the summer

vacation. She

helps Charis with her breathing exercises, timing Charis on her big-numbers wristwatch and

squeezing Charis's hand in her own little hand, so strangely like a squirrel's paw. Charis can't quite

believe she is actually having a baby; or she can't quite believe that the baby will soon be outside

her. She knows it's in there, she talks to it constantly. Soon she will be able to hear its own voice,

in return.

She promises it that she will never touch it in anger. She will never hit it, not even a casual slap. And she almost never does.

Charis goes to a hospital after all, because Tony and Roz decide it will be better: if there were

complications Charis would have to be taken to the mainland in a police launch, which would not

be appropriate. When August is born she has a golden halo, just like Jesus in the Christmas cards.

No one else can see it, but Charis can. She holds August in her arms and vows to be the

best

person she can be, and praises her oval God.

Now that August is in the outside world Charis feels more anchored. Anchored, or tethered. She no longer blows around so much in the wind; all of her attention is on the now. She has been pushed back into her own milky flesh, into the heaviness of her breasts, into her own field

of graviry. She lies under her apple tree on a blanket spread on the patchy grass, in the humid

air, in the sunlight filtering through the leaves, and sings to August. Karen is far away, which is

just as well: Karen would not be dependable around small children.

Tony and Roz are the godmothers. Not officially, of course, because there isn't a church in the world that would do things the way Charis wants. She performs the ceremony herself, with

her grandmother's Bible and a very potent round stone she found on the beach, and a bayberry

candle and some spring

339

water from a bottle, and Tony and Roz promise to watch over August and to protect her spirit.

Charis is glad she's able to give August two such hard-headed women as godmothers.

They

won't let her be a wimp, they'll teach her to stand up for herself - not a quality Charis is sure that she herself can provide.

There is a third godmother present, of course - a dark godmother, one who brings negative gifts. The shadow of Zenia falls over the cradle. Charis prays she will be able to cast enough

light, from within herself, to wash it away.

August grows bigger, and Charis tends her and rejoices, because August is happy, happier than

Charis ever was when she was Karen, and she feels the tears in her own life mending.

Though

not completely, never completely. At night she takes long baths, with lavender and rosewater in

them, and she visualizes all of her negative emotions flowing out of her body into the bathwater, and when she pulls the plug they swirl down the drain. It's an operation she feels compelled to repeat frequently. She stays away from men, because men and sex are too difficult for her, they are too snarled up with rage and shame and hatred and loss, with the taste of vomit and the smell of rancid meat, and with the small golden hairs on Billy's vanished

arms, and with hunger:

She is better just by herself, and with August. August's aura is daffodil yellow, strong and clear. Even by the age of five she has definite opinions. Charis is glad about that; she's glad

August is not a Pisces, like her. August has few electric feelers, few hunches; she can't even tell

when it's going to rain. Such things are gifts, true, but not without their drawbacks. Charis writes August's horoscope into one of her notebooks, a mauve one: sign, Leo; gem, the diamond; metal, gold; ruler, the Sun.

In all this time there is no word from Billy. Charis decides to tell August - when she is big enough - that her father died

340

bravely fighting in the Vietnam War. It's the sort of thing she got told herself, and possibly

just

as accurate. She doesn't have a solemn picture of Billy in a uniform, though, for the simple reason that he didn't have such a thing. The only picture she has of him is a snapshot, taken by

one of his buddies. In it he's holding a beer and wearing a T-shirt and shorts; it was when he was working on the henhouse. He looks hammered, and the top of his head is cut off. She doesn't consider it suitable for framing.

The ferry pulls into its dock and the gangway goes down, and Charis walks off, breathing in the clear Island air: Dry grass like reed pipes, loam like a cello. Here she is, back at her house,

her fragile but steady house, her flimsy house that is still standing, her house with the lush flowers, her house with the cracked walls, her house with the cool white peaceful bed.

Her house, not theirs; not Billy's and Zenia's, even though this is where it all happened.

Maybe it wasn't such a good idea to stay here. She has exorcised their fragments, she has burned sweetgrass, she has purified all the rooms, and the birth of August was an exorcism in

itself. But she could never get rid of Billy, no matter what she tried, because his story was unfinished; and with Billy came Zenia. The two of them were glued together.

She needs to see Zenia because she needs to know the end. She needs to get rid of her, finally. She won't tell Tony or Roz about this need, because they would discourage her. Tony would say, keep out of the fire zone. Roz would say, why stick your head in a blender?

But Charis has to see Zenia. and very soon she will, now that she knows where Zenia is.

She'll march right into the Arnold Garden Hotel and go up in the elevator and knock on the door. She's feeling almost strong enough. And August is grown up now. Whatever the truth turns out to be, about Billy, she's old enough not to be too hurt by it.

341

So Charis will confront Zenia and this time she won't be intimidated, she won't conciliate, she won't back down; she will stand her ground and fight back. Zenia, chicken murderer, drinker of innocent blood. Zenia, who sold Billy for thirty pieces of silver. Zenia, aphid of the soul.

From her bookshelf she takes down her grandmother's Bible and sets it on her oak table.

She finds a pin, closes her eyes, waits for the pull downwards.

Kings Two, Nine, Thirty-five, she reads. And they went to bury her, but they found no more of her

than the skull, and the feet, and the palms of her hands.

It's Jezebel thrown down from the tower, Jezebel eaten by dogs. Again, thinks Charis.

Behind her eyes there is a dark shape falling.

I Q I'd S -'d A SSO-d I H .L

~XIX

Roz paces her office, to and fro, back and forth, smoking and eating the package of stale cheese straws she stashed in her desk last week and then forgot about, and waiting. Smoking, eating, waiting, the story of her life. Waiting for what? She can't expect feedback this

early. Harriet the Hungarian snoop is good, but surely it will take her days to sniff out Zenia, because Zenia won't have hidden herself in any obvious place, or so you'd think. Though maybe she's not hiding. Maybe she's out in plain sight. There's Roz, down on all fours looking

under the bed, at the fluff balls and the dried-out bug carcasses that always seem to accumulate

there despite Roz's state-of-the-art vacuum cleaner, and all the time Zenia is standing right there in the middle of the room. What you see is what you get, she says to Roz. Only you didn't see it.

She likes to rub things in.

Over by the window Roz comes to a stop. Her office is a corner office, naturally, and on the top floor. Toronto company presidents are entitled to top-floor corner offices, even small-potatoes presidents like Roz. It's a status thing: in this city there's nothing higher on the totem

pole than a room with a view, even if the view is mostly idle cranes and construction scaffolding and the freeway with its beetle-sized cars, and the spaghetti snarl of railroad tracks.

But anyone who walks into Roz's office gets the message at once. Let's have a little respect around

here! Harrumph, harrumph! Monarch of all she surveys:

Like shit. Nobody is monarch of anything any more. It's all out of control.

From here Roz can see the lake, and the future marina they're building out of termite-riddled landfill, and the Island, where Charis has her tiny falling-apart mouse nest of a house; 345

and, from her other window, the CN Tower - tallest lightning rod in the world - with the SkyDome stadium beside it, nose and eye, carrot and onion', phallus and ovum, pick your own symbolism, and it's a good thing Roz didn't invest in that one, rumour has it the backers are losing a shirt or two. If she stands in the angle of the two windows and looks north, there's the university with its trees, golden at this time of year, and hidden behind it, Tony's red-brick Gothic folly. Perfect for Tony though, what with the turret. She can hole herself up in there and pretend she's invulnerable. Roz wonders what the other two are doing right now. Are they pacing the floor like her, are they nervous? Seen from the air the three of them would form a triangle, with Roz as their apex. They could signal to each other with flashlights, like Nancy Drew the girl detective. Of course there's always the phone.

Roz reaches for it, dials, sets it down. What can they tell her? They don't know anything more about Zenia than she does. Less, most likely.

Roz's hands are damp, and her underarms. Her body smells like rusty nails. Is this a hot flash, or merely the old rage coming back? She's just jealous, people say, as if jealousy is something minor. But it's not, it's the worst, it's the worst feeling there is - incoherent and confused and shameful, and at the same time self-righteous and focused and hard as glass, like the view through a telescope. A feeling of total concentration, but total powerlessness. Which must be why it inspires so much murder: killing is the ultimate control.

Roz thinks of Zenia dead. Her actual body, dead. Dead and melting.

Not very satisfying, because if Zenia were dead she wouldn't know it. Better to think of her ugly. Roz takes Zenia's face, pulls down on it as if it's putty. Some nice jowls, a double chin, a permanent scowl. Blacken a few teeth, like children's drawings of witches. Better.

346

Mirror, mirror on the wall, who is the most beautiful of us all? Depends, says the mirror.

Beauty is only skin deep.

Right you are, says Roz, I'll take some anyway. Now answer my question. -

I think you're a really terrific person, says the mirror. You're warm and generous. You should have no

difficulty at all finding some other man.

I don't want some other man, says Roz, trying not to cry. I want Mitch.

Sorry, says the mirror. Can't be done. It always ends like that,

Roz blows her nose and gathers up her jacket and purse, and locks her office door. Boyce is

working late, bless his fussy little argyle socks: the light's on under his door. She wonders

whether she should knock and invite him out for a drink, which he wouldn't find it politic to refuse, and take him to the King Eddie bar and bore the pants off him.

Better not. She'll go home and bore her kids, instead. She has a vision of herself, running down Bay Street in nothing but her orange bathrobe, tossing big handfuls of money out of a burlap bag. Divesting herself of her assets. Getting rid of all her filthy lucre. After that she could join a cult, or something. Be a monk. A monkess. A monkette. Live on dried beans. Embarrass everybody, even more than she does now. But would there be electric toothbrushes? To be holy, would you need to get plaque?

The twins are watching TV in the family room, which is decorated in Nouveau Pueblo - sand,

sage, ochre, and with a genuine cactus looming by the window, wrinkling like a morel, dying from overwatering. Roz must speak to Maria about that. Whenever Maria sees a plant, she waters it. Or else she dusts it. Roz once caught Maria going over that cactus with the vacuum

cleaner, which can't have done it any good.

347

"Hi Mom," says Erin.

"Hi Mom," says Paula. Neither of them looks at her; they're channel-changing, snatching the zapper back and forth. "Dumb!" cries Erin. "So-o-o stupid! Look at that geek."

"Brain snot!" says Paula. "C'est con, (a! Hey - my turn!" "Hi kids," says Roz. She kicks off her tight shoes and flops down in a chair, a dull purple chair the colour of New Mexican cliff rock just after sunset, or so said the decorator. Roz wouldn't know. She wishes Boyce were here; he'd mix her a drink. Not even mix: pour. A single malt, straight up, is what she'd like, but all of a sudden she's too tired to get it for herself. "What're you watching?" she says to her

beautiful children. "Mom, nobody watches TV any more," says Paula.

"We're looking for shampoo ads," says Erin. "We want to get rid of our flaky dandruff."

Paula pulls her hair over one eye, like a model. "Do you suffer from ... flaky crotch dandruff?" she intones in a phoney advertising voice. They both seem to find this riotously funny. But at the same time they're scanning her, little fluttery sideways glances, checking for crisis.

"Where's your brother?" Roz says wearily. "My turn," says Erin, grabbing the zapper. "Out," says Paula. "I think:"

"Planet X," says Erin.

"Dancing and romancing," they say together, and giggle.

If only they would settle down, rent a nice movie, something with duets in it, Roz could make popcorn, pour melted butter on it, sit with them in warm family companionship. As in days of yore. Mary Poppins was their favourite, once; back in their flannelette-nightie days.

But

now they've hit the music channel, and there's some man in a torn undershirt hopping up and

down and wiggling his scrawny hips and sticking out his tongue in what he must assume is a

sexual manner, although to Roz he just looks like a mouth-disease illustration, and Roz doesn't

348

have the stamina for this, even without the sound, so she gets up and goes upstairs in her stocking feet and puts on her bathrobe and her trodden-down landlady slippers, then ambles

down to the kitchen, where she finds a half-eaten Nanaimo bar in the refrigerator. She puts it

on a plate - she will not revert to savagery, she will use a fork - and adds some individually

wrapped Laughing Cow cheese triangles she bought for the kids' lunches and a couple of Tomek's Pickles, an Old Polish Recipe, drink the juice for hangovers. No point in asking the kids to join her for dinner. They will say they've eaten, whether they have or not. Thus provisioned, Roz wanders the house, from room to room, munching pickles and revising the wall colours in her head. Pioneer blue, she thinks. That's what I need. Return to my roots.

Her

weedy and suspect roots, her entangled roots. Inferior to Mitch's, like so many other intangibles. Mitch had roots on his roots.

Some time later she finds herself holding an empty plate and wondering why there is no longer anything on it. She's standing in the cellar, the old part, the part she's never had redone.

The storage part, with the poured cement floor and the cobwebs. The remains of Mitch's wine

collection is over in one corner: not his best wines, he took those with him when he flew the coop. Probably he drank them with Zenia. Roz hasn't touched a single bottle of what's left, she

can't bear to. Nor can she bear to throw it out.

Some of Mitch's books are down here, too; his old law textbooks, his Joseph Conrads, his yacht manuals. Poor baby, he loved his boats. He thought he was a sailor at heart, though every

time they went sailing something conked out. Some motor part or piece of wood, search

Roz,

she never got used to saying prow and stern instead of front and back. She sees herself standing

on one of those boats, the Rosalind it must have been, the first one, named after her, with her

nose peeling from sunburn and her shoulders freckling and Mitch's cap tilted on her
349

head, waving some wrench or other - This one, honey? - while they drifted towards a rocky shore

- where? Lake Superior? - and Mitch bent over the motor, swearing under his breath. Was it fun? No. But she would rather be there than here.

She turns her back on Mitch's stuff so she won't have to look at it. It's too doleful. There are some of the twins' old things down here too, and some of Larry's: his baseball glove, his board games - Admirals, Strategy, Kamikaze - foisted on him by Tony because she thought those were the kind of games he should like. The children's books, fondly saved by Roz in the

hope that someday she will have grandchildren and will read them these very same books.

Do

you know, sweetie - this used to be your mommy's! "en she was a little girl. (Or your daddy's. But Roz,

although she hopes, has trouble picturing Larry as a father.)

Larry used to sit gravely silent while she read to him. His favourites were about trains that talked and were a success, or good-for-you books about interspecies cooperation. Mr.

Bear

helps Mr. Beaver build a dam. Larry didn't comment much. But with the twins she could barely

get a word in edgewise. They would fight her for control of the story - Change the ending, Mom!

Make them go back! I don't like this part! They'd wanted Peter Part to end before Wendy grew up,

they'd wanted Matthew in Anne of Green Gables to live forever.

She remembers one phase, when they were, what? Four, five, six, seven? It went on for a

while. They'd decided that all the characters in every story had to be female. Winnie the Pooh

was female, Piglet was female, Peter Rabbit was female: If Roz slipped up and said "he," they

would correct her: She! She! they would insist. All of their stuffed animals were female, too. Roz still doesn't know why. When she asked them, the twins would give her looks of deep contempt. "Can't you see?" they would say.

She used to worry that this belief of theirs was some reaction

to Mitch and his absences, some attempt to deny his existence. But maybe it was simply the lack

of penises, on the stuffed animals. Maybe that was it. In any case, they grew out of it.

Roz sits down on the cellar floor, in her orange bathrobe, never mind the cement dust and silverfish and webs. She pulls books off the shelves at random. To Paula and Erin, from Aunt

Tony. There on the cover is the dark forest, the dark wolfish forest, where lost children wander

and foxes lurk, and anything can happen; there is the castle turret, poking through the knobbly

trees. The Three Little Pigs, she reads. The first little pig built his house of straw. Her house, her

house, shout the small voices in her head. The Big Bad Wolf fell down the chimney, right into

the cauldron of boiling water, and got his fur all burned off. Her fur! It's odd what a difference it

makes, changing the pronoun.

At one point the twins decided that the wolf should not be dropped into the cauldron of boiling water - it should be one of the little pigs, instead, because they had been the stupid ones.

But when Roz suggested that maybe the pigs and the wolf could forget about the boiling water

and make friends, the twins were scornful. Somebody had to be boiled.

It amazed Roz then, how bloodthirsty children could be. Not Larry; he didn't like the more violent stories, they gave him nightmares. He didn't take to the kinds of books Tony liked to contribute - those authentic fairy tales in the gnarlytree editions, not a word changed, all the pecked-out eyes and cooked bodies and hanged corpses and red-hot nails intact. Tony said they

were more true to life that way.

"The Robber Bridegroom," reads Tony, long ago, a twin at each elbow. The beautiful maiden,

the search for a husband, the arrival of the rich and handsome stranger who lures innocent girls

to his stronghold in the woods and then chops them up and eats them. "One day a suitor appeared. He was ...

"She! She!" clamour the twins.

351

"All right, Tony, let's see you get out of this one," says Roz, standing in the doorway.

"We could change it to The Robber Bride," says Tony. "Would that be adequate?"

The twins give it some thought, and say it will do. They are fond of bridal costumes, and dress their Barbie dolls up in them; then they hurl the brides over the stair railings or drown them in the bathtub.

"In that case," says Tony, "who do you want her to murder? Men victims, or women victims? Or maybe an assortment?" The twins remain true to their principles, they do not flinch. They opt for women, in every single role.

Tony never talked down to the children. She didn't hug them or pinch their cheeks or tell them they were sweet. She spoke to them as if they were miniature adults. In turn, the twins accepted her as one of themselves. They let her in on things, on their various plots and conspiracies, their bad ideas - stuff they would never have shared with Roz. They used to put

Tony's shoes on and march around the house in them, one shoe for each twin, when they were

six or seven. They were entranced by those shoes: grown-up shoes that fit them!

The Robber Bride, thinks Roz. Well, why not? Let the grooms take it in the neck for once.

The Robber Bride, lurking in her mansion in the dark forest, preying upon the innocent, enticing youths to their doom in her evil cauldron. Like Zenia.

No. Too melodramatic for Zenia, who was, after all - who is surely nothing more than an up-market slut. The Rubber Broad is more like it - her and those pneumatic tits.

Roz is crying again. What she's mourning is her own good will. She tried so hard, she tried so hard to be kind and nurturing, to do the best thing. But Tony and the twins were right: no matter what you do, somebody always gets boiled.

352

XL

The story of Roz and Zenia began on a lovely day in May, in 1983, when the sun was shining

and the birds were singing and Roz was feeling terrific.

'Well, not quite terrific. Baggy, to tell the truth: under the eyes, under the arms. But better than she'd felt when she'd turned forty. Forty had been truly depressing, she had despaired, she'd dyed her hair black, a tragic mistake. But she'd come to terms with herself since then, and

her hair was back to auburn.

Also: the story of Roz and Zenia had actually begun some time before, inside Zenia's head, but Roz had no idea.

Not quite that, either. She had an idea, but it was the wrong idea. It was hardly even an idea,

just a white idea balloon with no writing inside it. She had an idea that something was up.

She

thought she knew what, but she didn't know who. She told herself she didn't much care: she was past that. As long as it didn't disrupt, as long as it didn't interfere, as long as she could come out of it with not very many ribs broken. Some men needed their little escapades. It kept

them toned up. As an addiction it was preferable to alcohol or golf, and Mitch's things - things,

she called them, to distinguish them from people - never lasted long.

It was a lovely May day, though. That much was true.

Roz wakes up at first light. She often does this: wakes up, and sits up stealthily, and watches

Mitch when he's still sleeping. It's one of the few chances she gets to look at him when he can't

catch her doing it and interpose his opaque blue stare. He doesn't like being examined: it's too

close to an evaluation, which is too close to a judgment. If there are judgments going around he wants to be making them himself.

He sleeps on his back, legs flung wide, arms spread out as if

353

to possess as much of the space as possible. The Royal Posture, Roz saw it called once, in a

magazine. One of those psychocon articles that claim to tell all on the basis of how you tie

your shoelaces. His Roman nose juts up, his slight double chin and the heaviness around his

jaw disappear in this position. There are white lines around his eyes, wrinkles where he isn't tanned; some of the blunt hairs poking through his morning chin are grey.

Distinguished, thinks Roz. Distinguished as heck. Maybe she,,; should've married someone ugly. Some ugly toad of a man who'd never be able to believe his good luck, who'd appreciate

her sterling qualities of character, who'd worship her baby finger. Instead she had to go for distinguished. Mitch should have married a cold blonde with homicidal eyes and a double string of real pearls grafted onto her neck, and a built-in pocket behind the left breast, for the

bankbook. Such a woman would've been up to him. She would not have taken the kind of crap Roz takes.

She goes back to sleep, dreams about her father standing on a black mountain, a mountain of coal or of something burnt, hears Mitch's alarm go off, hears it go off again, wakes finally.

The space beside her is empty. She climbs out of bed, out of the king-sized bed with the brass bedstead in a curving art nouveau design and the raspberry-coloured sheets and duvet

cover, onto the aubergine carpet, in the bedroom with its salmon walls and the priceless twenties dresser and mirror, faux Egyptian, and slips into her cream satin robe and pads barefoot into the bathroom. She loves this bathroom! It has everything: shower cubicle, jacuzzi, bidet, a heated towel rack, His and Hers sinks so the hairs from Roz's head won't get

mixed up with the stubble from Mitch's chin. She could live in this bathroom! So could several Southeast Asian families, come to that, she reflects morosely. Guilt sets in.

Mitch is already in here, taking a shower. His pink silhouette

354

looms dimly through the steam and the pebble glass. Years ago - how many? - Roz would have

scampered playfully into the shower, too; she would have soaped him all over, rubbed herself

against his slippery body, pulled him down onto the tiled bathroom floor; back in the days when his skin fit him exactly, no sags, no bulges, and hers did too, and when he tasted like hazelnuts, a delicious roasted smell; but she doesn't do such things now, now that she has become more reluctant to be viewed by daylight.

Anyway, if what she suspects is true, this is the wrong time to be putting herself on display. In Mitch's cosmology Roz's body represents possessions, solidity, the domestic virtues, hearth

and home, long usage. Mother-of-his-children. The den. Whereas whatever other body may currently be occupying his field of vision will have other nouns attached to it: adventure, youth, freedom, the unknown, sex without strings. When the pendulum swings back - when that other body starts representing complications, decisions, demands, sulkiness, and weepy

scenes - then it will be Roz's turn again. This has been the pattern.

Intuition is not one of Roz's strong suits, but she has intuitions about the onset of Mitch's attacks. She thinks of them as attacks, as in attacks of malaria; or else as attacks of a different

nature, for isn't Mitch a predator, doesn't he take advantage of these poor women, who are surely becoming younger and younger as Mitch gets older and older, isn't it really more like a

bear attack, a shark attack, aren't these women savaged by him? Judging from some of the tearful phone calls Roz has fielded, some of the shoulders she's patted in her hypocritical, maternal, there-there-ing way, they are.

It's amazing the way Mitch can just write these women off. Sink his teeth into them, spit them out, and Roz is expected to clean up the mess. Fire off his loins and then wipe, like a blackboard, and after that he can barely remember their names.

355

Roz is the _one who remembers. Their names, and everything else about them.

The beginnings of Mitch's flings are never obvious. He never says blatant things such as "I'm

working late at the office"; when he says that, he really is working late at the office. Instead, his

habits undergo a subtle change. The numbers of conferences he goes to, the numbers of showers he takes, the amount he whistles in them, the quantity and kind of aftershave he uses

and the places where he splashes it - the groin is a sure giveaway - such things are minutely

observed by Roz, looking pleasantly out of her indulgent eyes, bristling like a bottlebrush within. He stands up straighter, pulls in his stomach more; she catches him glaring at himself,

at his profile, in hall mirrors, in store windows, his eyes narrowing as if for a leonine pounce.

He's more considerate of her, more attentive; he's alert to her, watching her to see if she's watching. He gives her little kisses on the back of her neck, on her fingertips - little homage kisses, little forgive-me kisses, but nothing that might be construed as foreplay, because in bed

he becomes inert, he turns his back, he pleads minor illnesses, he takes up the jackknife posi-

tion, oystering himself against her stroking fingers. His prick is a serial monogamist; a sure sign

of a dyed-in-the-wool romantic, in Roz's books. No cynical polygamy for it! One more, it wants, just one more woman, because a man's reach should exceed his grasp, and Mitch is afraid of dying, and if he were ever to pause, to see himself as a man married to Roz, married

only to Roz, married to Roz forever, in that instant his hair would fall out, his face would wrinkle up like a thousandyear-old mummy's, his heart would stop. Or that is how Roz explains him, to herself.

She asks him if he's seeing someone.

He says no. He says he's just tired. He's under a lot of

pressure; he says, a lot of stress, and to prove it he gets up in the middle of the night and goes

into his study, where he shuts the door and works until dawn. Sometimes there is the murmur

of his voice: dictating letters, or so he claims, offering unasked-for explanations at breakfast.

And thus it goes, until Mitch gets tired of whoever it is he really has been seeing. Then he becomes deliberately careless, then he starts to leave clues. The match folder from the restau-

rant where he and Roz have never been, the unknown-number long-distance phone-call entries

on their home phone bill. Roz knows that at this point she is supposed to call him on it.

She's

supposed to confront him, to rave and scream, to cry and accuse and grovel, to ask him if he

still loves her and whether the children mean anything to him at all. She's supposed to behave

the way she did the first time (the second time, the fifth time), so he will be able to wriggle off

the hook, so he can tell the other woman, the one with the haggard lines appearing around her eyes, the one with the pieces of love bitten out of her, that he will always adore her but he can't bear to leave the kids; and so he will be able to tell Roz - magnanimously, and with a heroic air of self-sacrifice - that she is the most important woman in his life, no matter how badly and foolishly he may behave from time to time, and he's given the other woman up for her, so how can she refuse to forgive him? The other women are just trivial adventures, he will imply: she's the one he comes home to. Then he will throw himself into her as into a warm bath, as into a deep feather bed, and exhaust himself, and sink again into connubial torpor. Until the next time.

Lately, however, Roz has been refusing her move. She's learned to keep her big fat mouth shut.

She ignores the phone bills and the match covers, and after the midnight conversations she tells him sweetly that she hopes he's not overdoing it with too much

357

work. During his conference absences she finds other things to do. She has meetings to go to,

she has plays to attend, she has detective novels to read, tucked up in bed with her night cream; she has friends, she has her business to keep up; her time is fully occupied with items

other than him. She adopts absentmindedness: she forgets to send his shirts to the cleaners,

and when he speaks to her she says, "What did you just say, sweetie?" She buys new dresses

and new perfumes, and smiles at herself in mirrors when he can be supposed not to be look-

ing, but is, and Mitch begins to sweat.

Roz knows why: his little piece of cotton candy is growing claws, she's saying she doesn't understand what's going on with him, she's whining, she's babbling about coiiiinitment and divorce, both of them things he is now supposed to be doing, after all he's promised. The net

is closing around him and he's not being rescued. He's being thrown from the troika, thrown to the wolves, to the hordes of ravening bimbos snapping at his heels.

In desperation he resorts to more and more open ploys. He leaves private letters lying around - the women's letters to him, and, worse, his letters to the women - he actually makes

copies! - and Roz reads them and fumes, and goes to the gym to work out, and eats chocolate

mud cake afterwards, and puts the letters back where she found them and does not mention

them at all. He announces a separate vacation - maybe he will take the boat on a short trip around Georgian Bay, by himself, he needs some time to unwind - and Roz pictures some loosemouthed slut spread out on the deck of the Rosalind 77, and mentally rips up the snapshot, and tells him she thinks that's a wonderful idea because each of them could use a

little space.

God only knows how much she bites her tongue. She waits until the last minute, just before he really has to elope, or else get caught screwing his latest thing in Roz's raspberry-coloured

bed in order to get Roz's attention. Only then will she reach out a helping hand, only then will she haul him back from the

358

brink, only then will she throw the expected tantrum. The tears Mitch sheds then are not tears

of repentance. They are tears of relief.

Does Roz secretly enjoy all this? She didn't at first. The very first time it happened she felt scooped out, disjointed, scorned and betrayed, crushed by bulldozers. She felt worthless, useless, sexless. She thought she would die. But she's developed a knack, and therefore a taste.

It's the same as a business negotiation or a poker game. She's always been a whiz at poker. Yqu

have to know when to up the stakes, when to call a bluff, when to fold. So she does enjoy it, some. It's hard not to enjoy something you're good at.

But does her enjoyment make it all right? On the contrary. It's her enjoyment that makes it all wrong. Any old nun could tell you that, and many of them did tell Roz, once, in the earlier part of her life. If she could suffer through Mitch's attacks like a martyr, weeping and flagellating herself- if she could let them be imposed on her, without participating at all, without colluding, without lying and concealing and smiling and playing Mitch like an oversized carp, how right it would be. She'd be suffering for love, suffering passively, instead

of fighting. Fighting for herself, for her idea of who she is. The right kind of love should be selfless, for women at any rate, or so said the Sisters. The Self should be scrubbed like a floor:

on both knees, with a harsh wire brush, until nothing is left of it at all.

Roz can't do that. She can't be selfless, she never could. Anyway her way is better. It's harder on Mitch, perhaps, but it's easier on her. She's had to give up some love, of course; some of her once-boundless love for Mitch. You can't keep a cool head when you're drowning

in love. You just thrash around a lot, and scream, and wear yourself out.

The May sunlight comes in through the window, and Mitch whistles "It Ain't Me, Babe," and Roz flosses her teeth quickly

359

so Mitch won't see her doing it when he gets out of the shower. There is nothing so dampening to lust as dental floss, in Roz's opinion: a wide-open mouth with a piece of goeey

string being manoeuvred around in it. She has always had good teeth, they are one of her features. Only recently has she begun to think they may not always be where they are right now, namely inside her mouth.

Mitch steps out of the shower and comes up behind her and encircles her with his arms, and presses her against himself, and nuzzles her hair aside and kisses her on the neck. If they

hadn't made love last night she would find this neck kiss conclusive: surely it is too courtly to be innocent! But at this preliminary stage, you never know.

"Good shower, honey?" she says. Mitch makes the noise he makes when he thinks Roz has

asked a question so meaningless it doesn't require an answer, not knowing that what she said

wasn't a question anyway but an inverted wish: translation, I hope you had a good shower, and here

is your opening to complain about any little physical problem you may be having so I can offer sympathy.

"I thought we could have lunch," says Mitch. Roz notes the formulation: not Would you like

to have lunch or I am inviting you to lunch. No room here for a yes or no from her, no room for a rejection: Mitch is nothing if not directive. But at the same time her heart turns over, because she doesn't get invitations like this from him very often. She looks at his face in the mirror, and he smiles at her. She always finds his mirror reflection disconcerting. Lopsided, because she isn't used to seeing him that way around and he looks reversed. But nobody's symmetrical. She suppresses the desire to say, Judas Priest, how come I rate all of a sudden? Is hell freezing over, or what? Instead she says, "Honey, that would be great! I'd love it!"

Roz sits on the bath stool, a converted Victorian commode,
360
and watches Mitch while he shaves. She adores watching him shave! All that wild white foam, a sort of caveman beard, and the way he contorts his face to get at the hidden stubble. She has to admit he's not only distinguished, he's still what you'd call handsome, though his skin is getting redder and his blue eyes are paling. Ruggedly handsome, they might say in a men's clothing ad, though they'd be talking about the sheepskin coat. The sheepskin coat, the sheepskin gloves, the calfskin briefcase: that's Mitch's style. He has many items of good-taste expensive leather. He's not going bald yet, praise the Lord, not that Roz would mind but men seem to, and she hopes if he does start to shed that he won't get his armpit transplanted to the top of his head. Though he's showing some pepper and salt in the sideburns. Roz checks him over for rust spots, the way she would a car. What she's really waiting for though is the aftershave. Which one will he pick, and where will he put it? Ah! Nothing too seductive, just some stuff he got in England, heather or something. The outdoor mode. And nothing below the neck. Roz sighs with relief. She does love him. She loves him still. She can't afford to go overboard, is all. But maybe, underneath, she loves him too much. Maybe it's her excessive love that pushes him away.

After Mitch is out of the bathroom Roz continues with her own preparations, the creams and lotions and perfumes that should never be seen by Mitch. They belong behind the scenes, as at theatres. Roz collects perfumes the way other people collect stamps, she's a sucker for anything new that comes out. She has three rows of them, three rows of cunning little bottles, sorted into categories that she thinks of as Flower Arranging, Executive Briskness, and Heavy Petting. Today, in honour of her lunch with Mitch, she chooses Shalimar, from the Heavy
361
Petting section. But it's a bit too sultry for the middle of the day so she cuts it with something from Flower Arranging. Then, suited and made up but wearing her bedroom slippers and carrying her high heels, she descends to do her mother routine in the kitchen. Mitch, needless to say, is already out the door. He has a breakfast meeting.

"Hi, kids," says Roz. There they are, all three of them, bless their greedy overnourished hearts, gobbling down the Rice Krispies with brown sugar and bananas on top, supervised by

Dolores, who is from the Philippines and is, Roz hopes, beginning to get over her culture shock. "Hi, Dolores."

Dolores fills Roz with anxiety and misgiving: should Dolores be here? Will Western culture corrupt her? Is Roz paying her enough? Does Dolores secretly hate them all? Is she happy, and, if not, is it Roz's fault? Roz has had spates of thinking they shouldn't have a live-in housekeeper. But when they don't, there's no one to do the kids' lunches and handle the illnesses and last-minute emergencies except Roz, and Roz becomes over-organized and can't

pay enough attention to Mitch, and Mitch gets very short-tempered.

Roz makes the rounds of the kitchen table, bestowing smooches. Larry is fourteen going on fifteen and embarrassed by her, but he endures. The twins kiss her back, briefly, milkily.

"Mom," says Erin. "you smell like room freshener."

How wonderful! How exact! Roz glances around the kitchen, done in warm wood panelling with chopping-block counters where the three school lunches sit in their matching lunch boxes, blue for Erin, green for Paula, black for Larry, and she lights up within, she glows!

This

is why she goes through it, this is what it's for! All the holy hell with Mitch has been worth it, for mornings like this, to be able to walk into the kitchen and say "Hi; kids," and have -them continue scarfing down the breakfast food as if she's practically not there. She extends her invisible wings, her warm feathery angel's wings, her fluttery hen's wings,

362

undervalued and necessary, she enfolds them. Secure, is what she wants them to feel; and they

do feel secure, she's certain of it. They know this is a safe house, they know she's there, planted

solidly, two feet on the ground; and Mitch is there too, more or less, in his own way. They know it's all right, so they can get on with whatever they're doing, they don't have to worry. Maybe she's wrong about Mitch, this time. Maybe there's nothing going on. Maybe he's finally settled down.

XLI

The lunch is at a restaurant called Nereids. It's a small place, a done-over house on Queen East, with a large wellput-together stone man without any clothes on standing outside it. Roz has never been to it before, but Mitch has; she can tell by the way the hostess greets him, by

the way he looks around with an amused, proprietorial eye. She can see too why he likes it: the

whole place is decorated with paintings, paintings that twenty years ago could've got you arrested, because they are all of naked women. Naked women, and naked mermaids too, with

enormous and statuesque breasts: not a droopy boob among them. Well, naked people, because the naked women do not lack for male company. Walking to their table Roz; gets a cock right in the eye, and averts her gaze.

"What is this?" she whispers, alight with curiosity and appalled glee, and with the sheer pleasure of being taken out to lunch by Mitch. "Am I seeing what I think I'm seeing? I mean, is

this a porn shop, or what?"

Mitch chuckles, because he likes to shock Roz a little, he likes to show that he's above her prejudices. (Not that she's a prude, but there's private and there's public; and this is public. Public privates!) He explains that this is a seafood restaurant, a

363

Mediterranean seafood restaurant, one of the best in the city in his opinion, but that the owner is also a painter, and some of these paintings are by him and some are by his friends, who appear to share his interests. Venus is featured, because she was after all a goddess of

the sea. The fish motif accounts too for the mermaids. Roz deduces that these are not just naked people, they are mythological naked people. She can deal with that, she took it at university. Proteus blowing his conch. Or getting it blown.

"Oh," says Roz; in her mock-naive voice. "So this is capital A Art! Does that make it legal?" and Mitch laughs again, uneasily, and suggests that maybe she should lower her voice

because she wouldn't want to hurt people's feelings.

If anyone else told her to lower her voice, Roz would know what to do: scream louder.

But Mitch has always been able to make her feel as if she were just off the boat, head wrapped in a shawl, wiping her nose on her sleeve, and lucky to have a sleeve at that. Which

boat? There are many boats in her ancestral past, as far as she can tell. Everyone she's descended from got kicked out of somewhere else, for being too poor or too politically uncouth or for having the wrong profile or accent or hair colour.

The boat her father came over on was more or less recent, though far enough back to have arrived before the Canadian government walled out the Jews, in the thirties and during

the war. Not that her father was even a whole Jew. Why do you inherit Jewishness through the

mother's side? Tony once asked Roz. Because so many Jewish women were raped by Cossacks and

whathave-you that they could never be sure who the father was. But her father was Jewish enough

for Hitler, who hated mixtures more than anything.

The boat on her mother's side was much further back. Famine caused by landlessness caused by war drove them out, a hundred and fifty years ago, Irish and Scots both. One of those

364

families set out with five children- and arrived with none, and then the father died of cholera in

Montreal and the mother remarried, as fast as she could - an Irishman whose wife had died, so

he needed a new one. Men needed wives then, for such enterprises. Off they went into the semi-cleared bush, to be overtaxed and to have other children and to plant potatoes, and to chop down trees with implements they'd never used before, because how many trees were left

in Ireland? A lot of legs got chopped into, by those people. Tony, who is more interested in these details than Roz is, once showed Roz an old picture - the men standing in metal washtubs, to protect their legs from their own axes. Low comedy for the English middle classes, back home, living off the avails. Stupid bogtrotters! The Irish were always good for a

smirk or two, then.

All of them came steerage, of course. Whereas Mitch's ancestors, although not created by God from the sacred mud of Toronto - they had to have got here somehow - must have come

cabin. Which means they threw up into a china basin instead of onto other people's feet, on the way across.

Big deal, but Roz is intimidated anyway. She opens the mermaid-festooned menu, and

reads

the items, and asks Mitch to advise her, as if she can't make up her own mind what to put into

her mouth. Roz, she tells herself. You are a suck.

She remembers the time she first went out with Mitch. She was old, she was almost twenty-two, she was over the hill.~A lot of girls she'd known in high school and then in university were already married, so why wasn't she? It was a question that looked out at her from her mother's increasingly baffled eyes.

Roz had already had a love affair, or rather a sex affair, and then another. She hadn't even felt too guilty about them. Although the nuns had ground it in about sex and what a sin it was, Roz was no longer a Catholic. She was once a Catholic, though, and once a Catholic,

always a

Catholic, according to

365
her mother; so she'd had some qualms, after the first exhilarating sense of transgression had

faded. Strangely enough, these qualms focused less on the sex itself than on the condoms - things you had to buy under the counter, not that she ever did, that was a man's job.

Condoms

seemed to her inherently wicked. But they were also inherently funny. They were like rubber gloves with only one finger, and every time she saw one she had to be severe with herself or

she'd get the giggles, a terrifying thought because the man might think you were laughing at him, at his dick, at its size, and that would be fatal.

But the sex was great, it was something she was good at, though neither one of these men was her idea of bliss from the neck up. One had big sticking-out ears, the other one was two

inches shorter than she was, and she didn't see going through life in flats. She wanted children,

but not runny ones with jug ears.

So she hadn't taken either of them seriously. It helped that they hadn't taken her seriously either. Maybe it was the clown face she put on, fairly constantly by then. She needed it, that happy heedless party face, because there she was, on the shelf, still living at home, still working

in her father's business. You'll be my right-hand man, he'd tell her. It was meant as a compliment,

so she wouldn't feel bad about not being a son. But Roz didn't want to be a son. She didn't want to be a man at all, right-hand or otherwise. Such a strain, being one, from what she could

see; such a pretence of dignity to maintain. She could never get away with her witless frivolity

act if she were a man. But then, if she were one she might not need it.

Her job in the business was fairly basic; a moron could have done it. Essentially she was a glorified fetch-it. But her father believed that everyone, even the boss's daughter, should start

at the bottom and progress up to the top. That way you got acquainted with the real workings

of the business, layer by layer. If something was wrong with the secretaries, if something
366

was wrong with Filing, there would be wrongness all the way through; and you had to know how to do those jobs yourself so you would know whether other people were doing them right

or not. A lesson that has been useful to Roz, over the years.

She was learning a lot, though. She was watching her father's style. Outrageous but effective, soft but hard, uproarious but dead serious underneath. He waited for his moment, he

waited like a cat on a lawn; then he pounced. He liked to drive bargains, he liked to cut deals.

Drive, cut, these verbs had an appeal for him. He liked risk, he liked walking the edge.

Blocks of

property disappeared into his pocket, then came out magically transformed into office buildings. If he could renovate - if there was something worth saving - he did. Otherwise it was

the wrecking ball, despite whatever clutch of woolly-headed protesters might be marching around outside with Save Our Neighbourhood signs, done in crayon and stapled onto rake

handles.

Roz had some ideas of her own. She knew she could be good at this stuff if he'd give her the rope. But rope was not given by him, it was earned, so she was putting in her time.

Meanwhile, what about her love life? There was nobody. Nobody suitable. Nobody even close.

Nobody who wasn't either a jerk-off or basically after her money, a factor she had to keep in mind. Her future money, because right then she was only on salary like everybody else, and a

fairly measly salary at that. Her father believed you should know just how measly a measly salary was, so you could figure out what a pay-raise negotiation was all about. He thought you

should know the price of potatoes. Roz didn't at the moment because she was still living at home, on account of her measly salary. She'd looked at studio apartments, one room with a minging kitchenette tucked in the corner and a view into somebody else's bathroom, but too squalid! What price freedom? Higher than

367

what she was making right then. She would rather stay where she was, in the former servants'

flat over her parents' three-car garage, and spend her measly salary on new clothes and her own

phone line.

She wanted to take a trip to Europe, by herself, but her father wouldn't let her. He said it was too dangerous. "What goes on over there, you don't need to know," he told her. He wanted to keep her walled up behind his money. He wanted to keep her safe.

Mitch was a neophyte lawyer then, working for the firm that papered her father's deals. The first time she saw him he was walking through the outer office where Roz sat grindstoning her

nose. He was wearing a suit and carrying a briefcase, the end man in the almost-daily suit-and-

briefcase parade that followed her father around like a tail. There was a pause at Roz's desk,

handshakes all round: Roz's father always introduced everyone to everyone else. Mitch shook

Roz's hand, and Roz's hand shook. She took one look at him and thought, There's ugly and there's gorgeous and there's in-between, but this is gorgeous. Then she'd thought: Dream on,

babe. Slobber on your pillow. This is not for you.

But darned if he didn't phone her up! You didn't have to be Einstein to get the number, but it would've taken more than 'one step, because Roz had herself listed in the phone book as Rosie O'Grady, having tired of the hate calls that her father's last name sometimes

attracted.

The hoardings around the demolition sites didn't help, Grunwald Developments in foot-high print, she might as well go around with a red X painted on her forehead, Spit here, as list her

right name in the phone book.

But all of a sudden there was Mitch on the phone, cool but persuasive, sounding as if he wanted to sell her some life insurance, reminding her of where she'd met him, as if she needed

reminding, and he was so stiff at first that she'd wanted to yell

368

at him, Hey, I am not your granny! Slip that poker out of your bum! Gorgeous or not, he sounded

like a drag, a too-tight wnsYy poop whose idea of a good time would be a hand of bridge with

the crumbling in-laws or a walk in the cemetery on Sunday. It took him a lot longer to get to the point than it would've taken Roz, had she been leading, but he'd finally worked up to asking her out to dinner and then to a movie afterwards. Well, Hallelujah and Hail Mary, thought Roz. Wonders will never cease.

But while she was getting ready to go, her joy evaporated. She wanted to float, to fly, but she was beginning to feel heavier and heavier, sitting there at her dressing table dabbing Arpege onto her pulse points and trying to decide what earrings to wear. Something that would make her face look less round. True, she had dimples, but they were the kind of dimples you saw in knees. More like puckers. She was a big-boned girl, a raw-boned girl (her mother's words), a girl with backbone (her father's), and a full, mature figure (the dress shops'). Dainty she would never be. Dear God, shrink my feet and I'll do anything for you. A size 6

would be nice, and while you're at it make me a blonde.

The problem was that Mitch was simply too good-looking. The shoulders, the blue eyes, the bone structure - he looked like a movie mag starlet, male version, too good to be true:' Roz was awed by this - nobody should be allowed out in public looking like that, it might cause car crashes - and by his aroma of decorum, and by his posture, bolt upright with squared corners, like a frozen fish fillet. She wouldn't be able to let herself go with him, crack

jokes, fool around. She would worry about whether there were things caught in her teeth.

Plus, she would be so squirrely with desire - out with it, Lust, capital L, the best of the Seven Deadlies - that she'd scarcely be able to sit still. She wasn't usually so out of control, but Mitch was off the top of the charts in the looks department.

369

Heads would turn, people would stare, they'd wonder what such a dreamboat was doing with

the runner-up in the Miss Polish Turnip Contest. All in all it was shaping up to be a purgatorial

evening. Get me through this, God, and I'll scrub a million toilets for you! Not that you'd be interested,

because in Heaven, who shits?

Things started out every bit as dreadful as Roz had expected. Mitch brought her flowers, not very many flowers but flowers, how old-fashioned could you get, and she didn't know what to do with the darn things, so she took them out to the kitchen - was she supposed to put them in

a vase or what? Why hadn't he settled for chocolates? - and there was her mother brooding darkly over a cup of tea, in her dressing gown and metal curlers and hairnet, because she had to

go out later to some banquet or other with Roz's father, some business thing, her mother

hated

that stuff, and she looked at Roz with the stricken gaze she'd been putting on ever since they

got rich and moved into that barn of a house on Dunvegan, right near Upper Canada College,

where male scions like Mitch were sent to be brainwashed and to have their spines fused so

their pelvises would never move again, and she said to Roz, "Are you going out?" as in. "Are

you dying?"

And Roz had left Mitch standing in the cavernous living room, in the centre of the half-acre of broadloom, surrounded by three truckloads of furniture in her mother's impeccable bad taste, it cost a mint but it looked straight out of a funeral parlour mail-order catalogue, in addition to which every single surface was covered with doilies, which didn't help, her mother

had a doily fetish, she'd been deprived of them in youth, and what if Mitch were to follow Roz

out to the kitchen and find Roz's mother sitting there and be given the once-over, the aim of which was to determine religious affiliation and financial prospects, in that order? So Roz dumped the flowers into the

370

sink, she'd deal with them later, and kissed her mother on the firming cream, too little too late, and frog-marched Mitch out of the house before he could get waylaid by Roz's father, who would put him through the same third degree he put all of Roz's dates through if he could catch them - where were they going, what would they be doing, when would they be back, that was too late - and tell him cryptic ethnic parables illustrating Life. "Two cripples do not make one dancer," he would say to them, shooting out a meaningful look from underneath the bushy eyebrows, and what were the poor goofs supposed to think? "Papa, I wish you wouldn't say that," she'd tell him afterwards. That was another thing, she had to call him Papa, he wouldn't answer to Dad. "So?" he would say, grinning at her. "It's true, or not?" Once they'd made it past the door it turned out that Mitch didn't have a car, and what was the etiquette? Was she supposed to offer hers, or what? She couldn't see the man of her dreams taking a bus; much less could she see herself taking one. What was the use of upward

mobility if you had to take a bus anyway? There were limits! She was about to suggest a taxi

when it occurred to her in a blinding flash that maybe Mitch didn't have the money for one. In the end they took Roz's car, a little red Austin, a birthday present, Roz would've preferred a jag but her father said that would have been spoiling her. Mitch didn't protest much when Roz gushingly urged the car keys on him so he could drive, because a man being

driven by a woman might have felt diminished, she'd read the women's magazine articles about all the ways you could unwittingly diminish a man, it was terrible how easily they shrank, and though she usually liked to drive her own car herself she didn't want to scare Mitch off. This way too she could just sit back and admire his profile. He drove well - decisively, aggressively, but not without courtesy, and she liked that. She herself was a fast driver; a barger-in, a honker.

371

But watching Mitch drive, she could see that there were smoother ways of getting where you wanted to go.

The dinner was at a small quasi-French restaurant, with a red plush decor like a turn-of-the-century, whorehouse and not very good food. Roz had the onion soup, which was a mistake because of the filaments of stringy cheese that came looping down from each spoonful.

She

did what she could with it, but she felt she was not passing the gracefulness test. Mitch didn't

seem to notice; he was talking to her about his law firm.

He doesn't like me, she thought, this is a fiasco, so she had another glass of white wine, and

then she thought, What the hell, and told him a joke, the one about the girl who told another girl she'd got raped that summer, yes, and after that it was just rape rape rape, all summer long,

and Mitch smiled at her slowly, and his eyes closed up a little like a cat when you stroke its ears, maybe despite the tin-soldier posture he had a hormone or two after all, maybe the WASPY

fa~ade was just that, a fa~ade, and if it was she would be eternally grateful, and then she felt

his hand on her knee, under the table, and that was the end of her self-control, she thought she

was going to melt like a warm Popsicle, all over the red plush restaurant seat.

After dinner they did start out in the direction of the movie, but somehow they ended up necking in Roz's car; and after that they were in Mitch's apartment, a three-bedroom he shared

with two other law students who were conveniently out - Did he plan this? Roz thought fleetingly, because exactly who was seducing whom - and Roz was all set to wrestle with her

panty girdle, having helped Mitch get the top half of her clothes off no lady should ever be without a panty girdle, said her mother and the magazines both, control unsightly jiggle and you wouldn't want men to think you were a loose woman with a floppy bum, though the darn things were built like rat traps, pure cast-iron elastic, it was like trying to get out of a triple-wrapped rubber band - when Mitch took hold of her shoulders

372

and gazed deeply into her eyes and told her he respected her too much. "I don't want to just make love with you," he said. "I want to marry you." Roz felt like protesting that these categories were not mutually exclusive, but that would have been immodest, in Mitch's eyes at least, and anyway she was -too overcome with happiness, or was it fear, because was this a

proposal?

"What?" she said.

He repeated the marrying part.

"But I hardly know you," Roz stammered.

"You'll get to know me better," said Mitch calmly. He was right about that.

And this is how things went on: mediocre dinners, heavy petting, delayed gratification. If Roz

had been able to get it over with, get Mitch out of her system, maybe she wouldn't have married

him. Wrong: she would have, because after that first evening she was in over her depth and no

was not an option. But the fact that he reduced her to a knee-wobbling jelly every time they went out, then gripped her hands when she tried to unzip him, added a certain element of suspense. For suspense read frustration. Read also abject humiliation. She felt like a big loose

floozy, she felt like a puppy being whacked with a newspaper for trying to climb up trouser legs.

When the time came - not in a church, not in a synagogue - considering the mixtures involved, in one of the banquet rooms of the Park Plaza Hotel - Roz didn't think she'd make

it

all the way down the aisle. She thought there might be an unseemly incident. But Mitch would

never have forgiven her if she'd jumped him in public, or even given him a big smooch during

the kiss-the-bride routine. He'd made it clear by then that there were jumpers and jumpees, kissers and kissees, and he was to be the former and she the latter.

Sex-role stereotyping, thinks Roz now, having learned a
373

thing or two in the interim. The cunning bastard. He held out on me, he wore me down. He knew exactly what he was doing. Probably had a little side dish for himself tucked away in some typing pool so he wouldn't get gangrene of the male member. But he pulled it off, he married me. He got the brass ring. She knows by this time that her money has to have been a

factor.

Her father was suspicious about that even at the time. "How much is he making?" he queried Roz.

"Papa, that is not the point!" cried Roz, in an excess of antimaterialism. Anyway, wasn't Mitch the golden boy? Guaranteed to do well? Wasn't he about to rise in his law- firm like a soap bubble?

"All I'm asking is, do I need to support him?" said her father. To Mitch he said, "Two cripples do not make one dancer," glowering out from under his eyebrows.

"Pardon me, sir?" said Mitch, with urbanity, too much urbanity, urbanity that bordered on condescension and that meant he was willing to overlook Roz's parents, the immigrant taint of

the one, the boiled-potato doily-ridden rooming-house aftertaste of the other. Roz was new money, Mitch was old money; or he would have been old money if he'd had any money. His own father was dead, somewhat too early and too vaguely for total comfort. How was Roz to know then that he'd blown the family fortune on a war widow he'd run away with and then jumped off a bridge? She was not a mind-reader, and Mitch didn't tell her, not for years, not for years and years. Neither did his prune of a mother, who was not dead yet but (thinks Roz,

in the cellar) might as well have been. Roz has never forgiven her those delicate, cutting post-

bridal hints about toning down her wardrobe and the proper way to set a dinner table.

"Papa, I am not a cripple!" Roz said to her father afterwards. "I mean, that is so insulting!"
374

"One cripple and one who is not a cripple don't make a dancer either," said her father.

What was he trying to tell me? thinks Roz, at this distance. What had he seen, what crack or fault line, what incipient limp?

But Roz wasn't listening then, she was holding her hands over her ears, she didn't want to hear. Her father gave her a long, sombre look. "You know what you're doing?"

Roz thought she did; or rather she didn't care whether she did or not, because this was it, this

was it, and she was floating finally, she was up there on cloud nine, light as a feather despite

her big raw bones. Her mother was on her side, because Roz was almost twenty-three now and

any marriage was better than no marriage as far as she was concerned; though once she saw it

was really going to happen, she became scornful of Mitch's good manners - la-di-da and excuse

me, and who does he think he is - and made it known that she would have preferred a

Catholic to
an Anglican. But having married Roz's father, who was not exactly the Pope, she couldn't
put
up much of an argument.

Mitch didn't marry Roz just for her money. She's sure of that. She remembers their actual
honeymoon, in Mexico, all those Day of the Dead sugar skulls in the market, the flowers, the
colours, herself giddy with pleasure, her sense of novelty and release because look, she
had

done it, she wasn't a potential old maid any more but a bride, a married woman; and during
the

hot nights the window open to the sea, the curtains blowing, the wind moving over her skin
like muslin, and the dark shape of Mitch above her, faceless and intense. It was different
when

you were in love, it was no longer a game; there was more at stake. She cried afterwards
because she was so happy, and Mitch must have felt it too, because you can't fake that kind
of

Passion completely. Can you?

375

So it wasn't only the money. But she could put it this way - he wouldn't have married her
without it. Maybe that's what keeps him with her, what keeps him anchored. She hopes it's
not

the only thing.

Mitch raises his glass of white wine to her and says, "To us," and reaches across the table
and

takes her left hand, the one with the ring, a modest ring because that's what he could afford
at

the time and he'd refused to accept any contribution from her father for a bigger one, and
smiles at her, and says, "It hasn't been so bad, has it? We're pretty good, together," and

Roz

knows he's consoling himself for hidden disappointments, for time that marches on, for all
the

worlds he will, now, never be able to conquer, for the fact that there are thousands of nubile
young women in the world, millions of them, more every minute, and no matter what he does
he will never be able to get into all of them, because art is long and life is brief and mortality
looms.

And yes, they are pretty good together. Sometimes. Still. So she beams at him and returns
the squeeze, and thinks they are as happy as can be. They are. They are as happy as they
can be,

given who they are. Though if they'd been different people they might have been happier.

A girl, a pretty girl, a pretty girl in a scoop-neck jersey; appears with a platter of dead fish,
from which Mitch selects. He's having the Catch of the Day, Roz is having the pasta done in
sepia, because she has never eaten such a thing before and it sounds so bizarre. Spaghetti
in

Ink. There's a salad first, during which Roz sees fit to ask, tentatively enough, whether there's
a

specific topic Mitch wants to discuss. At previous lunches there has been one, a business
topic

usually, a topic having to do with Mitch getting more power on the board of Wise Woman
World, of which he is the chairman, oops, chairperson.

376

But Miteh says no, he was merely feeling that he hasn't been seeing enough of her lately,
without the kids that is, and Roz, eager for scraps as always, laps it up. She will forgive, she
will

forget. Well anyway, forgive, because what you can or can't forget isn't under your control. Maybe Mitch has just been having a middle-aged crisis all these years; though twenty-eight was

a little young to begin.

The salad arrives, on a large plate borne by yet another long-haired, scoop-necked lovely, and Roz wonders whether the waitresses are chosen to go with the paintings. With so many nipples around she has the sensation of being watched by a myriad alien eyes. Pink ones.

She

flashes briefly on some flat-chested woman bringing a discrimination case against this restaurant for refusing to hire her. Even better, a flat-chested man. She'd love to be a fly on the

wall.

The waitress bends over, showing deep cleavage, and dishes out the salad, and stands there

smiling while Roz takes a bite. "Terrific," says Roz, meaning the salad

"Absolutely," says Mitch, smiling up at the waitress. Oh God, thinks Roz. He's starting to flirt with waitresses. What'll she think of him? Sleazy old fart? And how soon before he really is

a sleazy old fart?

Mitch has always flirted with waitresses, in his restrained way. But that's like saying a ninety-year-old can-can dancer has always done the can-can. When do you know when to stop?

After the salad the main course arrives. It's a different girl this time. Well, a different woman; she's a little older, but with a ravishing cloud of dark hair and= amazing great tits, and

a tiny little waist Roz would kill for. Roz looks hard at her and knows she's seen her before.

Much earlier, in another life. "Zenia!" she exclaims, before she can help it.

"Pardon me?" says the woman. Then she looks at Roz in turn, and smiles, and says, "Roz? Roz Grunwald? Is it you? You don't look like your pictures!"

377

Roz has an overwhelming urge to deny it. She shouldn't have spoken in the first place, she should have dropped her purse on the floor and dived after it, anything to stay out of Zenia's sightlines. Who needs the evil eye?

But the shock of seeing Zenia there, working as a waitress - a server- in Nereids, overrides all that, and "What the heck are you doing here?" Roz blurts out.

"Research," says Zenia. "I'm a journalist, I've been freelance for years, in England mostly.

But I wanted to come back, just to see - to see what things were like, over here. So I got myself

commissioned to do a piece on sexual harassment in the workplace."

Zenia must be different, thinks Roz, if she's writing about that stuff. She even looks different. She can't place it at first, and then she sees. It's the tits. And the nose too. The former have swelled, the latter has shrunk. Zenia's nose used to be more like Roz's.

"Really?"

says Roz, who has a professional interest. "Who for?"

"Saturday Night," says Zenia. "It's mostly an interview format, but I thought it would be good to take a look at the locales:" She smiles more at Roz than at Mitch. "I was in a factory last week, and the week before that I spent in a hospital. You wouldn't believe how many nurses get attacked by their patients! I don't mean just grabbing - they throw things, the bedpans and so forth, it's a real occupational hazard. They wouldn't let me do any actual nursing though; this is more hands-on."

Mitch is beginning to look peevisish at being sidelined, so Roz introduces him to Zenia. She doesn't want to say "an old friend," so instead she says, "We were at the same school." Not that we were ever what you'd call best buddies, thinks Roz. She scarcely knew Zenia then, except as an object of gossip. Lurid, sensational gossip.

Mitch does nothing to help Roz out, in the conversation

378

department. He simply mutters something and stares at his plate. He obviously feels he's been

interrupted. "So, how're the occupational hazards in this place?" says Roz, covering for him.

"Has anyone called you 'honeybun' and pinched your butt?"

Zenia laughs. "Same old Roz. She was always the life of the party," she says to Mitch.

While Roz is wondering what parties she ever attended at which Zenia was also present - none, as far as she can remember, but she used to drink more in those days, or more at once;

and maybe she's forgotten - Zenia puts her hand on Roz's shoulder. Her voice changes, becomes lower, more solemn. "You know, Roz," she says, "I've always wanted to tell you this.

But I never could before:"

"What?" says Roz. "Your father," says Zenia.

"Oh dear," says Roz, fearing some scam she's never found out about, some buried scandal.

Maybe Zenia is her long-lost half-sister, perish the thought. Her father was a sly old fox.

"What

did he do?"

"He saved my life," says Zenia. "During the war."

"Saved your life?" says Roz. "During the war?" Wait a minute - was Zenia even born, during the war? Roz hesitates, unwilling to believe. But this is what she's longed for always - an eyewitness, someone involved but impartial, who could assure her that her father really was what he was rumoured to be: a hero. Or a semi-hero; at any rate, more than a shady trader. She's heard accounts from others, her uncles for instance, but the two of them were hardly reliable; so she's never been really sure, not really.

Now, finally, there's a messenger, bringing news from that distant country, the country of the past, the country of the war. But why does that messenger have to be Zenia? It grates on Roz that Zenia has this news and Roz does not. It's as if her father has left something in his will, some treasure, to a perfect

379

stranger, some drifter he'd met in a bar, and nothing for his own daughter. Didn't he know how much she wanted to know?

Maybe there's nothing in it. On the other hand, what if there is? It's at least worth a listen.

It's at least worth a flutter. "It's a long story" says Zenia. "I'd love to tell you about it, when you've got the time. If you want to hear it, that is:" She smiles, nods at Mitch, and walks away.

She moves confidently, nonchalantly, as if she knows she's just made the one offer that Roz can't possibly refuse.

XLII

Roz's father, the Great Unknown. Great to others, unknown to her. Or let's just say - thinks Roz, in her orange bathrobe, in the cellar, finishing off the crumbs of the Nanaimo bar, hungrily licking the plate - that he had nine lives, and she herself was only aware of three or four of

them. You never knew when someone from one of her father's previous lives might reappear.

Once upon a time Roz was not Roz. Instead she was Rosalind; - and her middle name was Agnes, after Saint Agnes and also her mother, though she didn't tell the girls at school about

that because she didn't want to be nicknamed Aggie, the way her mother was, behind her back,

by the roomers. No one would dare call her mother Aggie to her face. She was far too

respectable for that. She was Mrs. Greenwood, to them.

So Roz was Rosalind Greenwood instead of Roz Grunwald, and she lived with her mother in her mother's rooming house on Huron Street. The house was tall and narrow and made of red brick, with a sagging porch on the front that Roz's father

380

was going to fix, maybe, sometime. Her father was away. He'd been away as long as Roz could

remember. It was because of the war.

Roz could remember the war, although not very well. She remembered the air raid sirens, from before she went to school, because her mother had made her crawl underneath the bed

and there was a spider. Her mother had saved up bacon fat and tin cans, though what the soldiers would do with those things Roz couldn't imagine, and later, at school everyone gave

nickels to the Red Cross because of all the orphans. The orphans stood on piles of rubble, and

had raggedy clothes and huge, unsmiling eyes, appealing eyes, accusing eyes, because their

parents had been killed by bombs. Sister Mary Paul showed pictures of them, in Grade One,

and Roz cried because she was so sorry for them and was told to control herself, and couldn't

eat her lunch, and was told she had to finish it because of the orphans, and asked for a second

helping because if finishing one lunch was going to help the orphans, then eating a second one

would help them even more, although she wasn't sure how. Maybe God had ways of arranging

such things. Maybe the solid, visible food Roz ate got turned into invisible spiritual food and flown through the air, straight into the orphans, sort of like Communion, where the Host looked like a round soda cracker but was really Jesus. In any case, Roz was more than willing to

help out.

Somewhere over there, behind the piles of rubble, out of sight among the dark dumps of trees in the distance, was her father. She hoped some of the food she ate would bypass the orphans and get into him. That was how Roz thought when she was in Grade One.

But the war was over, so where was Roz's father now? "On his way," said her mother.

There was a third chair always placed ready at the kitchen table for him. Roz could hardly wait.

*

381

Because Roz's father was away Roz's mother had to run the rooming house all by herself. It was wearing her down, as she told Roz, almost every day. Roz could see it: her mother had a

stringy look, as if the soft parts of her were being scraped away, as if her bones were getting

closer and closer to the surface. She had a long face, grey-streaked brown hair pulled back and

pinned, and an apron. She didn't talk much, and when she did talk it was in short, dense clusters of words. "Least said soonest mended," she would say. "A stitch in time saves nine.

Scarce as hen's teeth. Blood is thicker than water. Handsome is as handsome does. Safe as

houses. Money doesn't grow on trees. Little pitchers have big ears:" She said Roz was a chatter-box and her tongue wagged at both ends. She had hard hands with enlarged knuckles, red from washing. "Look at my hands," she would say, as if her hands proved something. Usually what they proved was that Roz had to help out more. "Your mother is a saint," said little Miss Hines, who lived on the third floor. But if Roz's mother was a saint, Roz did not especially want to be one. When Roz's father came back he would help out. If Roz was good, he would come back sooner, because God would be pleased with her and would answer her prayers. But sometimes she couldn't always remember. When that happened, when she did a sin, she would get frightened; she would see her father in a boat, crossing the ocean, and a huge wave washing over him or a bolt of lightning striking him, which would be God's way of punishing her. Then she needed to pray extra hard, until Sunday when she could go to confession. She would pray on her knees, beside her bed, with the tears running down her face. If it was a bad sin she would also scrub the toilet, even if it had just been done. God liked well-scrubbed toilets. Roz wondered what her father would be like. She had no real memory of him, and the photo her mother kept on her dark, polished, forbidden bureau was just of a man, a large man in a black coat whose face Roz could scarcely make out because it was in shadow. This photo revealed none of the magic Roz ascribed to her father. He was important, he was doing important, secret things that could not be spoken about. They were war things, even though the war was over. "Risking his neck," said her mother. "How?" said Roz. "Eat up your supper," said her mother, "there are children starving in Europe." What he was doing was so important that he didn't have much time to write letters, although letters did arrive at intervals, from faraway places: France, Spain, Switzerland, Argentina. Her mother read these letters to herself, turning an odd shade of mottled pink while she did it. Roz saved the stamps. What Roz's mother did mostly was cleaning. "This is a clean, respectable house," she would say, when she was bawling out the roomers for something they'd done wrong, some mess they'd made in the hall or bathtub ring they'd failed to wipe off. She brushed the stair treads and vacuumed the second-floor hall runner, she scrubbed the linoleum in the front vestibule and waxed it and did the same with the kitchen floor. She cleaned the bathroom fixtures with Old Dutch cleanser and the toilets with Sani-Flush, and did the windows with Windex, and washed the lace curtains with Sunlight Soap, scrubbing them carefully by hand on a washboard, although she did the sheets and towels in the wringer-washer that was kept in the back shed adjoining the kitchen; there were a lot of sheets and towels, because of the roomers. She dusted twice a week and put drain cleaner down all the drains, because otherwise the roomers' hair would clog them up. This hair was an obsession of hers; she acted as if the roomers tore great handfuls of it out of their heads and stuffed it down the drains on purpose.

Sometimes she stuck a crochet hook down the sink drain on the second floor and hauled up a wad of slimy, soap-covered, festering hair. "See?" she would say to Roz. "Riddled with germs.

"She expected Roz to help her with all of this endless cleaning. "I work my fingers to the bone," she'd say. "For you. Look at my hands," and it was no good for Roz to say that she didn't really care whether the second-floor toilet was clean or not because she didn't use that

one. Roz's mother wanted the house to be decent for her father when he came, and since they

never knew when that might be, it had to be decent all the time.

There were three roomers. Roz's mother had the secondfloor front room, and Roz had one of

the two rooms on the third floor - the attic, her mother called it. Little Miss Hines lived in the other attic room, with her woolly slippers and her Viyella plaid bathrobe, which she wore to go down to take her bath because the bathroom on the third floor had only a sink and a toilet.

Miss Hines was not young. She worked in a _ shoe store in the daytime, and played the radio

softly in her room at night - dance music - and read a lot of paperback detective novels.

"There's nothing like a good murder," she would tell Roz. She seemed to find these books comforting. She read them in bed, and also in the bathtub; Roz would find them, opened and

face down on the floor, their pages slightly damp. She would carry them back upstairs for Miss Hines, looking at the covers: mansions with storm clouds and lightning, men with felt hats pulled down over their faces, dead people with knives sticking into them, young women with large breasts, in their nightgowns, done in strange colours, dark but lurid, with the blood shiny and thick as molasses in a puddle on the floor.

If Miss Hines wasn't in her room Roz would have a look

384

inside her clothes closet, but Miss Hines didn't have very many clothes and the ones she did

have were navy blue and brown and grey. Miss Hines was a Catholic, but she had only one holy picture: the Virgin Mary, with the Baby Jesus in her lap, and John the Baptist, wearing fur because he would later live in the desert. The Virgin Mary always looked sad in pictures, except when Jesus was a baby. Babies were the one thing that cheered her up. Jesus, like Roz,

was an only child; a sister would have been nice for him. Roz intended to have both kinds when she grew up.

On the ground floor there was one bedroom that used to be the dining room. Mr.

Carruthers lived in there. He was an old man with a pension; he'd been in the war, but it was a

different one. He'd been wounded in the leg so he walked with a cane, and he still had some

of the bullets inside him. "See this leg?" he'd say to Roz. "Full of shrapnel. When they run out

of iron they can mine this leg:" It was the one joke he ever made. He read the newspapers a lot. When he went out, he went to the Legion to visit with his pals. He sometimes came back three sheets to the wind, said Roz's mother. She couldn't stop that, but she could stop him from drinking in his room.

The roomers were not allowed to eat in their rooms or drink either, except water. They couldn't have hotplates because they might burn down the house. The other thing they

couldn't do was smoke. Mr. Carruthers did, though. He opened the window and blew the smoke out of it, and then flushed the butts down the toilet. Roz knew this, but she didn't tell on him. She was a little afraid of him, of his bulgy face and grey bristling moustache and clumping shoes and beery breath, but also she didn't want to tell, because telling on people was ratting, and the girls who did it at school were despised.

Was Mr. Carruthers a Protestant or a Catholic? Roz didn't

385

know. According to Roz's mother, religion didn't matter so much in a man. Unless he was a priest, of course. Then it mattered.

Miss Hines and Mr. Carruthers had been there as long as Roz; could remember, but the third

roomer, Mrs. Morley, was more recent. She lived in the other second-floor bedroom, down the

hall from the one where Roz's mother slept. Mrs. Morley said she was thirty. She had low-slung

breasts and a face tanned with pancake makeup, and black eyelashes and red hair. She worked

in Eaton's cosmetics, selling Elizabeth Arden, and she wore nail polish, and was divorced. Divorce was a sin, according to the nuns.

Roz was fascinated by Mrs. Morley. She let herself be lured into Mrs. Morley's room, where Mrs. Morley gave her samples of cologne and Blue Grass hand lotion and showed her how to

put her hair up in pincurls, and told her what a skunk Mr. Morley had been. "Honey, he cheated on me," she said, "like there was no tomorrow." She called Roz "honey" and "sweetie,"

which Roz's mother never did. "I wish I'd of had a little girl," she'd say, "Just like you," and Roz would grin with pleasure.

Mrs. Morley had a silver hand mirror with roses on it and her initials engraved on the back: G.M. Her first name was Giadys. Mr. Morley had given her that mirror for their first anniversary. "Not that he meant a word of it," Mrs. Morley would say as she plucked out her eyebrows. She did this with tweezers, gripping each eyebrow stub and yanking hard. It made

her sneeze. She plucked out almost all of them, leaving a thin line in the perfect curved shape

of the new moon. It made her look surprised, or else incredulous. Roz would study her own eyebrows in the mirror. They were too dark and bushy, she decided, but she was too young yet

to begin pulling them out.

386

Mrs. Morley still wore her wedding ring and her engagement ring as well, though occasionally she would take them off and put them into her jewel box. "I should just sell them," she would say; "but I don't know. Sometimes I still feel married to him, in spite of everything, you know what I mean? You want something to hang onto." On some weekends she went out on dates, with men who rang the front doorbell and were let inside, grudgingly, by Roz's mother, and who then had to stand in the vestibule and wait for Mrs. Morley because

there was nowhere else for them to go.

Certainly Roz's mother would not ask them back to sit in the kitchen. She did not approve of them, or of Mrs. Morley in general; though she sometimes let Roz go to the movies with her. Mrs. Morley preferred films in which women renounced things for the sake of other people, or in which they were loved and then abandoned. She followed these plots with relish,

eating popcorn and dabbing at her eyes. "I'm a sucker for a good weepie," she said to Roz.

Roz

didn't understand why the things in the movies happened the ways they did, and would have preferred to have seen Robin Hood or else Abbott and Costello, but her mother felt an adult should be present. Things could happen in the flickering, sweet-smelling dark of movie theatres; men could take advantage. This was one subject on which Mrs. Morley and Roz's mother were in agreement: the advantage men could take.

Roz went through Mrs. Morley's jewel box when she wasn't there, although she was careful not to move anything out of its place. It gave her a feeling of pleasure, not just because the things were pretty - they weren't real jewels, most of them, they were costume jewellery, rhinestones and glass - but because there was something exciting about doing this.

Although

the brooches and earrings were exactly the same when Mrs. Morley wasn't there as when she

was, they seemed different in her absence - more alluring, secretive. Roz looked w

387

into the closet as well: Mrs. Morley had many brightly coloured dresses, and the high-heeled shoes that went with them. When she was feeling more than normally daring Roz would slip on the shoes and hobble around in front of the mirror on Mrs. Morley's closet door. The pair she liked best had sparkling clips on the toes that looked as if they were made of diamonds.

Roz thought they were the height of glamour.

Sometimes there would be a little pile of dirty underwear in the corner of the closet, just thrown in there, not even put into a laundry bag: brassieres, stockings, satin slips. These were

the things Mrs. Morley washed out by hand in the bathroom sink and draped over the radiator

in her room to dry. But she should have picked them up off the floor first, as Roz had to do.

Of course Mrs. Morley was a Protestant, so what could you expect? Roz's mother would have

liked to have had nobody in her rooming house except Catholics, nice clean well-behaved Catholic ladies like Miss Hines, but beggars couldn't be choosers and in such times you had to

take what you could get.

Roz had a round face and dark straight hair and bangs, and she was big for her age. She went

to Redemption and Holy Spirit, which used to be two schools but now just had two names, and the nuns in their black-and-white habits taught her to read and write and sing and pray, with white chalk on a black blackboard and a ruler across the knuckles if you got out of line. Catholics were the best thing because you would go to Heaven when you died. Her mother was a Catholic too, but she didn't go to church. She would take Roz there and push her towards the door, but she wouldn't go in. From the set of her face Roz knew better than to ask

why.

Some of the other kids on the street were Protestants, or else Jews; whatever you were, the others chased you on your way home from school, though sometimes the boys might play baseball together. Boys would chase you if you were a girl: the

388

religion didn't matter then. There were a few Chinese kids as well, and there were also DPs. The DP kids had the worst time of all. There was a DP girl at Roz's school: she could hardly speak English, and the other girls whispered about her where she could see them, and

said mean things to her, and she would say "What?" Then they would laugh.

DPs meant Displaced Persons. They came from the east, across the ocean; what had

displaced them was the war. Roz's mother said they should consider themselves lucky to be here. The grown-up DPs had odd clothes, dismal and shabby clothes, and strange accents, and a shuffling, defeated look to them. A confused look, as if they didn't know where they were or what was going on. The children would shout after them on the street: "DP! DP! Go back where you come from!" Some of the older boys would shout "Dog Poop!" The DPs didn't understand, but they knew they were being shouted at. They would hurry faster, their heads hunched down into their coat collars; or they would turn around and glare. Roz would join the shouting packs, if she wasn't near her house. Her mother didn't like her running around on the street like a ragamuffin, screeching like a pack of hooligans. Afterwards, Roz was ashamed of herself for yelling at the DPs like that; but it was hard to resist when everyone else was doing it. Sometimes Roz got called a DP herself, because of her dark skin. But it was just a bad name, like "moron," or - much worse - "bugger." It didn't mean you were one. If Roz could get those kids cornered, and if they weren't too much bigger than she was, she would give them a Chinese burn. That was two hands on the arm and then a twist, like wringing out the wash. It did burn, and it left a red mark. Or else she would kick them, or else she would yell back. She had a temper, said the nuns.

389

Still, even if Roz wasn't a DP, there was something: There was something about her that set her apart, an invisible barrier, faint and hardly there, like the surface of water, but strong nevertheless. Roz didn't know what it was but she could feel it. She wasn't like the others, she was among them but she wasn't part of them. So she would push and shove, trying to break her way in. To school Roz wore a navy tunic and a white blouse, and on the front of the tunic there was a crest with a dove on it. The dove was the Holy Spirit. There was a picture of it in the chapel, coming down from Heaven with its wings outspread, on top of the Virgin Mary's head, while the Virgin Mary rolled her eyes upwards in a way that Roz's mother had told her never to do or they might get stuck that way; likewise crossing them. There was a second picture too, the Disciples and Apostles receiving the Holy Spirit at the Feast of Pentecost; this time the dove had red fire around it. The dove made the Virgin Mary pregnant, but everyone knew that men couldn't have babies, so the Disciples and Apostles didn't get pregnant, they only talked in tongues and prophesied. Roz didn't know what talking in tongues meant, and neither did Sister Conception, because when Roz asked about it Sister Conception told her not to be impertinent. The Pentecost picture was in the long main corridor of the school, with its creaky wooden floors and smell of goodness, a smell composed of slippery floor wax and plaster dust and incense from the chapel that made a small cool pool of guilty fear collect in Roz's stomach every time she smelled it, because God could see everything you did and also thought and most of these things annoyed him. He seemed to be angry much of the time, like Sister Conception.

But God was also Jesus, who got nailed to the cross. Who nailed him? Roman soldiers, who wore armour. There they
390

were, three of them, looking brutal and making jokes, while Mary in blue and Mary Magdalene in red wept in the background.

It wasn't really the Roman soldiers' fault because they were just doing their job. Really it was the fault of the Jews. One of the prayers in chapel was a prayer for the conversion of the

Jews, which meant they would switch over to being Catholic and then get forgiven. In the meantime God was still mad at them and they would have to keep on being punished.

That's

what Sister Conception said.

Things were more complicated than that, thought Roz, because Jesus had arranged for himself to be crucified on purpose: It was a sacrifice, and a sacrifice was when you gave your

life to save other people. Roz wasn't sure why getting yourself crucified was such a favour to everyone but apparently it was. So if Jesus did it on purpose, why was it the fault of the Jews?

Weren't they helping him out? A question of Roz's that went unanswered by Sister Conception,

though Sister Cecilia, who was prettier and on the whole nicer to Roz, took a crack at it: a bad

deed remained bad, she said, even if the result was good. There were lots of bad deeds that

turned out to have good results, because God was a mystery, which meant he switched things

around, but humans weren't in control of that, they were only in control of their own hearts. It was what was in your heart that counted.

Roz knew what a heart looked like. She'd seen lots of pictures of hearts, mostly the heart of Jesus, inside his opened-up chest. They were nothing like Valentines; they were more like the

cows' hearts in the butcher store, brownish red and dotted and rubbery-looking. The heart of Jesus glowed, because it was holy. Holy things glowed in general.

Every sin people did was like another nail pounded into the cross. That was what the nuns said, especially at Easter. Roz was less concerned about Jesus, because she knew it would come

391

out all right for him, than she was about the two thieves. One of them believed right away that

Jesus was God, so that one would sit on Jesus's right hand in Heaven. But what about the other one? Roz had a sneaking sympathy for the other thief. He must have been in just as much pain as Jesus and the first thief, but it wasn't a sacrifice because he didn't do it on purpose. It was worse to be crucified when you didn't want to be. And anyway, what had he stolen? Maybe something small. It never said.

Roz felt that he deserved a place in Heaven, too. She knew something about the seating plan: God in the middle, Jesus to the right of him, the good thief to the right of Jesus. The right hand was the right hand, and you always had to use it to make the sign of the cross, even

if you were left-handed. But who sat on the left hand of God? There must have been someone,

because God had a left hand as well as a right hand, and nothing about God could possibly

be

bad because God was perfect, and Roz couldn't see that side just being left empty. So the bad

thief could sit there; he could feast along with the rest. (And where was the Virgin Mary in all of this? Was it a long dinner table, with maybe God at one end and the Virgin Mary at the other? Roz knew enough not to ask. She knew she would be called wicked and impious. But it

was something she would have liked to know.)

Sometimes when Roz asked questions the nuns gave her funny looks. Or they gave each other funny looks, pursing their mouths, shaking their heads. Sister Conception said, "What can you expect?" Sister Cecilia took extra time to pray with Roz, when Roz had been bad and

needed to do penance after school. "There is more joy in Heaven over the one lost lamb," she

said to Sister Conception.

Roz added sheep to Heaven. They would be outside the window, naturally. But she was glad to know about them. That meant dogs and cats stood a chance, too. Not that she

392
was allowed to have either; they would have made too much trouble for her mother, who had enough things to do as it was.

XLIII

Roz is late coming home from school. She walks by herself, through the failing light, in the snow that is falling, not very much of it, down through the air like tiny white flakes of soap. She hopes the snow will stay around until Christmas.

She's late because she's been rehearsing for the Nativity play, in which she is the chief angel.

She wanted to be the Virgin Mary, but she's the chief angel instead because she's so tall, and

besides that she can remember all the lines. She has a white costume with a sparkly gold halo

made out of a coat-hanger, and wings of stiff white cardboard with painted gold feather-tips, held on by straps.

Today was the first day they tried it with the costumes. Roz has to be careful walking or the wings will slip down, and she has to keep her head up and facing straight ahead because of the

halo. She has to go up to the shepherds as they keep watch over their flocks by night, with a big tinsel Star of Bethlehem dangling from a string over their heads, and hold her right hand up while they are looking afraid, and say, Fear not; for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy,

which shall be to all people. Then she has to tell them about going to see the babe in swaddling

clothes, lying in the manger, and then she has to say, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth

peace, good will towards men, and then she has to point, with her whole arm held out, and guide

the shepherds across the stage to where the manger is, while the school choir sings.

Roz is sorry for the girls who play the shepherds, because

393

they have to wear grubby clothes and beards that hook over their ears with wires, like eyeglasses. These are the same beards that get used every year, and they're dirty. She feels even

sorrier for the little kids, who play the sheep. Their sheep costumes must have been white,

once, but now they are grey, and they must be very hot.

The manger has blue curtains across the front. The shepherds have to stand in front of it until the choir is finished; meanwhile, Roz has gone around behind it and has climbed up on a

stepstool, and is standing with both arms spread out. On her right side is Anne-Marie Roy, on

her left is Eileen Shea; both of them are blowing trumpets, although they aren't really blowing

them, of course. They have to stand that way the whole time, while two little kids with cherubs'

wings open the curtains, showing stupid Julia Warden with her blonde hair and rosebud mouth

and dumb simpering smile dressed up like the Virgin Mary, with a bigger halo than Roz's and a

china-doll Jesus, and Saint Joseph standing behind her leaning on his staff, and a bunch of hay

bales. The shepherds kneel on one side, and then along come the Wise Men in glittering robes

and turbans, one of them with her face blackened because one of the Wise Men was black, and

they kneel on the other side, and the choir sings "Angels We Have Heard on High," and then

the main curtains close and Roz can put her arms down, which is a relief because it really hurts

to keep them up in the air like that for so long.

After the rehearsal today Sister Cecilia told Roz she'd done very well. Roz had the only speaking lines in the whole play and it was important to say them clearly, in a nice loud voice.

She was doing excellently and would be a credit to the school. Roz was pleased, because for

once her loud voice wasn't getting her in trouble - mostly when the nuns speak to her in public

it's about her rowdy behaviour. But while they were all taking

394

their costumes off, Julia Warden said, "I think it's dumb to have an angel with black hair."

Roz said, "It's not black, it's brown," and Julia Warden said, "It's black. Anyways, you're not a real Catholic, my Mum says," and Roz told her to shut up or she'd make her, and Julia Warden said, "Where's your father anyways? My Mum says he's a DP," and Roz grabbed Julia

Warden's arm and did the Chinese burn on her, and Julia Warden screamed. Sister Cecilia came

rustling up and said what was all the commotion, and Julia Warden ratted, and Sister Cecilia

told Roz that this was not the Christmas spirit and she shouldn't pick on girls smaller than her,

and she was lucky Sister Conception wasn't there because if she was, Roz would get the strap.

"Rosalind Greenwood, you just never learn, " she said sadly.

Walking home from school, Roz spends her time thinking about what she will do to Julia Warden tomorrow, to get even; until the last block, when the two Protestant boys who live on the corner see her and chase her along the sidewalk, yelling "The Pope stinks!" Almost to her

house they catch her and rub snow in her face, and Roz kicks their legs. They let her go,

laughing and yelling with mock pain, or real pain - "Ouch, ouch, she kicked me" - and then she

picks up her snowy books and runs the rest of the way, not crying yet, and scrambles up her front steps onto her porch. "You're not allowed on my property!" she yells. A snowball whizzes past her. If Roz's mother were there, she would chase these boys off:

"Ragamuffins!"

she would say, and they would scatter. She sometimes takes the flat of her hand to Roz, but she won't let anyone else lay a finger on her. Except the nuns, of course.

Roz brushes off the snow - she's not supposed to track snow into the house - and goes inside, and down the hall to the kitchen. Two men are sitting at the kitchen table. They're wear-

ing DP clothes, not shabby ones, not worn out, but DP clothes

395

all the same, Roz can tell because of the shape. On the table is a bottle that Roz knows straight

away has liquor in it - she's seen bottles like that on the sidewalk - and in front of each of the men there's a glass. Roz's mother is not in the room. "Where's my mother?" she says.

"She went to get food," says one of the men. "She didn't have nothing to eat:"

The other one says, "We're your new uncles. Uncle George, Uncle Joe."

Roz says, "I don't have any uncles," and Uncle George says, "Now, you do." Then both of them laugh. They have loud laughs, and strange voices. DP voices, but with something else, some other accent. Something that's like the movies.

"Sit," says Uncle George hospitably, as if it's his house, as if Roz is a dog. Roz is unsure of the situation - there have never been two men in the kitchen before - but she sits anyway.

Uncle George is the bigger one; he has a high forehead and light wavy hair slicked straight back. Roz can smell his hair goo, sweet, like theatres. He's smoking a brown cigarette in a black

holder. "Ebony," he says to Roz. "You know what ebony is? It's a tree."

"She knows," says Uncle Joe. "She's a smart girl." Uncle Joe is smaller, with hunched-up shoulders and spindly hands, and dark hair, almost black, and huge dark eyes. He has a tooth

missing, off to one side. He sees Roz staring, and says, "Once, I had a gold tooth in this place.

I keep it in my pocket:" And he does. He takes out a small wooden box, painted red with a design of tiny green flowers, and opens it, and there inside is a gold tooth.

"Why?" says Roz.

"You don't want to leave a gold tooth lying around in your mouth, people get ideas," says Uncle Joe.

Roz's mother comes in, carrying two brown paper grocery bags, which she sets down on the counter. She is flushed, and

396

pleased-looking. She says nothing at all about the drinking, nothing about the smoke.

"These

are friends of your father's," she says. "They were all in the war together. He's coming, he'll be

here soon." Then she bustles out again; she needs to go to the butcher's, she says, because this

is an occasion. Occasions call for meat.

"What did you do in the war?" says Roz, eager to find out more about her father.

The two uncles laugh, and look at each other. "We was horse thieves," says Uncle George.

"The best horse thieves," says Uncle Joe. "No. Your father, he was the best. He could steal a horse -"

"He could steal a horse from right between your legs, you wouldn't notice," says Uncle

George. "He could lie -"

"He could lie like God himself:" "Bite your tongue! God don't lie."

"You're right, God says nothing. But your father, he never blinked. He could walk through a border like it wasn't there," says Uncle Joe.

"What's a border?" asks Roz.

"A border is a line on a map," says Uncle Joe.

"A border is where it gets dangerous," says Uncle George. "It's where you need a passport."

"Passport. See?" says Uncle Joe. He shows Roz his passport, with his picture in it. Then he shows her another, with the same picture but a different name. He has three of them. He fans

them out like a deck of cards. Uncle George has four.

"A man with only one passport is like a man with only one hand," he says solemnly.

"Your father, he has more passports than anyone. The best, like I said." They raise their glasses, and drink to Roz's father.

Roz's mother makes chicken, with mashed potatoes and gravy, and boiled carrots; she is cheerful, more cheerful than Roz has

397

ever seen her, and urges the uncles to have more. Or maybe she's not cheerful, maybe she's

nervous. She keeps looking at her watch. Roz is nervous, too: when will her father arrive?

"He'll be here when he's here," say the uncles.

Roz's father comes back in the middle of the night. Her mother wakes her up, and whispers, "Your father's back," almost as if she's apologizing for something, and takes Roz downstairs in

her nightgown, and there he is, sitting at the table, in the third chair that was kept for him. He sits easily, filling the space, as if he's always been there. He's large and barrel-shaped, bearded,

bear-headed. He smiles and holds out his arms. "Come, give Papa a kiss!"

Roz looks around: who is this Papa? Then she understands that he means himself. It's true, what Julia Warden said: her father is a DP She can tell by the way he talks.

Now Roz's life has been cut in two. On one side is Roz, and her mother, and the rooming house, and the nuns and the other girls at school. This part seems already in the past, although

it's still going on. That's the side where there are mostly women, women who have power, which means they have power over Roz, because even though God and Jesus are men it's her

mother and the nuns who have the last word; except for the priests of course, but that's just on

Sundays. On the other side is her father, filling the kitchen with his bulk, his loud voice, his multilayered smell; filling the house with it, filling up all the space in her mother's gaze so that

Roz is pushed off to the edge, because her mother, who is so unbending, bends. She abdicates.

She says, "Ask your father." She looks at - Roz's father mutely, the same kind of mushy cow-eyed look the Virgin Mary gives the Baby Jesus or the Holy Spirit in the pictures; she dishes up

his food and sets the plate before him as if it's some kind of offering.

398

And there isn't less work for her now, there's more, because there are three plates instead of

two, there's three of everything, and Roz's father never has to clean up. "Help your mother,"

he tells Roz, "in this family we help each other"; but Roz doesn't see him helping. Roz catches them hugging and kissing in the kitchen, two days after he's arrived, her father's big bear arms around her thin angular mother, and is full of disgust at her mother for being so soft, and with sorrow and jealousy and the rage of banishment.

To punish her mother for such betrayals Roz turns away from her. She turns to the uncles, when they are there, and also, and especially, to her father. "Come sit on Papa's knee," he says.

And she does, and from that safe place she regards her mother, working as hard as ever, hunched over the kitchen sink or kneeling in front of the oven, or scraping the bones off their plates into the pot of soup stock, or wiping the floor. "Make yourself useful," her mother snaps, and once Roz would have obeyed. But now her father's arms hold her tight. "I didn't see

her for so long," he says. And her mother clenches her lips and says nothing, and Roz watches

her with gloating triumph and thinks it serves her right.

But when her father isn't there she has to work, the same as usual. She has to scrub and polish. If she doesn't, her mother calls her a spoiled brat. "Who was your servant last year?" she jeers. "Look at my hands!"

The uncles move in. They've been having dinner every night, but now they move right into the

house. They're living in the cellar. They have two beds down there, two army surplus cots, and

two army sleeping bags as well.

"Just till they get on their feet," says Roz's father. "Till the ship comes in."

"What ship?" says Roz's mother. "It'll be a frosty Friday when any ship of theirs makes it to land:" But she says this

399

indulgently, and she cooks for them and asks them to have some more, and washes their sheets,

and says not a word about the smoking, and the drinking too, which goes on down in the cellar

with roars of laughter coming up the stairs. The uncles don't have to help clean up, either.

When

Roz asks why, all her mother will say is that they saved her father's life, during the war.

"We saved each other's life," says Uncle George. "I saved Joe's, Joe saved your father's, your

father saved mine."

"They never caught us," says Uncle Joe. "Not once." "Dummkopf, if they did we wouldn't be here, says Uncle George.

Aggie's grip on the roomers is slipping because it's no longer the same rules for everyone. It

doesn't help that the uncles don't pay rent, or that they slam the front door, hurrying in and out. They have places to go, they have things to do. Unnamed places, unspecified things.

They

have friends to meet, a friend from New York, a friend from Switzerland, a friend from Germany. They have lived in New York, and in London, and in Paris too. Other places. They refer with nostalgia to bars and hotels and racetracks in a dozen cities.

Miss Hines complains about the noise: do they have to shout at each other, and in foreign languages too? But Mrs. Morley jokes around with them, and sometimes joins them for a drink,

when Roz's father is home and they're all in the kitchen. She comes mincing down the stairs

in

her high heels, jingling her bracelets, and says she doesn't mind a drop, now and then.

"She can sure hold her liquor," says Uncle Joe. "She's a babe," says Uncle George.

"What's a babe?" says Roz.

"There's ladies, there's women; and there's babes, says Uncle George. "Your mother is a lady. That one, she's a babe."

*

400

Mr. Carruthers knows about the drinking that's going on in the cellar, and in the kitchen too. He can smell the smoke. He's still not supposed to drink or smoke in his own room but he starts doing it, more than he did before. One afternoon he opens his door and corners Roz in

the front hall.

"Those men are Jews," he whispers. Beer fumes fill the air. "We sacrificed our life for this country and they're handing it over to the Jews!"

Roz is galvanized. She runs to find the uncles, and asks them right away. If they really are Jews she might take a crack at converting them, and astonish Sister Conception.

"Me, I'm a U.S. citizen," says Uncle George, laughing a little. "I got the passport to prove it. Joe, he's a Jew"

"I'm a Hungarian, he's a Pole," says Uncle Joe. "I'm a Yugoslav, he's a Dutchman. This other passport says I'm Spanish. Your father now, he's half a German. The other half, that's the Jew"

This is a shock to Roz. She feels disappointment - no spiritual triumphs for her, because she could never hope to change her father in any way, she can see that - and then guilt: what if

the Sisters find out? Worse, what if they've known all along and haven't told her? She pictures

the malicious glee on Julia Warden's face, the whisperings that will go on behind her back. She must look dismayed, because Uncle George says, "Better to be a Jew than a murderer.

They murdered six million, over there."

"Five," says Uncle Joe. "The rest was other things. Gypsies and homos."

"Five, six, who's counting?" "Six what?" says Roz.

"Jews," says Uncle George. "They burnt them in ovens, they piled them up in heaps. Little Rozzie-lind, you wouldn't want to know. If they got their hands on you, back over there, they'd make you into a lampshade."

401

He doesn't explain to Roz that it would just be the skin. She has a picture of her entire body turned into a lampshade, with a lightbulb inside it and the light beaming out from her eyes and

nostrils and ears and mouth. She must look terrified, because Uncle Joe says, "Don't scare the

kid. All of that, it's over.

,

"Why?" says Roz. "Why would they?" But neither of them answers.

"It's not over till it's over," says Uncle George gloomily.

Roz has the feeling that someone has been lying to her. Not just about her father: about the war too, and about God. The starving orphans were bad enough but they weren't the whole story. What else has been going on, with the ovens and the heaps and the lampshades, and why

has God allowed it?

She doesn't want to think about any of it any more because it's too sad and confusing.

Instead she takes to reading murder mysteries. She borrows them from Miss Hines and reads them at night, beside the streetlight coming through her attic window. She likes the furniture, and the outfits of the people in them, and the butlers and the maids. But mostly she likes the fact that there's a reason for every death, and only one murderer at a time, and things get figured out at the end, and the murderer always gets caught.

XLIV

Roz walks home from school in an expectant mood. There's something going on; she isn't sure

what, but she knows there's something. Something is about to happen.

Last week, her mother said at breakfast: Mrs. Morley has been fired. What did that mean?

Lost her job, but Roz had a brief

402

vision of Mrs. Morley in flames, like an early martyr. Not that she wanted Mrs. Morley to burn up. She liked her, and also her accoutrements - her face cream samples, her costume jewellery,

and especially her shoes.

Ever since then Mrs. Morley has been dragging around the house in her quilted pink satin dressing gown. Her eyelids are puffy, her face bare of makeup; the jingling from her usual fes-

toons of necklaces and bangles has fallen silent. She isn't supposed to eat in her room but she's

doing it anyway, out of paper bags brought to her by Mr. Carruthers; there are sandwich crusts

and apple cores in her wastepaper basket, but although Roz's mother must be aware of this,

she isn't knocking on Mrs. Morley's door to issue the commands she's normally so fond of giving. Sometimes these paper bags contain small flat bottles that don't turn up in the wastepaper basket. In the late afternoons, still in her dressing gown, she goes down to the kitchen for short, fraught talks with Roz's mother. What is she going to do? she asks. Roz's mother purses her lips, and says she doesn't know.

These talks are about money: without her job, Mrs. Morley won't be able to pay the rent.

Roz feels sorry for her, but at the same time less friendly, because Mrs. Morley is whining and

it makes Roz disdainful. If girls whine at school they get poked or slapped by the other children, or stood in a corner by the nuns.

"She should pull herself together," Roz's mother says to Roz's father at the dinner table.

Once Roz would have been the audience for such comments, but now she is just a little pitcher

with big ears.

"Have a heart, Aggie," says Roz's father. No one else ever calls Roz's mother Aggie to her face.

"Having a heart is all very well," says Roz's mother, "but it won't put food on the table."

But there is food on the table. Beef stew, mashed potatoes and gravy, and cooked cabbage. Roz is eating it.

403

On top of Mrs. Morley being fired, Miss Hines is down with a cold. "Just pray to God she doesn't catch pneumonia," says Roz's mother. "Then we'll have two useless women on our hands."

Roz goes into Mrs. Morley's room. Mrs. Morley is in bed, eating a sandwich; she shoves it under the covers, but smiles when she sees it's only Roz. "Honey, you should always knock before entering a lady's chamber," she says.

"I have an idea," says Roz. "You could sell your shoes." The ones Roz means are the red

satin ones with the sparkly dips. They must be very expensive.

Mrs. Morley's smile wavers and falls. "Oh, honey," she says. "If only I could."

As she rounds the corner to her house Roz sees a strange sight. The front lawn is covered with snow like all the other lawns, but scattered over it there are a number of coloured objects. As she gets closer she sees what they are: Mrs. Morley's dresses. Mrs. Morley's stockings, Mrs. Morley's handbags, Mrs. Morley's brassieres and underpants. Mrs. Morley's shoes. A lurid light plays round them.

Roz goes inside, into the kitchen. Her mother is sitting white-faced and bolt upright at the kitchen table; her eyes are still as stone. In front of her is an untouched cup of tea.

MissHines

is sitting in Roz's chair, patting her mother's hand with small fluttery pats. She has a spot in pink in either cheek. She looks nervous, but also elated.

"Your mother's had a shock," she says to Roz. "Would you like a glass of milk, dear?"

"What are Mrs. Morley's things doing on the lawn?" says Roz.

"What could I do?" says Miss Hines, to nobody in particular. "I couldn't help seeing them. They didn't even shut the door all the way."

404

"Where is she?" asks Roz. "Where's Mrs. Morley?" Mrs. Morley must have gone away without paying the rent. "Flown the coop," is how her mother would put it. Roomers have flown the coop in that way before, leaving possessions behind them, though never out on the lawn.

"She won't be showing her face in this house again," says her mother.

"Can I have her shoes?" says Roz. She's sorry she won't be seeing Mrs. Morley again, but there is no need for the shoes to go to waste.

"Don't touch her filthy things," says her mother. "Don't lay a finger on them! They belong in the garbage, like her. That whore! If all that junk's not gone by tomorrow I'll burn it in the incinerator!"

Miss Hines looks shocked by such strong language. "I will pray for her," she says.

"I won't," says Roz's mother.

Roz connects none of this with her father until he appears, later, in time for dinner. The fact that he's on time is remarkable: he isn't usually. He is subdued, and respectful towards Roz's mother, but he doesn't hug her or give her a kiss. For the first time since his return he seems almost afraid of her.

"Here's the rent," he says. He dumps a little heap of money on the table.

"Don't think you can buy me off," says Roz's mother. "You and that slut! It's hush money.

I'm not touching one dirty cent." "It's not hers," says Roz's father. "I won it at poker." "How could you?" says Roz's mother. "After all I gave up for you! Look at my hands!"

"She was crying," says Roz's father, as if this explains everything.

"Crying!" says Roz's mother with scorn, as if she herself would never do such a degrading thing. "Crocodile tears! She's a man eater."

405

"I felt sorry for her," says Roz's father. "She threw herself at me. What could I do?"

Roz's mother turns her back on him. She hunches over the stove and dishes out the stew, hitting the spoon loudly on the side of the pot, and goes through the entire dinner without speaking. At first Roz's father hardly touches his dinner - Roz knows the feeling, it's anxiety and guilt - but Roz's mother shoots him a look of concentrated disgust and points at his plate,

meaning that if he doesn't eat what she's spent her whole life cooking for him he'll be in even

worse trouble than he is. When her back is turned Roz's father smiles a little smile at Roz, and

winks at her. Then she knows that all of this - his misery, his hangdog air - is an act, or partly

an act, and that he's all right really.

The money stays on the table. Roz eyes it: she has never seen so much money in a pile before. She would like to ask if she could have it, since neither of them seems to want it, but while she's clearing off the plates - "Help your mother," says her father - it disappears. It's in one of their pockets, she knows, but which one? Her mother's, she suspects - her apron pocket, because in the following days she softens, and talks more, and life returns to normal. Mrs. Morley however is never seen again. Neither are her clothes and shoes. Roz misses her; she misses the pet names and hand lotion; but she knows enough not to say so.

"A babe, like I said," says Uncle George. "Your father has a strong weakness:"

"Better he should close the door," says Uncle Joe.

A few years later, when she was a teenager and had the benefit of girlfriends, Roz put it together: Mrs. Morley was her father's mistress. She'd read about mistresses in the murder mysteries. Mistress was the word she preferred, because it was more elevated than the other

words available: "floozy,"

406

"whore," "easy lay." Those other words implied nothing but legs apart, loose flabby legs at that - weak legs, legs that did nothing but lie there, legs for sale - and smells, and random coupling, and sexual goo. Whereas mistress hinted at a certain refinement, an expensive wardrobe, a well-furnished establishment, and also at the power and cunning and beauty it took to get such things.

Mrs. Morley hadn't had the establishment or the refinement and her beauty had been a matter of opinion, but at least she'd had the clothes, and Roz wanted to give her father some

credit: he wouldn't have gone for just any old easy lay. She wanted to be proud of him. She knew her mother was in the right and her father was in the wrong; she knew her mother had been virtuous and had worked her fingers to the bone and had ruined her hands, and had been

treated with ingratitude. But it was an ingratitude Roz shared. Maybe her father was a scoundrel, but he was the one she adored.

Mrs. Morley was not the only mistress. There were others, over the years: kindly, sentimental,

soft-bodied women, lazy and fond of a drink or two and of tearful movies. In later life Roz deduced their presence, by her father's intermittent jauntiness and by his absences; she even

bumped into them sometimes on downtown streets, on the arm of her aging but still outrageous father. But such women came and went, whereas her mother was a constant.

What was their arrangement, her mother and her father? Did they love each other? They had a history, of course: they had a story. They met just as the war began. Did he sweep her off her feet? Not exactly. She had the rooming house even then, she'd inherited it from her own mother, who had run it since the father died, at the age of twenty-five, of polio, when Roz's mother was only two.

Roz's mother was older than her father. She must have been

407

already an old maid at the time she met him; already taciturn, already acid, already prim.

She had been walking home, carrying a bag of groceries; she had to pass a tavern. It was late

afternoon, closing time, when the drinkers were expelled onto the streets so they would be sure

to eat their dinners, or so the theory went. Ordinarily Roz's mother would have crossed over to

avoid this tavern, but she saw a fight in progress. Four against one: thugs, was what she called

them. The one was Roz's father. He was roaring like a bear, but one of the thugs came up behind him and hit him over the head with a bottle, and when he fell down they all started kicking him.

There were people on the street, but they just stood there watching. Roz's mother thought the

man on the ground would be killed. She was by habit a silent woman, but she was not particularly

timid, not in those days; she was used to telling men what for, because she had honed herself on

the roomers, some of whom had tried to take advantage. Usually though she minded her own

business and let other people mind theirs; usually she skirted bar fights and looked the other way.

But that day was different. She could not just stand there and watch a man be killed. She screamed (for Roz, this was the best part - her laconic mother, screaining her head off, and in

public too), and finally she waded in and swung her grocery bag, scattering apples and ' carrots,

until a policeman came in sight and the thugs ran off.

Roz's mother picked up her fruits and vegetables. She was quite shaken, but she didn't want

to waste her purchases. Then she helped Roz's father up off the sidewalk. "There was blood

running all over him," she said. "He looked like something the cat dragged in." Her house was

nearby, and being a devout Christian and familiar with the story of the Good Samaritan, she felt

she had to take him to it and clean him off, at least.

Roz could see how it must have been. Who can withstand gratitude? (Although gratitude is a

complicated emotion, as

408

she has had reason to learn.) Still, what woman can resist a man she's rescued? There's something erotic about bandages, and of course clothing would have had to have been

removed: jacket, shirt, undershirt. Then what? Her mother would have swung into her washing

mode. And where was this poor man going to spend the night? He was on his way to join the

army, he said (although he did not in fact join it, not officially); he was far from home - where was home? Winnipeg - and his money was gone. The thugs had taken it.

For her mother, who'd spent her twenties taking care of her own ailing mother, who'd never seen a man without his shirt on, this must have been the most romantic thing that had ever happened to her. The only romantic thing. Whereas for her father it was just an episode.

Or was it? Maybe he fell in love with her, this screaming, silent woman who had come to his aid. Maybe he fell in love with her house, a little. Maybe she meant shelter. In her father's rendition, it was the screaming he always mentioned, with considerable admiration.

Whereas

her mother mentioned the blood.

Whatever it was, they did end up married, though it was not a Catholic wedding; which meant that in the eyes of the Church they were not married at all. For her father's sake, her mother had placed herself in an unremitting state of sin. No wonder she felt he owed her

something.

Ah, thinks Roz, sitting in the cellar in her orange bathrobe. God, you foxy old joker, you certainly do

fool around. Changing- the rules. Giving out contradictory instructions - save people, help people, love

people; but don't touch. God is a good listener. He doesn't interrupt. Maybe this is why Roz likes

talking to him.

Soon after the ejection of Mrs. Morley, Mr. Carruthers vanishes too, leaving his room in a mess, taking only a suitcase, owing a month's rent. Uncle George moves into his room, and
409

Uncle Joe into Mrs. Morley's old room, and then Miss Hines gives notice because the house is

no longer respectable. "Where is the money going to come from?" asks Roz's mother.

"Don't worry, Aggie," says her father. And somehow money does appear, not very much money but enough, and out of nowhere, it seems, because her father doesn't have a job and

neither do Uncle George and Uncle Joe. Instead they go to the racetrack. Occasionally they take Roz with them, on Saturdays when she's not at school, and put a dollar on a horse for her.

Roz's mother never goes, and neither - Roz concludes, looking around at the outfits - do any other mothers. The women there are babes.

In the evenings the uncles sit at the card table in Uncle George's new room, and drink and smoke and play poker. If Roz's mother isn't home her father sometimes joins them. Roz hangs

around, looking over their shoulders, and eventually they teach her how to play. "Don't show what you're thinking," they tell her. "Play close to your chest. Know when to fold:"

After she's learned the game they show her how to gamble. At first it's just with poker chips; but one day Uncle George gives her five dollars. "That's your stake," he tells her.

"Never

bet more than your stake." It's not advice he follows, himself.

Roz gets good. She learns to wait: she counts the drinks they have, she watches the level in the bottle go down. Then she moves in.

"This little lady's a killer," says Uncle George admiringly. Roz beams.

It helps that she's playing seriously, whereas the uncles and her father aren't, not really.

They play as if they're expecting a phone call. They play as if they're filling in the time.

All of a sudden there was a lot of money. "I won it at the track," said Roz's father, but Roz knew this couldn't be true because there was too much of it for that. There was enough
410

for dinner at a restaurant, for all of them, her mother too, with ice cream afterwards. Her mother wore her best dress, which was a new best dress, pale green with a white daisy collar.

because there was enough money for that as well. There was enough for a car; it was a blue

Dodge, and the boys from down the street stood outside Roz's house for half an hour, gazing

at it, while Roz watched them silently from her porch. Her triumph was so complete she didn't

even have to jeer.

Where had the money come from? Out of thin air. It was like magic; her father waved his hand and presto, there it was. "The ship came in," said Roz's father. The uncles got some too.

It was for all three of them, said her father. Equal shares, because the ship belonged to all.

Roz knew it wasn't a real ship. Still, she could picture it, an old-fashioned ship like a galleon, a treasure ship, its sails golden in the sunlight, pennants flying from its masts. Or something like that. Something noble.

Her parents sold the rooming house and moved north, away from the streets of narrow cheek-

by-jowl old houses and tiny lawns, into an enormous house with a semi-circular driveway in front and a three-car garage. Roz decided that they had become rich, but her mother told her

not to use that word. "We're comfortable," was what she said.

But she didn't seem comfortable at all. Instead she seemed afraid. She was afraid of the house, she was afraid of the cleaning lady Roz's father insisted on, she was afraid of the new

furniture that she herself had bought - "Get the best," said Roz's father - she was afraid of her

new clothes. She wandered around in her housecoat and slippers, from room to room, as if she

was looking for something; as if she was lost. She had been much more comfortable back in

the old neighbourhood, where things were the right size and she knew her way around.

She said she had nobody to talk to. But when had she ever

talked that much, before? And who had she ever talked to? Roz, Roz's father, the uncles.

Now

the uncles had places of their own. The roomers? There were no roomers any more, for her to

complain about and boss around. When men came to the door delivering things they took one

look at her and asked to speak to the lady of the house. But she had to pretend to be happy,

because of Roz's father. "This is what we waited for," he said.

Roz has new clothes too, and a new name. She's no longer Rosalind Greenwood, she's Roz

Grunwald. This, her parents explain, has been her real name all along. "Why wasn't I called that before, then?" she asks.

"It was the war," they say. "That name was too Jewish. It wasn't safe."

"Is it safe now?" she asks.

Not entirely. Different things are safe, where they are living now. By the same token, different things are dangerous.

Roz goes to a new school. She's in high school now so she goes to Forest Hill Collegiate Institute. She's no longer a Catholic: she's renounced all of that - not without qualms, not without residue - in favour of being a Jew. Since there are so clearly sides, she would rather be

on that one. She reads up on it because she wants to do it right; then she asks her father to -

buy two sets of dishes, and refuses to eat bacon. Her father buys the dishes to humour her, but

her mother won't separate the meat dishes from the milk ones, and gives her a wounded look if

she brings it up. Nor will her father join a temple. "I was never religious," he says. "Like I always said - who owns God? If there was no religions there won't be all this trouble:"

There are a lot of Jewish kids at Roz's new school; in fact at this school Jewish is the thing to

be. But whereas once Roz was not Catholic enough, now she isn't Jewish enough. She's an oddity,

a hybrid; a strange half-person. Her clothes, although expensive, are subtly not right. Her accent is not right either. Her enthusiasms are not right, nor her skills: Chinese burns and kicking people in the shins and playing a nifty hand of poker cut no ice here. Added to that, she's too big; also too loud, too clumsy, too eager to please. She has no smoothness, no bore-

dom, no class. She finds herself in a foreign country. She's an iri-iriigrant, a displaced person. Her father's ship has come in, but she's just off the boat. Or maybe it's something else: maybe it's the money. Roz's money is plentiful, but it needs to be aged, like good wine or cheese. It's too brash, too shiny, too exclamatory. It's too brazen.

She is sent off to Jewish summer camp by her father because he's found out that it's the right

thing to do with your children, here, in this country, in this city, in this neighbourhood, in the summer. He wants Roz to be happy, he wants her to fit in. He equates these things. But at camp she's even more of an interloper, an obvious intruder: she has never played tennis, she's

never ridden a horse, she doesn't know any of the cute folk dances from Israel or any of the mournful minor-key Yiddish songs. She falls off sailboats, into the freezing blue northern water of Georgian Bay, because she's never been on a boat before; when she tries to water-ski

she chickens out at the last minute, just before they gun the motor, and sinks like a stone.

The

first time she appears in a bathing suit, not that she really knows how to swim, a graceless flail

is her basic style, she realizes you're supposed to shave your armpits. Who could have been

expected to tell her? Not her mother, who does not discuss the body. She has never been outside the city in her life. The other kids act as if they were born paddling a canoe and sleeping in smelly tents, but Roz can't get used to the bugs.

She sits at the breakfast table in the log-cabin dining room,

413

listening in silence while the other girls complain languidly about their mothers. Roz wants to complain about her mother too, but she's found that her complaints don't count because her mother isn't Jewish. When she begins, with her rooming house stories, her stories of toilets and scrubbing, they roll their eyes and yawn delicately, like kittens, and change the subject back to their own mothers. Roz can't possibly know, they imply. She can't understand.

In the afternoons they do their hair up in rollers and lacquer their nails, and after the folk dances and singsongs and marshmallow roasts and Beatnik dress-up parties they are walked

slowly back to their sleeping cabin by various boys, through the aromatic, painful dark, with its owl sounds and mosquitoes and its smell of pine needles, its flashlights blinking like fireflies, its languorous murmurs. None of these boys saunters over to joke with Roz, none stands with his arm propped on a tree, over her head. Well, not many of them are tall enough

to do that, and anyway who wants to be seen with a part-shiksa hippo-hips fool? So Roz stays

behind, to help clean up. God knows she's an expert at that.

During arts and crafts, which Roz is no good at - her clay ashtrays look like cow patties, her belt woven on a primitive Inca-type hand loom like the cat got into it - she says she has to go

to the bathroom, and wanders off to the kitchen to` wheedle a pre-dinner snack. She has befriended the pastry cook, an old man who can make a row of ducks across a cake with

butter

icing in one burst of calligraphy, without lifting the decorator once. He shows Roz how, and how to make an icing rose too, and a stem with a leaf, "A rose without a leaf is like a woman

without honour," he says, bowing to her in a courtly, old-fashioned, European way, handing her the cake decorator to let her try. He lets her lick out the bowl, and tells her she is the right

shape for a woman, not all bones like some here, he can tell she appreciates good food. He has

an accent, like her

414

uncles, and a faint blue number on his arm. It's left over from the war, but Roz doesn't ask about that, because nobody talks about the war here, not yet. The war is unmentionable.

Roz can see that she will never be prettier, daintier, thinner, sexier, or harder to impress than these girls are. She decides instead to be smarter, funnier, and richer, and once she has

managed that they can all kiss her fanny. She takes to making faces; she resorts to the old rudeness of Huron Street, to get attention. Soon she has bulldozed a place for herself in the group: she is the joker. At the same time, she imitates. She picks up their accents, their intonations, their vocabulary; she adds layers of language to herself, sticking them on like posters on a fence, one glued over the top of the next, covering up the bare boards. As for the

clothes, as for the accessories, those can be studied.

Roz made it through high school, which was not exactly an abode of bliss, understatement of

the year. Much later she'd discovered - at a class reunion she couldn't resist, because she had a

great outfit for it and wanted to show off- that most of the other girls there had been as miserable as she was. Nor could they credit her own distress. "You were always so cheerful,"

they said.

After high school Roz went to university. She took Art and Archaeology, which her father didn't consider practical but which came in handy later in the renovation business; you never knew which little doodads from the past could be recycled. She arranged to live in residence,

even though, as her mother pointed out, she had a perfectly good home to live in. But she wanted out, she wanted out from under, and she got her father to spring for it by threatening to run away to Europe or to some other university a million miles away unless he did. She picked McClung Hall because it was non-denominational. By that time she had dumped her excess Jewishness overboard,

415

along with her excess Catholicism. Or so she thought. She wanted to travel light, and was happiest in a mixed bag.

The day Roz got her degree her father took her out for a treat, along with her mother and her increasingly seedy uncles. They went to a fancy restaurant where the menu was in French,

with the English in small print underneath. For dessert there was ice cream, in various French

flavours: cassis, fraise, citron, pistache.

"French was not one of my passports," said Uncle Joe. "I'll have the pastiche."

That was me, thinks Roz. I was the pastiche.

A long time later, after Roz was a married woman, after her mother had died - slowly and disapprovingly, since death was immodest, male doctors prying into your body being next

door

to sin - and after her father had followed, in jerky, painful stages, like a train shunting - after all

this had happened and Roz was an orphan, she found out about the money. Not the later money, she knew about that; the first money. The root, the seedling, the stash.

She'd gone to visit Uncle George in the hospital, because he too was dying. He didn't have a room of his own, or even a semi-private; he was in a ward. Neither of the uncles had done well at all. Both had ended up in rooming houses. After blowing their own money, they'd blown some of Roz's father's as well. They'd gambled, they'd-borrowed; or they'd called it bor-

rowing, though everyone must have known they would never pay it back. But her father never

said no, to any request of theirs.

"It's the Prostrate!" Uncle Joe told her, over the phone.

"Better you shouldn't mention it:" So Roz didn't, because the uncles too had their areas of modesty. She took flowers, and a vase to put them in because hospitals never had vases; she

put on a bright smile and a bustling, efficient manner, but she dropped both immediately when

she saw how terrible Uncle George looked. He was shrivelled away, he was wasted.

Already his

head was a skull. Roz sat beside him, inwardly mourning. The man in the bed next to him was

asleep and snoring.

"That one, he's not going anyplace," said Uncle George, as if he himself had plans.

"You want a private room?" said Roz. She could arrange it for him, easy.

"Nah," said Uncle George. "I like the company. I like to have people. You know? Anyway, it costs a bundle. I never had the talent:"

"The talent for what?" said Roz.

"Not like your father," said Uncle George. "He could start in the morning with a dollar, end of the day he'd have five. Me, I'd always just take that dollar and put it on a horse. I was more

for the good times."

"Where did he get it?" said Roz.

Uncle George looked at her out of his wizened yellow eyes. "Get what?" he said innocently, craftily.

"The first dollar," said Roz. "What did the three of you really do, in the war?"

"You don't need to know that," said Uncle George.

"I do," said Roz. "It's okay, he's dead now. You can tell me, you're not going to hurt my feelings."

Uncle George sighed. "Yeah, well," he said. "It's a long time ago.

"

"It's me who's asking," said Roz, having heard the uncles use this expression on each other, always with effect.

"Your father was a fixer," said Uncle George. "He fixed

417

things. He was a fixer before the war, he was a fixer in the war, and after the war he was also- a fixer."

"What did he fix?" said Roz. She took it he didn't mean broken refrigerators.

"To tell you the truth," says Uncle George slowly, "your father was a crook. Don't get me wrong, he was a hero, too. But if he hadn't of been a crook, he couldn't of been a hero.

That's

how it was."

"A crook?" said Roz.

"We was all crooks," said Uncle George patiently. "Everybody was a crook. They was stealing, all kinds of things, you wouldn't believe - paintings, gold, stuff you could hide and sell

later. They could see how it was going, at the end they was grabbing anything. Every time there's a war, people steal. They steal whatever they can. That's what a war is - a war is stealing.

Why should we be any different? Joe was the inside man, I was the driver, your father, he did

the planning. When we would move, who to trust. Without him, nothing.

"So, we'd get it out for them - not legal, with laws like they had I don't need to tell you - but we'd bribe the guards, everyone was on the take. Hide it somewhere safe, till after the war.

But

how did they know what was what, how did they know where we were putting it? So we kept some things back, for ourselves. Took it to different places. Picked it up afterwards. Some of

them was dead, too, so we got theirs."

"That's what he did?" said Roz. "He helped the Nazis?" "It was dangerous," said Uncle George reproachfully, as if danger was the main justification. "Sometimes we took out stuff we

weren't supposed to take. We took out Jews. We had to be careful, go through our regulars. They let us do it because if we was caught, it was their neck too. Your father never pushed it

too hard though. He knew when it was too dangerous. He knew when to stop:"

418

"Thank you for telling me," Roz said.

"Don't thank me," Uncle George said. "Like I told you, he was a hero. Only, some wouldn't understand." He was tired; he closed his eyes. His eyelids were delicate and crinkled, like wet

crepe paper. He raised two thin desiccated fingers, dismissing her.

Roz made her way out through the white tiled maze of the hospital, heading for home and a stiff drink. What was she to conclude from all this, her new, dubious knowledge? That her money is dirty money, or that all money is? It's not her fault, she didn't do it, she was just a child. She didn't make the world. But she still has a sense of hands, bony hands, reaching up

from under the earth, tugging at her ankles, wanting back what's theirs. And how old are those

hands? Twenty, thirty years, or a thousand, two thousand? Who knows where money has been?

Wash your hands when you touch it, her mother used to say. It's riddled with germs.

She didn't tell Mitch, though. She never told Mitch. It would've been one up for him, and he was one up already, him and his old-money fastidiousness, his pretence of legal scruples.

Clipping coupons yes, smuggling Jews no. Or that's what Roz would be willing to bet. He sneered discreetly at her money as it was, though she'd noticed he didn't mind spending it.

But

old money made a profit from human desperation too, as long as the desperation and the flesh

and the blood were at several removes. Where the heck did people like Mitch think those dividends really came from? And how about the South African gold stocks he'd advised her to

buy? In every conversation between the two of them there was a third party present: her

money, sitting between them on the sofa like some troll or heavy barely sentient vegetable. At times it felt like part of her, part of her body, like a hump on her back. She was torn between the urge to cut it off from

419

herself, to give it away, and the urge to make more of it, because wasn't it her protection? Maybe they were the same urge. As her father said, you couldn't give without getting first.

Roz got with the left hand and gave away with the right, or was it the other way around? At first she gave to the body items, the hearts because of her father, the cancer because of her mother. She gave to World Hunger, she gave to the United Way, she gave to the Red Cross.

That was in the sixties. But when the women's movement hit town in the early seventies, Roz was sucked into it like a dust bunny into a vacuum cleaner. She was visible, that was why.

She

was high-profile, and there weren't many women then who were, except for movie stars and the Queen of England. But also she was ready for the message, having been sandbagged twice

already by Mitch and his things. The first time - the first time she found out, anyway - was when

she was pregnant with Larry, and lower he couldn't go.

Roz loved the consciousness-raising groups, she loved the free-ranging talk. It was like catching up on all the sisters she'd never had, it was like having a great big family in which the

members, for once, had something in common; it was like being allowed, finally, into all the groups and cliques she'd never quite been able to crash before. No more mealy-mouth, no more my-hubby-is-better-than-your-hubby, no more beating about the bush! You could say anything!

She loved sitting in a circle, though after a while she noticed that the circle was not quite circular. One woman would tell her problem and admit her pain, and then another one would do it, and then Roz would take her turn, and a sort of disbelieving glaze would come down over their eyes and someone would change the subject.

What was it? Why was Roz's pain second-rate? It took her a while to figure it out: it was her money. Surely, they thought, anyone with as much money as Roz couldn't possibly be suffering. She remembered an old expression from her uncles:

420

My heart bleeds for him. This was always said with extreme sarcasm, about someone who'd

got lucky, which meant rich. Roz was expected to do the bleeding for, but she could not expect

to be bled over in return.

Still, there was one area in which Roz was in demand. In a movement so perennially cash-starved you could almost say she was indispensable. So it was natural that she was the one they

had come to when WiseWomanWorld was about to go under because it couldn't attract big glossy lipstick-and-booze advertising. It was more than a magazine then, it was a friend; a friend that combined high ideals and hope with the sharing of down-and-dirty secrets. The truth about masturbation! The truth about wanting, sometimes, to shove your kids' heads into

the wall! What to do when men rubbed themselves against you from behind, in the subway, and when your boss chased you around the desk, and when you had those urges to take all the

pills in the medicine cabinet, the day before your period! WiseWomanWorld was all the sleepover parties Roz had once felt were going on behind her back, and of course she had to

save it.

The others wanted the magazine to be a cooperative, the way it already was. They wanted Roz to just give them the money, period, and no tax write-off either because it was too political. It wasn't peanuts either, what it would take: There was no point in a small cash injection. Not enough would be the same as nothing, she might as well flush it down the toilet.

"I never invest in anything I can't control," she told them. "You have to issue shares. Then I'll buy a majority holding." They got angry at her for that, but Roz said, "Your leg's broken, you go to a doctor. You have money troubles, you come to me. You tried it your way and it didn't work, and frankly your books are a mess. This is something I know. You want me to fix it, or not?" She knew it would still lose money,

421

but that being the case she at least wanted to take the business loss.

They didn't like it either when Roz put Mitch on the board of directors and stuck on a couple of his legal buddies to keep him company, but it was the only way. If they wanted her help they had to realize what her life conditions were, and if Mitch couldn't participate, he would sabotage. Her home life would be turned into a maze of snares and booby traps, more

than it already was. "It's just three meetings a year," she told them. "It's the price you pay."

As

prices went - as prices had gone, here and there in world history - it wasn't all that high.

"I'm having Zenia over for a drink," Roz tells Mitch. If she doesn't tell him, he's sure to walk in on the two of them and then sulk because he's been left out of the picture. Being a woman with power doesn't mean Roz has to tread less softly around Mitch. She has to tread more softly, she has to diminish herself, pretend she's smaller than she is, apologize for her success,

because everything she does is magnified.

"Zenia who?" says Mitch.

"You know, we ran into her in that restaurant," says Roz. She's pleased Mitch doesn't remember.

"Oh yes," says Mitch. "She's not like most of your friends:" Mitch isn't that keen on Roz's friends. He thinks they're-a bunch of man-hating hairy-legged whip-toting feminists, because at

one point, in his early days on the board of WiseWvmanWorld, they were. In vain does Roz tell him that everyone was then, it was a trend, and the overalls were just a fashion statement

-

not that Roz ever wore them herself, she would've look_ ed like a truck driver. He knows better, he knows it wasn't just overalls. The women at Wise Woman had put up with him because of Roz, but they hadn't suffered him gladly. They wouldn't let him tell them how to be

good feminists, much as he tried. Maybe it was because he said they should use

422

humour and charm because otherwise men would be frightened of them, and they weren't in the mood to be charming, not to him, not just then. He must have been badly traumatized by that whole phase; though he wasn't above trying a few twists and ploys of his own.

Roz remembers the dinner party she threw to celebrate the restructuring of WiseWomanWorld, when Mitch was sitting beside Alma the managing editor, and made the

mistake of trying to run his hand up and down her leg under the table while carrying on a too- animated theoretical discussion with Edith the designer. Poor lamb, he thought Roz couldn't guess. But one look at Mitch's arm position - and his dampening, reddening,

braised-looking

face, and Alma's stern frown and the squint lines around her mouth - told all. Roz watched

with furious interest as Alma struggled with her dilemma: whether to put up with it because Mitch was Roz's husband and she didn't want to jeopardize her job - a thing Mitch had counted on with others, in the past - or whether to call him on it. Principle won, and also outrage, and Alma said to him sharply, though in an undertone, "I am not a piccolo."

"Pardon?" said Mitch, distantly, politely, bluffing it out, keeping his hand under the table. The poor baby hadn't realized yet that women had really changed. In days of yore, Alma would have felt guilty for attracting this kind of attention, but not any longer.

"Get your goddamn hand off my fucking leg or I'll stab you with my fork," hissed Alma. Roz went into coughing mode to cover up that she'd heard, and Mitch's hand shot up above ground as if he'd been scalded, and after that night he started referring to Alma with pity and

concern, as if she were a lost soul. A drug addict or something. "Too bad about that girl," he would say sadly. "She has such potential, but she has an attitude problem. She'd be quite

423

good-looking if it weren't for the scowl.' He hinted that she might be a lesbian; he hadn't figured out that this was no longer an insult. Roz waited a decent interval and then pulled strings to get Alma a raise.

But that's how Mitch tends to see Roz's friends: scowly. And more lately, frumpy. He can't resist commenting on how their faces are sliding down, as if his isn't, though it's true men can

get away with looking older. Probably it's revenge: he suspects Roz and her friends of talking

him over behind his back, of analyzing him and providing remedies for him, as if he's a stomach ailment. This was true once, granted, when Roz still thought she could change him, or

when her friends thought she could change herself. When he was a project. Leave him, they'd

say. Turf the bugger out! You can afford it! Why do you stay with him?

But Roz had her reasons, among them the children. Also she was still enough of a once-Catholic to be nervous about divorce. Also she didn't want to admit to herself that she'd made

a mistake. Also she was still in love with Mitch. So after a while she stopped discussing him with her friends, because what was left to say? It was an impasse, and chewing over solutions

that she knew she would never implement made her feel guilty.

And then her friends gave up wearing overalls, and left the magazine, and went into dress-for-success tailored suits, and lost interest in Mitch, and discussed burnout instead, and Roz

could permit herself to feel guilty about other things, such as being more energetic than they were. But Mitch keeps on saying, "Are you having lunch with that frumpy old manhater?" whenever one of the friends from that era turns up again: He knows it gets to her.

He has a little more tolerance for Charis and Tony, maybe because Roz has known them so long and because they're the twins' godmothers. But he thinks Tony is a weirdo and Charis

424

is a nut. That's how he neutralizes them: As far as Roz knows he has never made a pass at either of them. Possibly he doesn't place them in the category of woman but in some other category, not clearly defined: A sort of sexless gnome.

Roz calls up Tony at her History Department office. "You won't believe this," she says.

There is a pause while Tony tries to guess what it is she's being called upon not to believe.

"Probably not," she says. "Zenia's back in town," says Roz.

There's another pause. "You were talking to her?" says Tony. "I ran into her in a restaurant," says Roz.

"You never just run into Zenia," says Tony. "Look out, is my advice. What's she up to?"

There must be something."

"I think she's changed," says Roz. "She's different from the way she used to be:"

"A leopard cannot change its spots," says Tony. "Different how?"

"Oh, Tony, you're so pessimistic!" says Roz. "She seemed - well, nicer. More human. She's a

freelance journalist now, she's writing on women's issues. Also" - Roz drops her voice - "her tits are bigger."

"I don't think tits can grow," says Tony dubiously, having once looked into it.

"Most likely they didn't," says Roz. "They're doing a lot of artificial ones now. I bet she got them implanted."

"That wouldn't surprise me," says Tony. "She's upping her strike capabilityST But tits or no tits, watch your back."

"I'm just having her over for a drink," says Roz. "I have to, really. She knew my father, during the war." The full implications of which Tony could hardly be expected to understand. So nobody could say, later, that Roz wasn't warned. And nobody did say it, and nobody said,

either, that Roz was

425

warned, because Tony wasn't one of those intolerable serves-you-right friends and she never

reminded Roz of the precautions she had urged. But once the chips were down, Roz reminded herself. You walked into it with your eyes open, she would berate herself.

Dimwit! What led you on?

She knows now what it was. It was Pride, deadliest of the Seven Deadly; the sin of Lucifer, the wellspring of all the others. Vainglory, false courage, bravado. She must have thought she was some kind of a lion-tamer, some kind of a bullfighter; that she could succeed where her two friends had failed. Why not? She knew more than they'd known, because she knew their stories. Forewarned was forearmed. Also she was overconfident. She must have thought she would be guarded and adroit. She must have thought she could handle Zenia. She'd once had pretty much the same attitude towards Mitch, come to think of it.

Not that she'd felt the pride working in her at the time. Not at all. That was the thing about sins - they could dress up, they could disguise themselves so you hardly knew them. She hadn't thought she was being proud, merely hospitable. Zenia wanted to say thank you, because of Roz's father, and it would have been very wrong of Roz to deny her the opportunity.

There had been another kind of pride, too. She'd wanted to be proud of her father. Her flawed father, her cunning father, her father the fixer, her father the crook. She'd told little bits of his war story when people were interviewing her for magazine profiles, Roz the Business Whiz, how did you get your start, how do you juggle all your different lives, what do you do

about daycare, how does your husband cope, what do you do about the housework, but even while she

was telling about him, her father the hero, her father the rescuer, she knew she was sprucing

him up, shining a good light on him, pinning posthumous medals onto his chest. He himself had refused to discuss it, this shadowy part of his life. What do you need to

426

know for? he'd say. That time is over. People could get hurt. Waiting for Zenia, she'd been more

than a little nervous about what she might find out.

XLVI

When Zenia does come for a drink, finally - she hasn't rushed it - it's a Friday and Roz is wiped because it's been a vile week at the office, input overload times ten, and the twins have chosen this day to give each other haircuts because they want to be punk rockers, even though they're only seven, and Roz has been intending to parade them for Zenia but now they look as if they have a bad case of mange, and they show no signs of repentance at all, and anyway Roz doesn't feel she should display anger because girls should not be given the idea that being pretty is the only thing that counts and that other people's opinions of how they ought to arrange their bodies are more important than their own: So after her first yelp of surprise and dismay she has tried to act as if everything is normal, which in a way it is, although her tongue is just a stub because she's bitten it so hard, and she has dutifully repressed her strong desire to send them upstairs to take baths or play in their playroom, and when Zenia arrives at the front door, wearing amazing lizard-skin shoes, three hundred bucks at least and- with heels so high her legs are a mile long, and a cunning fuchsia- and-black raw silk suit with a little nipped-in waist and a tight skirt well above the knees - Roz is so disgusted that mini-skirts have come back, what are you supposed to do if you have serious thighs, and she remembers those skirts from the last time around, in the sixties, you had to sit down with your legs glued together or all would be on view, the once-unmentionable, the central item, the foul and

427

disgraceful blot, the priceless treasure, an invitation to male peering, to lustful pinching and leering, to foaming at the mouth, to rape and pillage, just as the nuns always warned - there are the twins, wearing Roz's cast-off slippers from their dress-up box and running down the hall with Mitch's electric shaver, chasing the cat, because they want it to be a punk rock mascot, although Roz has told them before that the shaver is strictly out of bounds and they will be in deep trouble if Mitch discovers cat fur caught in it, it's bad enough when Roz can't find her own shaver and uses Mitch's on her legs and pits and isn't careful enough washing the stubble

out of it. The twins pay no attention to her because they assume she'll cover for them, he herself blue, hurl her body in front of the bullets, and they're right, she will.

Zenia sees them, and says, "Are those yours? Did they fall in the food processor?" and it's just like something Roz might have said herself, or thought at least, and Roz doesn't know whether to laugh or cry.

She laughs, and they have the drink in the sun room, which Roz refuses to call the conservatory even though she's always hankered after a conservatory, a conservatory with miniature orange trees in it, or orchids, like the ones in twenties murder mysteries, the kind with the map of the English mansion and an X where the body gets found, in the conservatory

quite frequently. But although the sun room is glass and has a Victorian cupola thing on top it's too small to be a real conservatory, and the word itself is too highfalutin for the voice of Roz's mother, which lives on intermittently inside Roz's head and would sneer, although it's full of plants, plants with limited lifespans, because whose responsibility are they exactly? Mitch says he doesn't have the time, although he was the one who ordered all this vegetation;

but Roz's thumb is not green, it's brown, the brown of withered sedges. It's not that she doesn't want the plants to live.

428

She even likes them, though she can't tell the difference between a begonia and a rhododendron. But these things should be done by professionals: a plant service. They come,

they see, they water, they cart away the dying, they bring fresh troops.

She has a service like that for the office, so why not here? Mitch says he doesn't want yet more strangers tramping through the house - he's suffering from decorator burnout - but it's possible that he likes the image of Roz with an apron and a watering can, just as he likes the

image of Roz with an apron and a frying pan, and an apron and a feather duster, even though

Roz can't cook her way out of a paper bag, why did God make restaurants if he intended her

to cook, and she has a phobia about feather dusters, having been force-fed on them in childhood. The constant is the apron, the Good Housekeeping guarantee that Roz will always

be home whenever Mitch chooses to get back there.

Or there may be another agenda, another nuance to the guilt Roz is supposed to feel, and does feel, over the kaput plants, because Mitch wanted a swimming pool instead of a sun room, so he could dive into a chlorine purification bath and sterilize his chest hair and kill whatever athlete's foot and crotch fungus and tongue rot he may have picked up from plucking the ripening floozies; but Roz said an outdoor swimming pool was ridiculous in Canada, two months of swelter and ten of freeze-your-buns-off, and she refused to have an indoor one because she knew people who did and their houses smelled like gas refineries on a

hot day because of all the chemicals, and there would be complicated machinery that would break down and that Roz would somehow be responsible for getting fixed. The worst thing about swimming pools as far as Roz is concerned is that they are one step too close to the great outdoors. Wildlife falls into them. Ants, moths, and such. Like the lake at summer camp, she'd be flailing along and suddenly there would

429

be a bug, right at nose level. Swimming, in Roz's opinion, is a major health hazard.

Zenia laughs and says she couldn't agree more, and Roz talks on, because she's nervous at

seeing Zenia again after all these years, she remembers the reputation, the aura of green poison

that encircled Zenia, the invisible incandescence, touch her and you'd get burned; and she remembers history, the stories of Tony and Charis. So she has to step carefully here, it's no wonder she's nervous, and when she's nervous she talks. Talks; and also eats, and also drinks.

Zenia takes one olive and chews it daintily, Roz gobbles the lot, and touches up Zenia's martini,

and pours herself another, and offers a cigarette, words pouring out of her like ink from a squid.

Camouflage. She's relieved to note that Zenia smokes. It would be intolerable if she were thin

and well-dressed and unwrinkled and a knockout, and a nonsmoker as well.

"So," says Roz, when she's made a sufficient fool of herself to consider the ice broken. "My father." Because this is what she wants, this is the point of the visit. Isn't it?

"Yes," says Zenia. She leans forward and sets down her glass, and rests her chin

thoughtfully

on one hand and frowns slightly. "I was only a baby, of course. So I have no real memories of that time. But my aunt always talked about your father, before she died. About how he got us

out. I guess if it weren't for him I'd just be ashes now.

"It was in Berlin. That's where my parents lived, in a good neighbourhood, in a respectable apartment - it was one of those old Berlin buildings with the mosaic tiles in the front hall and the

oblong staircase with the wooden banister, and the maid's room and the back balcony overlooking a courtyard, for hanging out the wash. I know, because I saw it - I went back. I was

there in the late seventies, I had an assignment in Berlin - the Berlin nightlife, for some travel magazine, you know the

430

sort of thing, sexy cabaret, kinky strip clubs, telephones on the tables. So I took the afternoon

off and I found it. I had the address, from some old papers of my aunt's. The buildings all around were newer, they'd been rebuilt after the bombing, the whole place was practically levelled; it was amazing, but that one old building was still there.

"I rang all the buzzers and someone opened the door, and I went in and up the stairs, just as my parents must have done hundreds of times. I touched the same banister, I turned the same corners. I knocked at the door, and when it opened I said some relatives of mine had once lived there and could I look around - I speak a little German, because of my aunt, though

my accent's old-fashioned - and the people let me in. They were a young couple with a baby,

they were very nice, but I couldn't stay long. I really couldn't stand it, the rooms, the light coming through the windows ... they were the same rooms, it was the same light. I think my parents became real to me for the first time. Everything, all of it became real. Before that, it was

just a bad story."

Zenia stops talking. This is what people often do when they come to the hard part, Roz has discovered. "A bad story," she prompts.

"Yes," says Zenia. "It was already the war. Things were in short supply. My aunt had never married, there was such a shortage of men after the first war a lot of women couldn't, so she thought of our family as her family too, and she used to do things for us. Mother us - that's how she put it. So on this one day, my aunt was going to my parents' apartment; she was taking

them some bread she'd baked. She went up the stairs as usual - there was a lift, one of those

lifts like an iron cage, I saw it - but it was out of order. As she was about to knock, the door on

the other side of the landing opened and the woman who lived there - my aunt knew her only by sight - this woman came out and grabbed her by the arm, and pulled her

431

inside. "Don't go in, don't try to go in there," she said. "They've been taken away"

"Taken, where?" said my aunt. She didn't ask who by, she didn't need to ask that.

"Don't try to find out," said the woman. "Better not: She had me in there with her because my mother had seen them coming, she'd looked out the window and she'd seen them

coming along the street, and then when they'd turned in at the doorway and started up the stairs she'd guessed where they were headed and she'd run out the back door, the maid's

door, and along the back balcony, with me wrapped up in a shawl - the balconies at the back adjoined one another - and she'd pounded at this woman's kitchen door, and the woman had taken me in. It happened so fast she hardly knew what she was doing, and most likely if she'd had time to think she never would have done anything so dangerous. She was just an ordinary woman, obedient and so on, but I suppose if someone shoves a baby at you, you can't just step back and let it fall to the ground.

"I was the only one saved, the others were all taken. I had an older brother, and an older sister too. I was much younger, I was a late baby. I have their picture; it's something my aunt brought with her. See - " Zenia opens her purse, then her wallet, and slides out a snapshot. It's a square picture with -a wide white border, the figures tiny and fading: a family group, father, mother, two young children, and another older woman, off to one side. The aunt, Roz assumes. Both of the children are 'blond.

What amazes Roz is how contemporary they look: the knee-high skirts on the women, from the late twenties? the early thirties? - the smart hats, the makeup, it could be the retro look, in some fashion magazine, right now. Only the clothes of the children are archaic; that, and their haircuts. A suit and tie and short back and sides for the boy, and a fussy dress and

432
ringlets for the girl. The smiles are a little tight, but smiles were, in those days. They are dress-up smiles. It must have been a special occasion: a vacation, a religious holiday, somebody's birthday.

"That was before the war," says Zenia. "It was before things got really bad. I was never part of that world. I was born right after the war started; I was a war baby. Anyway, that's all I have, this picture. It's all that's left of them. My aunt searched, after the war. There was nothing left:" She slides the photo carefully back into her wallet.

"What about the aunt?" says Roz. "Why didn't they take her, too?"

"She wasn't Jewish," says Zenia. "She was my father's sister. My father wasn't Jewish either, but after the Nuremberg laws were passed he was treated as one, because he was married to one. Hell, even my mother wasn't Jewish! Not by religion. She was Catholic, as a matter of fact. But two of her four grandparents were Jewish, so she was classified as a mischling, first degree. A mixture. Did you know they had degrees?"

"Yes," says Roz. So Zenia is a mixture, like herself?

"Some of those mischlings survived longer than the real Jews," says Zenia. "My parents, for instance. I guess they thought it wouldn't happen to them. They thought of themselves as good

Germans. They weren't in touch with the Jewish community, - so they didn't even hear the rumours; or if they did, they didn't believe them. It's astonishing what people will refuse to believe."

"How about your aunt?" says Roz. "Why did she get out? If she wasn't Jewish at all, wasn't she safe?" Though come to think of it, safe is a silly word to use in such a context.

"Because of me," says Zenia. "They would have figured out sooner or later that my parents had three children, not two. Or some neighbour of my aunt's would have seen or heard me, and turned us in. A baby, in the home of an unmarried woman

433
who just a little while before had no baby at all. People get a huge bang out of denunciation, you know. It makes them feel morally superior. God, how I hate that smug self-righteousness!

People patting themselves on the back for murder.

"So my aunt started looking for a way to get me out, and then she found herself in a whole other world - the underground world, the black market world. She'd always lived above

ground, but she had to go into that other world in order to protect me. There isn't a place on earth where that world doesn't exist; all you have to do is take a few steps off to the side, a few

steps down, and there it is, side by side with the world people like to think of as normal. Remember the fifties, remember trying to get an abortion? It only took three phone calls. Provided you could pay, of course. You'd get handed along the line, to somebody who knew someone. It was the same in Germany at that time, for things like passports, only you had to be careful who you asked.

"What my aunt needed was some fake papers saying I was her daughter, by a husband killed

in France, and she got some; but they wouldn't have stood up to much scrutiny. I mean, look at me! I'm hardly Aryan. My brother and my sister were both blond, and my father had light hair; my mother too. I must be some kind of throwback. So she knew she had to get me away,

she had to get me right out. If they caught her she'd be up for treachery, because she was helping me. Some treachery! Christ, I was only six months old!"

Roz doesn't know what to say. "Poor you," which is what she murmurs to the stories of workplace crises or personal mishap or romantic catastrophe, as told to her by her friends, hardly seems to cover it. "How awful," she says,

"Don't feel sorry for me," says Zenia. "I was hardly conscious. I didn't know what was going on, so it was no strain on me; though I must have registered that things had changed and

my mother wasn't there any more. Anyway my aunt got

434

in touch with your father, or I should say your father's friends. It was through the man who arranged the papers for her - that man knew someone who knew someone else, and after they'd checked her out and skimmed some money off her they passed her on. All black markets work that way. Try buying drugs, it's the same thing: they check you out, they pass you on. Luckily my aunt had some money, and her desperation must have been convincing. As I said, she'd never married, so I became her cause; she risked her life for me. It was for her

brother, too. She didn't know then he'd been killed, she thought he might come back. Then, if

he did and if she'd failed, what could she say?

"So your father and his friends got her out, through Denmark and then through Sweden.

They told her it was relatively easy. She didn't have an accent or anything, and she looked as

German as they come.

"My aunt was a kind of mother to me. She brought me up, she did her best, but she wasn't a happy woman. She'd been ruined, destroyed really, by the war. The loss of her brother and

his family, and then the guilt also - that she hadn't been able to stop any of it, that she had somehow participated. She talked about your father a lot - what a hero he was. It gave her back a little bit of faith. So I used to pretend that your father was my father, and that some day

he would come to get me, and I'd move into his house. I wasn't even sure where he lived."

Roz is practically in tears. She remembers her father, the old rascal; she's glad to know that his dubious talents were of service, because he's still her favourite parent and she

welcomes

the chance to think well of him. The two martinis aren't helping, in the get-a-grip department.

How lucky she herself has been, with her three children and her husband, her money, her work, her house. How unfair life is! Where was God when all of this

435

was happening, in sordid Europe - the injustice, the merciless brutality, the suffering? In a meeting, is where. Not answering the phone. Guilt wells up out of her eyes. She would like to

give Zenia something, just a little something, to make up to her for God's neglect, but what could possibly be adequate?

Then she hears a small voice, a small voice clear as ice-water, right at the back of her head.

It's the voice of experience. It's the voice of Tony. Zenia lies, it says.

"Do you remember Tony?" Roz blurts out, before she can stop herself. "Tony Fremont from McClung Hall?" How can she be such a jerk, such a shit, as to question Zenia's story, even in her head? No one would be about such a thing. It would be too mean, it would be too

cynical, it would be virtually sacrilegious!

"Oh yes," Zenia laughs. "That was a million years ago! Tony and her funny war collection! I see she's written a couple of books. She was always a bright little thing."

Bright little thing causes Roz to feel, by comparison, large and dim. But she trudges forward.

"Tony told me you were a White Russian," she says. "A child prostitute, in Paris. And Charis

says your mother was a gypsy, and was stoned to death by Roumanian peasants:"

"Charis?" says Zenia.

"She used to be Karen," says Roz. "You lived with her on the Island. You told her you had cancer," she adds, pressing relentlessly on.

Zenia looks out the window of the sun room, and sips at the edge of her martini. "Oh yes, Charis," she says. "I'm afraid I told some awful - I didn't always tell the truth, when I was younger. I think I was emotionally disturbed. After my aunt died I had some hard times. She had nothing, no money; we lived over storefronts. And when she was gone, nobody would help me. This was in Waterloo, in the fifties. It wasn't a good time or place for orphans who didn't fit in.

436

"So part of what I told Tony was true, I did work as a hooker. And I didn't want to be Jewish, I didn't want to be connected with all of that in any way. I guess I was running away from the past. That was then, this is now, right? I even got my nose done, after I'd gone to England and landed a magazine job and could afford it. I suppose I was ashamed. When those

things get done to you, you feel more ashamed than if you'd done them yourself to other people. You think maybe you deserved it; or else that you should have been stronger - able to

defend yourself, or something. You feel - well, beaten up.

"So I made up a different past for myself- it was better to be a White Russian. Denial, I guess you could call it. I lived with a White Russian; once, when I was sixteen, so I knew some-thing about them.

"With Karen - with Charis - I must have been having some kind of a nervous breakdown. I needed to be mothered; my shrink says it was because my own mother was taken away. I shouldn't have said I had cancer, because I didn't. But I was sick, in another kind of way. Karen did wonders for me.

"It wasn't a good thing - it was terrible, I suppose, to tell those stories. I owe both of them an apology. But I didn't think I could've told them the real story, what really happened to me. They wouldn't have understood it."

She gives Roz a long look, straight out of her deep indigo eyes, and Roz is touched. She, Roz - she alone - has been chosen, to understand. And she does, she does.

"After I left Canada," Zenia says, "things got worse. I had big ideas, but nobody seemed to

share them. Looking the way I do doesn't help, you know. Men don't see you as a person, they just see the body, and so that's all you see yourself. You think of your body as a tool, something to use. God, I'm tired of men! They're so easy to amuse. All you have to do to get their attention is take off your clothes. After a while you want a bit more of a challenge, you know?

437

"I worked as a stripper for a year or so - that's when I had my breasts done, this man I was living with paid for it - and I got into some bad habits. Coke first, and then heroin. It's a wonder I'm not dead. Maybe I was trying to be, because of my family. You'd think that because

I didn't really know them it wouldn't hurt. But it's like being born minus a leg. There's this terrible absence.

"It took me a long time, but I've finally come to terms with myself. I've worked it through. I was in therapy for years. It was hard, but now I know who I am."

Roz is impressed. Zenia has not evaded, she hasn't wriggled or squirmed. She has owned up,

she has admitted, she's confessed. That shows - what? Honesty? Good will? Maturity?

Some

admirable quality. The nuns used to put a high value on confessing, so much so that Roz once

confessed to placing a dog turd in the cloakroom, something she had not actually done.

They

didn't let you off punishment for confessing, though - she got the strap, all the same, and when

you confessed to the priest you had to do penance - but they thought more highly of you, or so

they said.

Also Zenia has been out in the world. The wide world, wider than Toronto; the deep world, deeper than the small pond where Roz is such a large and sheltered frog. Zenia makes Roz feel

not only protected, but lax. Her own battles have been so minor.

"You've done really well," Roz says. "I mean - what a story! It's great material!" She's thinking of the magazine, because this is the kind of story they like to run: inspirational, a success story. A story about overcoming fears and obstacles, about facing up to yourself and

becoming a whole person. It's like the story they did two months ago, about the woman who fought bulimia to a standstill. Roz finds stories about the one lost sheep who caused more joy

in Heaven hard to resist.

438

There's a story in the aunt, as well: Wise Woman World appreciates real-life heroines, ordinary

women who have been more than ordinarily courageous.

To her amazement, and also to her horror, Zenia begins to cry. Big tears roll from her eyes, which remain open and fixed on Roz. "Yeah," she says. "I guess that's all it amounts to. It's just a story, it's just material. Something to use."

Roz, for gosh sake, get your big fat foot out of your mouth, thinks Roz. Miss Tact of 1983.

"Oh honey, I didn't mean it that way," she says.

"No," says Zenia. "I know. Nobody does. It's just, I'm so strung out. I've been on the edge, I've been out there so long; I've had to do it alone. I can't work it out with men, they all want the same thing from me, I just can't make those kinds of compromises any more. I mean, you've got all this, you've got a home, a husband, you've got your kids. You're a family,

you've

got solid ground under your feet. I've never had any of that, I've never fitted in. I've lived out of a suitcase, all my life; even now it's hand-to-mouth, that's what freelancing means, and I'm running out of energy, you know? There's just no base, there's no permanence!"

How badly Roz has misjudged Zenia! Now she sees her in a new light. It's a tempestuous light, a bleak light, a lonely, rainy light; in the midst of it Zenia struggles on, buffeted by men, blown by the winds of fate. She's not what she appears, a beautiful and successful career woman. She's a waif, a homeless wandering waif, she's faltering by the wayside, she's falling.

Roz opens her heart, and spreads her wings, her cardboard angel's wings, her invisible dove's

wings, her warm sheltering wings, and takes her in.

"Don't you worry" she says, in her most reassuring voice. "We'll work something out."

XLVIII

Mitch passes Zenia in the front hall as she is leaving and he is coming in. She gives him only

the briefest and chilliest of nods. "Your old friend is certainly hostile," he says to Roz.

"I don't think so," says Roz. "I think she's just tired:"

She doesn't want to share Zenia's dismaying life story with him. It's a story told just to her, for her, for her ears alone, by one outsider to another. Only Roz can understand it. Not Mitch,

because what would he know about being outside?

"Tired?" says Mitch. "She didn't look too tired:" "Tired of men coming on to her," says Roz.

"Don't believe it," says Mitch. "Any-way, I wasn't coming on to her. But I bet she'd like it if I did. She's an adventuress, she has the look:"

"Poetess, songstress, adventuress," says Roz lightly. Mitch is such an authority, he can tell what a woman thinks by the shape of her bottom. "Why not just call her an adventurer?" Roz is teasing, she knows the feminist terminology stuff drives him nuts. But also she thinks of herself as an adventurer, at least in some areas of life. The financial ones. Gentleman adventurer

was once a term.

"It's not the same," says Mitch. "Adventurers live by their wits."

"And adventuresses?" says Roz. "By their tits," says Mitch. "Point," says Roz, laughing. He set her up for it.

But he's wrong, thinks Roz, remembering. It was wits for Zenia also.

That was the beginning of the end of her marriage, although she didn't realize it at the time. Or

maybe it was the end of the

end. Who knows? The end must have been a long time coming. These things are not sudden.

Roz wouldn't have known it from Mitch, though. He made love to her that night with an urgency he hadn't shown for a long time. No voluptuous ease, no lordly walrus-like wallowing:

it was snatch and grab. There was nothing he wanted her to give; instead he wanted to take.

Roz finds herself being bitten, and is pleased rather than otherwise. She didn't know she was

still that irresistible.

A week later she arranges an early dinner, at Scaramouche, for herself and Zenia and the current WiseWomanWorld editor, whose name is BethAnne, and they ingest radicchio salads

and exotic parboiled vegetables and clever pastas, and go over Zenia's resume and her file

of magazine stories. First there are the ones written when she was on staff for a cutting-edge fashion magazine, in England. But she quit that job because she felt too tied down, and also she'd wanted to write about more political things. Libya, Mozambique, Beirut, the Palestinian camps; Berlin, Northern Ireland, Colombia, Bangladesh, El Salvador - Zenia has been to most of the hot spots Roz can remember, and a few she can't. Zenia regales them with incidents, of stones and bullets that have whizzed past her head, of cameras that have been broken by policemen, of narrow escapes in jeeps. She names hotels.

A lot of the stories are under other names, men's names, because, as Zenia says, the material in them is controversial, inflammatory even, and she didn't want to open the door in the middle of the night and find some enraged Arab or Irish hit man or Israeli or drug lord standing on the other side of it. "I wouldn't want this to get around," she says, "but that's the main reason I came back to Canada. It's kind of a safe haven for me - you know? Things were getting just a little too interesting for me, over there. Canada is such a - such a gentle place."

441
Roz and BethAnne exchange a look across the table. Both are deeply thrilled. A political reporter from the trouble zones of the world, right in their midst; and a female political reporter, at that! Of course they must shelter her. What are safe havens for? It doesn't escape Roz that the opposite of interesting is not gentle, but boring. However, boring has something to offer, these days. Maybe they should export a little boring. It's better than getting your head shot off.

"We'd love it if you'd do a story for us," says BethAnne. "To tell you the truth," says Zenia; "I'm sort of emptied out for now, story-wise. But I have a better idea:" Her better idea is that she should help them out in the advertising department. "I've been through the magazine, and I've noticed you don't have many ads," she says. "You must be losing money, a lot of money."

"Absolutely," says Roz, who knows exactly how much because the money they're losing is hers.

"I think I could double your ads, in, say, two months," says Zenia. "I've had experience:" She makes good her word. Roz isn't sure quite how it happened, but Zenia is soon sitting in on

editorial meetings, and when BethAnne leaves to have another baby, creating a power vacuum, Zenia is offered the job, because who else - be honest - is as qualified? It may even be that Roz

set it up for her. Most likely; it was the kind of sucky shoot-yourself-in-the-foot thing she must have been doing around then. Part of her save-poor-Zenia project. She'd rather not remember the details.

Zenia has her photograph taken, a glamour shot in a V-necked outfit; it appears on the editorial page. Women figure out how old she is and wonder how she manages to stay looking

so good. Circulation goes up.

Zenia goes to parties now, a lot of parties. Why not? She has

442

schlep, she has clout, she has - the men on the board are fond of saying - balls. Sharp as a tack,
smart as a whip, and a great figure too, they can never resist adding, causing Roz to go home

and frown at her dimpling grapefruit-peel leg skin in the mirror, and then to reproach herself for making odious comparisons.

Some of the parties Zenia goes to are given by Roz. Roz supervises the passing of the filo-bundle and stuffed-mushroom nibbles, and greets her friends with hugs and airy kisses, and watches Zenia work the room. She works it seriously, thoroughly; she seems to know by instinct just how much time any one person is worth. She spends some of her precious moments on Roz, though. She gets her off to one side and murmurs to her, and Roz murmurs

back. Anyone watching them would think they were conspirators.

"You're really good at this," Roz tells Zenia. "Me, I always end up stuck for hours with some hard-luck story, but you never get cornered:"

-

Zenia smiles back at her. "All foxes dig back doors. I like to know where the exit sign is:"
And Roz remembers the story of Zenia's narrow escape from death, and feels sorry for her. Zenia always arrives alone. She leaves alone. It's sad.

Mitch works the room too. Surprisingly, he doesn't work the part of it with Zenia in it.

Ordinarily he'd flirt with everyone; he'd flirt with a saluki if there was nothing else on offer. He likes to see his own charm reflected back at him from the eyes of every woman in the room; he

goes from one to another as if they're bushes and he's a dog. But he stays away from Zenia,

and, when she's watching, pays extra attention to Roz. He keeps a hand on her whenever possible. Steadying himself, Roz thinks later.

Roz grows increasingly uneasy. There's something not quite right about the turn things have taken, but what could it be? She set out to help Zenia, and it appears she has helped her, and

443

Zenia is certainly grateful, and she's performing well; they have lunch once a week just to go over things, and so Zenia can ask Roz's advice, because Roz has been around the magazine so

much longer than Zenia has. Roz dismisses her own reaction as simple envy. Ordinarily if there

was something bothering her, something she couldn't quite put her finger on, she'd discuss it

with Tony or Charis. But she can't do that, because she's friends with Zenia now, and they might not understand that part of it. They might not understand how Roz could be friends with someone who is - face it - an enemy of theirs. They might see it as betrayal.

"I've been giving it some thought," Zenia says at the next board of directors meeting. "We're still losing money, despite the new ads. We can't seem to hook the big spenders - the perfume

companies, the cosmetics, high fashion. To be honest, I think we need to change the name. The concept we're working with is too seventies. This is the eighties - we're way beyond a lot

of those old positions:"

"Change the name?" asks Roz, with fond memories of the early collective. What happened to those women? Where did they go? Why has she lost touch with them? Where did all these

business suits come from?

"Yes," says Zenia. "I've had a small survey done. We'd do better with Woman World, or, even better, just plain Woman." It's obvious to Roz what's being dropped. The wisdom part, for

one thing. Also the world. But how can she object to Woman without implying that there's something wrong with being one?

So Zenia changes the name, and soon the magazine changes too. It changes so much that Roz hardly recognizes it. Gone are the mature achievers, the stories about struggling to overcome sexism and stacked odds. Gone too are the heavy-hitting health care stories.

Now

there are five-page spreads on spring fashions,

444

and new diets and hair treatments and wrinkle creams, and quizzes about the man in your life

and whether or not you're handling your relationships well. Are these things unimportant?

Roz

would be the last to say so, but surely there's something missing.

She no longer has lunch with Zenia once a week; Zenia is now too busy. She's a busy bee, she has a lot of iron maidens in the fire. So, at the next board meeting, Roz pushes her about

the shift in content. "This wasn't the original idea," she says.

Zenia smiles gently at her. "Most women don't want to read about other women who achieve," she says. "It makes them feel unsuccessful."

Roz finds herself getting angry - surely this is a dig at her - but she controls herself. "What do they want to read about, then?"

"I'm not talking intellectuals," says Zenia. "I'm talking about the average woman. The average magazine-buying woman. According to our demographics, they want to read about how to look. Oh, and sex, of course. Sex with the right accessories:"

"What are the right accessories?" asks Roz pleasantly. She thinks she'll choke.

"Men," says Zenia. The men on the board of directors laugh, Mitch included. So much for Roz. She has a flash of Zenia, wearing black fringed gloves with gauntlets, blowing the smoke

off her six-shooter, sliding it back into her holster.

Roz is the majority shareholder. She could pull strings, she could stack the deck, she could force Zenia out. But she can't do that without looking like a vindictive shrew.

And let's face it, they're making money, finally, and money talks.

One day Mitch is gone. He is just gone, in a snap of the fingers, in a wink. No prelude, no hints, no letters left lying around, none of the usual. But looking back, Roz realizes he must have been gone for some time.

445

Where has he gone? He's gone to live with Zenia. A whole courtship, a whole romance, has taken place right under Roz's very nose and she hasn't noticed a thing. It must have been going

on for months.

But no, that isn't it. Mitch tells her - he seems to want to tell her - that it was all very sudden.

Unexpected to him. Zenia came to his office one evening, after work, to consult him about some

financials, and then ...

"I don't want to hear about it," says Roz, who is familiar with the pleasures of narration. She doesn't intend to give him the satisfaction.

"I just want you to understand," says Mitch.

"Why?" says Roz. "Why is that important? Who gives a shit whether I understand or not?"

"I do," says Mitch. "Because I still love you. I love both of you. This is really difficult for me."

"Get stuffed," says Roz.

Mitch came to the house when Roz wasn't there. He came furtively because he couldn't face her.

He came and went, soft as a thief, and he removed things: his suits from the mirror-door bedroom closet, his boat clothes, his best bottles of wine, his pictures. Roz would come back

after work to find these blanks, these piercing eloquent spaces, where something of Mitch's used ' to be. But he left some things behind: an overcoat, his anorak, some books, his old boots, boxes

of this and that in the storage room down in the cellar. What was it supposed to mean? That he was of two minds? That he still had one foot in the door? Roz almost wished he would take everything away at once, make a clean sweep. On the other hand, where there were boots there

was hope. But hope was the worst. As long as she had hope, how was she supposed to get on with her life? Which was what women in her situation were constantly urged to do.

Mitch didn't take anything that wasn't his. He didn't take

446

anything Roz had bought for the house, bought for them to share. Roz was surprised to discover how little he had actually been involved in all that shopping, how few choices he'd helped her make; or, look at it another way, how little he'd contributed. Well, how could he have helped her? She'd always forestalled him; she'd seen a need or a desire and supplied it

instantly, with a wave of her magic chequebook. Maybe it had grated on him after a while, her

munificence, her largesse, her heaps of pearls, her outpourings. Ask and it shall be given. Heck,

Mitch didn't even ask! All he had to do was lie on the lawn with his mouth open while Roz climbed the tree and shook down the golden apples.

Maybe that was Zenia's trick. Maybe she presented herself as vacancy, as starvation, as an empty beggar's bowl. Maybe the posture she'd assumed was on her knees, hands upstretched

for alms. Maybe Mitch wanted the opportunity to do a little coinscattering, an opportunity never provided by Roz. He was tired of being given to, of being forgiven, of being rescued; maybe he wanted to do a little giving and rescuing of his own. Even better than a beautiful woman on her knees would be a grateful beautiful woman on her knees. But hadn't Roz been

grateful enough? Apparently not.

Roz stoops low. She gives in to her gnawing hunger for dirt and hires a private detective, a woman named Harriet; Harriet the Hungarian, someone she learned about, way back, through

Uncle Joe, who had some Hungarian connections. "I just want to know what they're up to," she tells Harriet.

"What sort of thing?" asks Harriet.

"Where they're living, what they do," says Roz. "Whether she's real:"

"Real?" says Harriet.

"Where she came from," says Roz.

447

Harriet finds out sufficient. Sufficient to make Roz even more miserable than she is. Zenia and Mitch live in a penthouse apartment overlooking the harbour, near where Mitch moors his

boat. That way they can go for quick little sails on it, Roz supposes, though she can't see Zenia

putting up with too much of that. Getting wet, chipping her polish. Not as much as Roz put up with. What else do they do? They eat out, they eat in. Zenia goes shopping. What's to see?

The question of whether Zenia is real or not is more difficult to solve. She doesn't seem to have been born, at least not under that name; but how can anyone say, since so much of Berlin

went up in smoke? Inquiries in Waterloo produce nothing. She didn't go to school there, or not under her present name. Is she even Jewish? It's anybody's guess, says Harriet.

"- But what about the picture?" says Roz. "Her family?" "Oh, Roz," says Harriet. "Pictures are a dime a dozen. Whose word have you got for it that those people were her family?"

"She knew about my father," says Roz. She's reluctant to let go. "So did I," said Harriet.

"Come on, Roz, there are hints about all that in every magazine interview you've ever given. What did she tell you about him that any twelve-year-old with an active imagination wouldn't have been able to make up?" "You're right," sighs Roz, "but there was so much detail."

"She's

very good," Harriet agrees.

London proves more fruitful: Zenia did indeed work for a magazine there; she appears to have written some of the articles she's claimed as hers, though by no means all of them.

The

ones on clothing, yes; the ones on political hot spots, no. The ones with men's names actually

seem to have been written by the men in question, although three out of the five are dead.

She

made a brief traverse through the gossip columns when her name was linked with that of a cabinet minister; the phrase "good friend" was used, and marriage was subsequently hinted 448

at but did not take place. Then there was a scandal when it came to light that Zenia had been

seeing a Soviet cultural attache at the same time. "Seeing" was a euphemism. There was a lot of

political name-calling, and the usual English tabloid fox-hunting and muckraking. After that incident Zenia had dropped out of sight.

"Did she really travel to all those countries?" says Roz. "How much money do you want to spend?" asks Harriet.

Knowing about the flimsiness of Zenia's fa-ade is no help to Roz at all. She's stalemated. If she tells Mitch about the lies it will just come across as jealousy.

It is jealousy. Roz is so jealous she can't think straight. Some nights she cries with rage, others with sorrow. She walks around in a red fog of anger, in a grey mist of self-pity, and she

hates herself for both. She calls on her stubbornness, her will to fight, but who exactly is her enemy? She can't fight Mitch, because she wants him back. Maybe if she holds her fire long enough, this will all blow over. Mitch will fizzle out like a barbecue in the rain, he'll come back home as he has before, wanting her to disentangle him from Zenia, wanting to be saved.

And

Roz will do it, though this time it won't be so easy. He's violated something, some unwritten contract, some form of trust. He's never moved out before. The other women were a game to

him but Zenia is serious business.

There's another way it could play: Zenia would divest herself of Mitch. She would throw him out the window, as he has thrown many. Mitch would get his comeuppance. Roz would get revenge.

In public Roz maintains her grin, her tooth-filled grin. The muscles of her jaws ache with it. She wishes to preserve her dignity, put up a bold front. But that's not so easy, with her chest ripped open like this and her heart exposed for all to surely see; her heart, which is on fire and dripping blood.

449

She can't expect much pity from her friends, the ones who used to tell her to dump Mitch. She sees now what they'd meant: Dump him before he dumps you!

But she didn't listen. Instead she'd kept on playing the knifethrower's assistant, in her sparkly costume, with her arms and legs splayed out, standing still and smiling while the knives

thudded into the wall, tracing the outline of her body. Flinch and you're dead. It was inevitable

that one day, by accident or on purpose, she'd get hit.

Tony phones her. So does Charis. She hears the concern in their voices: they know something, they've heard. But she puts them off; she holds them at arm's length. One touch of

their compassion now would do her in.

Three months go by. Roz straightens her back and tightens her lips and clenches her jaws so

hard she's sure her teeth are being ground to stumps, and tints her hair maroon, and buys a new outfit, an Italian leather suit in an opulent shade of vermilion. She has several unsatisfactory flings with men. She rolls about with them, fitfully, self-consciously, as if her bedroom's wired for sound: she knows she's acting. She hopes the news of her reckless unfaithfulness will get back to Mitch and make him writhe, but any writhing he does is in the privacy of his own home, if the viper's nest he's living in can be called that. Worst case: maybe he's not writhing. Maybe he's delighted at the possibility that some hapless fall guy might take her off his hands.

Harriet phones: she thinks Roz might like to know that Zenia is seeing another man, in the afternoons, while Mitch is out. "What sort of other man?" says Roz. Adrenalin rushes through her brain.

"Let's just say he wears a black leather jacket and drives a Harley, and has two arrests but no convictions. Lack of witnesses willing to come forward:"

"-Arrests for what?" says Roz.

450

"Dealing coke," says Harriet.

Roz asks for a written report, and pops it into an envelope, and addresses it anonymously to Mitch, and waits for the other shoe to drop; and it does drop, because one Monday just before lunchtime Harriet calls her at the office.

"She's taken a plane," says Harriet. "Three big suitcases." "Where to?" says Roz. Her whole

body is tingling. "Was Mitch with her?"

"No," says Harriet. "To London."

"Maybe he'll join her there later," says Roz. Well, well, she thinks. Bye bye black sheep. Three bags full.

"I don't think so," says Harriet. "She didn't have that look." "What look did she have?" says Roz. -

"The dark glasses look," says Harriet. "The scarf-around-the-neck look. I'd lay money on a black eye, and two to one he tried to throttle her. Or somebody did. I'd say from all appearances she's on the run:"

"He'll go after her," says Roz, who doesn't want to get her hopes up. "He's obsessed." But that evening, when she walks into her house, into her living room with its deep pink-and-mauve carpets and its subtle off-green accents, neo-forties revival with postmod

undertones, there is Mitch, sitting in his favoured armchair as if he's never been away. Sitting in his favoured armchair, at least. But as for away, yes, that's where he's been. Far away. Some cinder of a planet in a distant galaxy. He looks as if he's been drifting around in

deep space, where it's cold and empty and there are things with tentacles, and has just barely

made it back to Earth. A stunned look, a conked-on-the-head look. Mugged, pushed face first

against a brick wall, crammed into a trunk, tossed half-naked onto the stony roadside, and he

didn't even see who did it.

Glee leaps up in Roz, but she stifles it. "Mitch," she says, in her best hen voice. "Honey, what's wrong?"

451

"She's gone," says Mitch.

"Who is?" says Roz, because although she won't demand a pound of flesh, not at this juncture, she does want a little blood, just a drop or two, because she's thirsty.

"You know who," says Mitch in a choking voice. Is this sorrow or fury? Roz can't tell.

"I'll get you a drink," she says. She pours one for each of them, then sits down opposite Mitch in the matching armchair, their usual position for conversations like this. Have-it-out conversations. He will explain, she will be hurt; he will pretend to repent, she will pretend to believe him. They face each other, two card sharps, two poker players.

Roz opens. "Where did she go?" she says, although she knows the answer; but she wants to

know if he knows. If he doesn't know it won't be her that tells him. He can hire his own detective.

"She took her clothes," says Mitch, in a sort of groan. He puts one hand to his head, as if he has a headache. So, he doesn't know.

What is Roz expected to do? Sympathize with her husband because the woman he loves, loves instead of her, has flown the coop? Console him? Kiss him better? Yes, that's what, all

right. She hovers on the edge of doing it - Mitch looks so battered - but she hangs back. Let him wait.

Mitch looks across at her. She bites her tongue. Finally he says, "There's something else." Zenia, it appears, has forged some cheques, on the Woman operating account. She's made

off with the entire allowable overdraft. How much? Fifty thousand dollars, give or take; but in cheques under a thousand dollars each. She cashed them through different banks. She knows

the system.

Roz calculates: she can afford it, and the disappearance of Zenia is cheap at the price.

"Whose name did she use?" she asks. She knows who the signing officers are. For small 452

cheques like that, it's Zenia herself and any one of three board members.

"Mine," says Mitch.

What could be crystal clearer? Zenia is a cold and treacherous bitch. She never loved Mitch. All

she wanted was the pleasure of winning, of taking him away, from Roz. Also the money. This is

obvious to Roz, but not, apparently, to Mitch. "She's in some kind of trouble:" he says. "I ought

to find her." He must be thinking about the coke dealer.

Roz loses it. "Oh, spare me," she says.

"I'm not asking you to do anything," Mitch says, as if Roz would be too mean-spirited to lend a helping hand. "I know where that envelope came from."

"You're not actually going after her," says Roz. "I mean, haven't you got the message? She's wiped her spikes on you. She's made a fool of you. She's lied and cheated and stolen, and she's

written you off. Believe me, there's no place in her life for a used dupe."

Mitch shoots her a glance of intense dislike. This is far too much truth for him. He's not used to getting dumped, to being betrayed, because it's never happened to him before. Maybe, thinks

Roz, I should give lessons.

"You don't understand," he says. But Roz does understand. What she understands is that no matter what went on before this, there was never anyone more important to Mitch than she was,

and now there is.

Harriet calls: Mitch has taken the Wednesday-night plane to London. Roz's heart hardens. It ceases to burn and drip. The rent in her chest closes over it. She can feel an invisible hand there,

tight as a bandage, holding her body shut. That's it, she thinks. That finally tears it. She buys five

murder novels and takes a week off, and goes to Florida, and lies in the sun crying.

453

XLVIII

Mitch comes back. He comes back from the hunt. He comes back in the middle of February,

having phoned first; having booked himself a time slot, like any client or petitioner. He turns up on Roz's doorstep in his sheepskin coat, looking like an empty sack. In his hand he holds a

plaintive bouquet of flowers.

For that, Roz would like to kick him - does he think she's such a cheap date? - but she's shocked by his appearance. He's rumpled like a park-bench drunk, his skin is grey from travel,

dark hollows ring his eyes. He's lost weight, his flesh is loose, his face is starting to cave in, like

some old guy without his false teeth, like the kids' Hallowe'en pumpkins a few days after the holiday is over and the candles inside have burned out. That softening, that subsiding inwards

towards a damp central emptiness.

Roz feels she should stand in the doorway, a barrier between the cold outside air he brings with him and her own warm house, blocking him, keeping him out. The children need to be protected from this leftover, this sagging echo, this shadowy copy of their real father, with his

sinkhole eyes and his smile like crumpled paper. But she owes him a hearing, at least:

Wordlessly she takes the flowers - roses, red, a mockery, because she does not delude herself,

passion is not what he feels. Not, at least, for her. She lets him in.

"I want to come back," he tells her, gazing around the high, wide living room, the spacious domain that Roz has made, that was once his to share. Not Will you let me come back? Not I want

you back. Nothing to do with Roz, no mention of her at all. It's the room he's claiming, the territory. He is deeply mistaken. He thinks he has rights.

"You didn't find her, did you?" says Roz. She hands him

454

the drink she's poured for him, as in days of yore: a single malt scotch, no ice. That's what

he

used to like, long long ago; that's what she's been drinking these days, and more of it than she

should. The gesture of handing the glass to him softens her, because it's their old habit. Nostalgia for him seizes her by the throat. She fights against choking. He has a new tie on, an

unfamiliar one, with grisly pastel tulips. The fingerprints of Zenia are all over it, like unseen scorch marks.

"No," says Mitch. He won't look at her.

"And if you had," says Roz, hardening herself again, lighting her own cigarette - she won't ask him to do it, they are way beyond such whimsical courtship gestures, not that he's leaping

forward with arm outstretched - "what would you have done? Beat the shit out of her, or sicked the lawyers onto her, or given her a big sloppy kiss?"

Mitch looks in her direction. He can't meet her eyes. It's as if she's semi-invisible, a kind of hovering blur. "I don't know," he says.

"Well, at least that's honest," says Roz. "I'm glad you aren't lying to me." She's trying to keep her voice soft, to avoid the bitter cutting edge. He isn't lying to her, he isn't doing anything to her. There is no her, as far as he's concerned; she might as well not be here.

Whatever he's doing is to himself She has never felt so non-existent in her life. "So, what do you want?" She may as well ask, she may as well find out what's being demanded of her.

But he shakes his head: he doesn't know that, either. He isn't even drinking from the glass she's poured. It's as if he can't take anything from her. Which means there's nothing she can give him. "Maybe when you figure it out," she says, "you could let me in on it:"

Now he does finally look at her. God knows who he sees. Some avenging angel, some giantess with a bared arm and a

455

sword - it can't be Roz, tender and feathery Roz, not the way he's staring at her. His eyes are

frightening because they're frightened. He's scared shitless, of her or of someone or something,

and she can't bear the sight. Whatever else has been going on, all those years he played In and

Out the Bimbos and she raged at him and wept, she's always depended on him not to lose his

nerve. But now there's a crack in him, like a crack in glass; a little beat and he'll shatter. But why should it be Roz's job to sweep up?

"Just let me stay here," he says. "Let me stay in the house. I could sleep downstairs, in the family room. I won't bother you!"

He's begging, but Roz hears this only in retrospect. At the moment she finds the idea intolerable: Mitch on the floor, in a sleeping bag, like the twins' friends at group sleepovers, demoted to transience, demoted to adolescence. Locked out of her bedroom, or worse, not wishing to go into it. That's it - he's rejecting her, he's rejecting her big, eager, clumsy, ardent,

and solid body; it's no longer good enough for him, not even as a feather bed, not even as a fallback. He must find her repellent.

But she does have some pride left, though God knows how she's managed to hang onto it, and if she's going to let him come back it has to be on full terms. "You can't treat me like a rest

stop," she says. "Not any more."

Because that's exactly what he'd do, he'd move in, she'd dish out the nourishing lunches, feed him, build him up again, and he'd get his strength back and be off, off in his longboat, off

in his galleon, scouring the seven seas for the Holy Grail, for Helen of Troy, for Zenia,
peering
through the spyglass, on the watch for her pirate flag. Roz can see it in his eyes, which are
focused on the horizon, not on her. Even if he came back, into her bedroom, in between her
raspberrycoloured sheets, into her body, it wouldn't be her underneath him, on top of him,
around him, not ever again. Zenia has

456

stolen something from him, the one thing he always kept safe before, from all women, even
from Roz. Call it his soul. She slipped it out of his breast pocket when he wasn't looking,
easy

as rolling a drunk, and looked at it, and bit it to see if it was genuine, and sneered at it for
being so small after all, and then tossed it away, because she's the kind of woman who
wants

what she doesn't have and gets what she wants and then despises what she gets.

What is her secret? How does she do it? Where does it come from, her undeniable power
over men? How does she latch hold of them, break their stride, trip them up, and then so
easily turn them inside out? It must be something very simple and obvious. She tells them
they're unique, then reveals to them that they're not. She opens her cloak with the secret
pockets and shows them how the magic trick is worked, and that it is after all nothing more
than a trick. Only by that time they refuse to see; they think the Water of Youth is real, even
though she empties the bottle and fills it again from the tap, right before their very eyes.

They

want to believe.

"It won't work," Roz tells Mitch. She isn't being vindictive. It's the simple truth.

He must know it, because he doesn't plead. He subsides into his crumpled clothing; his
neck gets shorter, as though there's a steady but inexorable weight pushing slowly down on
the top of his head. "I guess not," he says.

"Didn't you keep the apartment?" says Roz. "Isn't that where you're living?"

"I couldn't stay there," says Mitch. His voice is reproachful. as if it's crass of her, cruel of
her even to suggest such a thing. Doesn't she realize how much it would hurt him to be in a
place he once shared with the fled beloved, a place where he would be reminded of the dear

departed at every turn, a place where he was so happy?

457

Roz knows. She herself lives in such a place. But he obviously hasn't thought of that. Those
in pain have no time for the pain they cause.

Roz sees him out, into the front hall, into the overcoat, which almost does her in because
it's her overcoat too, she helped him buy it, she shared the life he led in it, that goodtaste
leather, that sheepskin, one-time container of such a rascally wolf. No longer, no more; he's
toothless now. Poor lamb, thinks Roz, and clenches her fists tight because she won't let
herself

be fooled like that again.

He takes himself off, off into the freezing February dusk, off into the unknown. Roz
watches him walk towards his parked car, lurching a little although he didn't touch his drink.
The sidewalks are icy. Or maybe he's on something, some kind of pill, a tranquillizer. Most
likely he shouldn't be driving, though it's no longer any of her business to stop him. She tells
herself it's not necessary to have qualms about him. He can stay at a hotel. It's not as if he
doesn't have any money.

She leaves his red roses on the sideboard, still wrapped in their floral paper. Let them wilt.
Dolores can find them tomorrow, and reproach Roz in her heart for carelessness, rich
people

don't know what things cost, and throw them out. She pours herself another scotch and
lights

another cigarette, then gets down her old photo albums, those pictures she took so endlessly at backyard birthday parties, at graduations, on vacations, winters in the snow, summers on the boat, to prove to herself they were all indeed a family, and sits in the kitchen going through them. Pictures of Mitch, in non-living colour: Mitch and Roz at their wedding, Mitch and Roz and Larry, Mitch and Roz and Larry and the twins. She searches his face for some clue, some foreshadowing of the catastrophe that has befallen them. She finds none. Some women in her place take their nail scissors and snip out the heads of the men in question, leaving only their bodies.

458

Some snip out the bodies too. But Roz will not do this, because of the children. She doesn't want them to come across a picture of their headless father, she doesn't want to alarm them,

any more than she already has. And it wouldn't work anyway, because Mitch would still be there in the pictures, an outline, a blank shape, taking up the same amount of room, just as he

does beside her in her bed. She never sleeps in the middle of that bed, she still sleeps off to

one side. She can't bring herself to occupy the whole space.

On the refrigerator, attached to it by magnets in the form of smiling pigs and cats, are the Valentines the twins made for her at school. The twins are clinging these days, they want her

around. They don't like her going out at night. They didn't wait for Valentine's Day, they brought their Valentines home and gave them to her right away, as if there was some urgency.

These are the only Valentines she will get. Probably they are the only ones she will get ever again. They should be enough for her. What does she want with glowing hearts, with incandes-

cent lips and rapid breathing, at her age?

Snap out of it, Roz, she tells herself, You are not old. Your life is not over.

It only feels like that.

Mitch is in the city. He's around. He comes to see the children and Roz arranges to be out, her skin prickling the whole time with awareness of him. When, she walks into the house after he's gone she can smell him - his aftershave, the English heather stuff, could it be he's sprinkled some of it around just to get to her? She glimpses him in restaurants, or at the yacht

club. She stops going to those places. She picks up the phone and he's on the other line with

one of the kids. The whole world is boobytrapped. She is the booby.

Their lawyers talk. A separation agreement is suggested, though Mitch stalls; he doesn't want Roz - or else he would be

459

here, wouldn't he, on the doorstep again, wouldn't he at least be asking? - but he doesn't want

to be separated from her either. Or maybe he's just bargaining, maybe he's just trying to get the

price up. Roz grits her teeth and holds the line. This is going to cost her but it will be worth it to cut the string, the tie; the chain, whatever this heavy thing is that's holding her down. You need to know when to fold. At any rate she's functioning. More or less. Though she's done better.

She goes off to see a shrink, to see if she can improve herself, 'make herself over into a

new

woman, one who no longer gives a shit. She would like that. The shrink is a nice person; Roz

likes her. Together the two of them labour over Roz's life as if it's a jigsaw puzzle, a mystery story with a solution at the end. They arrange and rearrange the pieces, trying to get them to come out better. They are hopeful: if Roz can figure out what story she's in, then they will be able to spot the erroneous turns she took, they can retrace her steps, they can change the ending. They work out a tentative plot. Maybe Roz married Mitch because, although she thought at the time that Mitch was very different from her father, she sensed he was the same

underneath. He would cheat on her the way her father had cheated on her mother, and she would keep forgiving him and taking him back just the way her mother had. She would rescue

him, over and over. She would play the saint and he the sinner. Except that her parents ended

up together and Roz and Mitch did not, so what went wrong? Zenia went wrong. Zenia switched the plot on Roz, from rescue to running away, and then when Mitch wanted to be rescued again Roz was no longer up to it. Whose fault was that? Who was to blame? Ah.

Didn't

Roz think that too much was spent apportioning blame? Did she blame, perhaps, herself? In a

word, yes. Maybe she still can't quite leave God out of it, and the notion that she's being punished.

460

Maybe it was nobody's fault, the shrink suggests. Maybe these things just happen, like plane

crashes.

If Roz wants Mitch back that badly - and it appears that she does, now that she has a greater insight into the dynamics of their relationship - maybe she should ask him to come for

counselling. Maybe she should forgive him, at least to that extent.

All this is very reasonable. Roz thinks of making the phone call. She is almost nerved up to it, she is almost there. Then, in drizzly March, Zenia dies. Is killed in Lebanon, blown up by a bomb; comes back in a tin can, and is buried. Roz does not cry. Instead she rejoices fiercely - if

there was a bonfire she'd dance around it, shaking a tambourine if one was provided. But after

that she's afraid, because Zenia is nothing if not vengeful. Being dead won't alter that. She'll think of something.

Mitch isn't at the funeral. Roz cranes her neck, scanning for him, but there's only a bunch of men she doesn't know. And Tony and Charis, of course.

She wonders whether Mitch has heard, and if he has, how he's taking it. She ought to feel that Zenia has been cleared out of the way, like a moth-eaten fur coat, a tree branch fallen across the path, but she doesn't. Zenia dead is more of a barrier than Zenia alive; though, as

she tells the shrink, she can't explain why. Could it be remorse, because Zenia the hated rival is

dead and Roz wanted her to be, and Roz is not? Possibly. You aren't responsible for everything, says the shrink.

Surely Mitch will now change, appear, react. Wake up, as if from hypnotism. But he doesn't phone. He makes no sign, and now it's April, the first week, the second week, the third.

When

Roz calls his lawyer, finally, to find out where he is, the lawyer can't say. Something was

mentioned about a trip, he seems to recall. Where? The lawyer doesn't know.

461

Where Mitch is, is in Lake Ontario. He's been there a while. The police pick up his boat, the Rosalind II, drifting with sails furled, and eventually Mitch himself washes into shore off the Scarborough Bluffs. He has his lifejacket on, but at this time of year the hypothermia would have

taken him very quickly. He must have slipped, they tell her. Slipped off and fallen in, and been

unable to climb back on. There was a wind, the day he left harbour. An accident. If it had been

suicide he wouldn't have been wearing his lifejacket. Would he?

He would, he would, thinks Roz. He did that part of it for the kids. He didn't want to leave a bad package for them. He did love them enough for that. But he knew all about the temperature

of the water, he'd lectured her about it often. enough. Your body heat dissipates, quick as a wink.

You numb, and then you die. And so he did. That it was deliberate Roz has no doubt, but she

doesn't say. It was an accident, she tells the children. Accidents happen.

She has to tidy up after him, of course. Pick up the odds and ends. Clean up the mess. She is,

after all, still his wife.

The worst thing is the apartment, the apartment he shared with Zenia. He didn't go, back to it after she left, after he chased off to Europe to find her. Some of his clothes are still in the closet - his impressive suits, his beautiful shirts, his ties. Roz = folds and packs, as so often before. His shoes, emptier than empty. Wherever else he is, he isn't here.

Zenia is a stronger presence. Most of her things are gone, but a Chinese dressing gown, rose-coloured silk with dragons embroidered on it, is hanging over a chair in the bedroom.

Opium, Roz thinks, smelling it. It's the smell that bothers Roz the most. The tumbled sheets are still on the unmade bed, there are dirty towels in the bathroom. The scene of the crime.

She

should never have come here, this is torture. She should have sent Dolores.

*

462

Roz gives up going to the shrink. It's the optimism that's getting to her, the belief that things can be fixed, which right now feels like just one more burden: All this and she's supposed to be

hopeful, too? Thanks but no thanks. So, God, she says to herself. That was some number.

Fooled

me! Proud of yourself. What else have you got up your sleeve? Maybe a nice war, some genocide - hey, a

plague or two? She knows she shouldn't talk this way, even to herself, it's tempting fate, but it

gets her through the day.

Getting through the day is the main thing. She puts two pending real estate deals on hold; she's in no shape to make major decisions. The magazine can run itself until she can get around

to selling it, which shouldn't be too hard, because ever since the changes Zenia brought in it's

showing a profit. If she can't sell it she'll fold it up. She doesn't have the heart to go on with a publication that has made such extravagant claims, claims she has so calamitously failed to embody in herself. Superwoman she's not, and failed is the key word. She's been a success at

many things, but not at the one thing. Not at standing by her man. Because if Mitch drowned himself - if there wasn't enough left for him to live for - whose fault was it? Zenia's, yes, but also her own. She should have remembered about his own father, who took the same dark road. She should have let him back in.

Getting through the day is one thing, getting through the night is another. She can't brush her teeth in her splendid doublesinked bathroom without sensing Mitch beside her, she can't take a

shower without looking to see if his damp footprints are on the floor. She can't sleep in the middle of her raspberry-coloured bed, because, more than ever, more than when he was alive

but elsewhere, he is almost there. But he's not there. He's missing. He's a missing person. He's

gone off someplace where she can't get at him.

She can't sleep in her raspberry-coloured bed at all. She lies

463

down, gets up, puts on her bathrobe, wanders downstairs to the kitchen where she burrows through the refrigerator; or she tiptoes along the upstairs hall, listening for the breathing of her children. She's anxious about them now, more than ever, and they are anxious about her.

Despite her efforts to reassure them, to tell them that she is fine and everything will be all right, she frightens them. She can tell.

It must be the flatness of her voice, her face naked of makeup and disguise. She drags a blanket around the house with her in case sleep might choose to appear. Sometimes she falls

asleep on the floor, in the family room, with the television on for company. Sometimes she drinks, hoping to relax herself, conk herself out. Sometimes it works.

Dolores quits. She says she's found another job, one with a pension plan, but Roz doesn't think it's that. It's the bad luck; Dolores is afraid of catching it. Roz will replace her, find someone else; but later, when she can think. After she's had some sleep.

She goes to the doctor, the GP, the same one she uses for the children's coughs, and asks for some sleeping pills. Just to get her through this period, she says. The doctor is understanding, the pills are granted. She's careful with them at first, but then they don't work so well and she takes more. One evening she takes a handful of them, and a triple scotch; not

out of any' desire to die, she doesn't want to do that, but out of simple irritation at being awake. She ends up on the kitchen floor.

It's Larry who finds her, coming back from a friend's. He phones the ambulance. He's old now,

older than he should be. He's responsible.

Roz comes to, and finds herself being walked around between two large nurses. Where is she? In a hospital. How weak, how embarrassing, she didn't intend to end up in such a place. "I

need to go home," she says. "I need to get some rest."

464

"She's coming out of it," says the one on the left. "You'll be fine, dear, - says the other.

Roz has not been she or dear for a long time. There's a flicker of humiliation. Then it subsides.

Roz floats up out of the fog. She can feel the bones of her skull, thin as a skin; inside them her

brain is swollen and full of pulp. Her body is dark and vast as the sky, her nerves pinpricks of

brightness: the stars, long strings of them, wavering like seaweed. She could drift, she

could

sink. Mitch would be there.

Then Charis is sitting beside her, beside her bed, holding her left hand. "Not yet," says Charis. "You need to come back, it's not your time. You still have things to do."

When she's herself, when she's normal, Roz finds Charis an endearing nincompoop - let's face it, a polymath she's not - and mostly dismisses her gauzy metaphysics. Now, though, Charis reaches down with her other hand and takes hold of Roz's foot, and Roz feels grief travelling through her like a wave, up through her body and along her arm and into her hand, and out into Charis's hand, and out. Then she feels a tug, a pull, as if Charis is a long way away,

on the shore, and has hold of something - something like a rope - and is hauling Roz in, out of

the water, the water of the lake, where she has almost drowned. That's life over there: a beach,

the sun, some small figures. Her children, waving, shouting to her, though she can't hear them.

She concentrates on breathing, on forcing the air down into her lungs. She's strong enough, she can make it.

"Yes," says Charis. "You will:"

Tony has moved into Roz's house, to be with the children. After Roz is let out of the hospital Charis moves in as well, just for a time; just until Roz is back on her feet.

"You don't need to do this," Roz protests.

465

"Somebody does," says Tony briskly. "You have other suggestions?" She's already phoned Roz's office and told them that Roz has bronchitis; also laryngitis, so she can't speak on the phone. Flowers arrive, and Charis puts them in vases and then forgets to add water. She goes

to the health food store and brings back various capsules and extractions, which she feeds to

Roz or else rubs onto her, and some breakfast cereals made from unknown seeds that need

to be boiled a lot. Roz longs for chocolate, and Tony smuggles some in for her. "That's a good sign," she tells Roz.

Charis has brought August with her, and the three girls play Barbie doll games together in the twins' playroom, violent games in which Barbie goes on the warpath and takes over the world and bosses everyone else around, and other games in which she comes to a nasty end.

Or they dress up in Roz's old slippers and sneak around the house, three princesses on an expe-

dition. Roz rejoices to hear the loud voices again, the arguments; the twins have been far too

quiet lately.

Tony makes cups of tea, and, for dinner, olden-days tuna casseroles with cheese and potato-chip toppings, Roz thought such things had vanished from the world, and Charis mas-

sages Roz's feet with mint essence and rose oil. She tells Roz that she's an ardent soul, with

connections to Peru. These things that have happened to her, which look like tragedy, are past lives working themselves out. Roz must learn from them, because that is why we return to earth: to learn. "You don't stop being who you are, in your next life," she says, "but you add things." Roz bites her tongue, because she's returning to herself again and she thinks this

is diarrhea, but she would never dream of saying so because Charis means well, and

Charis

runs baths for her that have sticks of cinnamon and leaves floating in them, as if Roz is about

to be turned into chicken stock.

"You're spoiling me," Roz tells them. Now that she's feeling

466

better she's made uneasy by all the fussing. She is usually the one who does these things, the

hen things, the taking care. She's not used to being on the receiving end.

"You've been on a hard journey," says Charis, in her gentle voice. "You used up a lot of your energy. Now you can let go:" "That's not so easy," says Roz.

"I know," says Charis. "But you've never liked easy things." By never, she means not for the past four thousand years. Which is about how old Roz feels.

Roz finds herself sitting on the cellar floor in the light from the one unshaded overhead bulb, an empty plate beside her, a children's storybook open on her knees. She's twisting and

untwisting her wedding ring, the ring that once meant she was married, the ring that's weighing her down, turning it on her finger as if she's unscrewing it, or else expecting some genie or other to appear from nowhere and solve everything for her. Put the pieces back together, make everything right; slide Mitch alive back into her bed where she will find him when she goes upstairs - scrubbed and scented and brushed and cunning, filled to the brim with affectionate lies, lies she can see through, lies she can deal with, twenty years younger. Another chance. Now that she knows what to do she will do it better this time. Tell me, God - why don't we get rehearsals?

How long has she been down here, whimpering in bad light? She must go upstairs and deal with reality, whatever that may be. She must pull herself together.

She does this by patting the pockets of her bathrobe, where she always used to keep a tissue before the twins outlawed

467

them. Not finding any, she blots her eyes on her orange sleeve, leaving a black smear of mascara, then wipes her nose on the other sleeve. Well, who's to see, except God?

According

to the nuns he had a preference for cotton hankies. God, she tells him, if you hadn't wanted us

to wipe our noses on our sleeves you wouldn't have given us sleeves. Or noses. Or tears, as far as that

goes. Or memory, or pain.

She slides the kids' books back onto the shelf. She should donate these books to some charity, or maybe lend them - let them loose in the world to warp some small child's mind, while she waits for her own grandchildren to appear. What grandchildren? Dream on, Roz.

The twins are too young and will anyway probably grow up to be stock-car racers or women who go off to live among the gorillas, something fearless and non-progenitive; as for Larry, he's in absolutely no hurry, and if the faux women he's come up with so far are any sample of

what the future holds in the daughter-in-law department, Roz would rather not hold her breath.

Life would be so much easier if there were still arranged marriages. She'd go out into the marriage market, cash in hand, bargain with a dependable marriage broker, secure a nice bride

for Larry: bright but not bossy, sweet but not a pushover, and with a wide pelvic structure and a strong back. If her own marriage had been arranged, would things have turned out any

worse than they did? Is it fair, to send inexperienced young girls out into the wild forest to

find for themselves? Girls with big bones and maybe not the smallest of feet. What would help would be a wise woman, some gnarly old crone who would step out from behind a tree, who would give advice, who would say No, not this one, who would say Beauty is only skin deep, in men as well as women, who would see down as far as the heart. Who knows what evil

lurks in the hearts of men? An older woman knows. But how much older do you have to get before you acquire that kind of wisdom?

468

Roz keeps expecting it to sprout in her, grow all over her, sort of like age spots; but it hasn't yet.

She hauls herself up off the floor and dusts her behind, a mistake because her hands are covered with book dirt, as she realizes too late when she looks at them, having encountered a

squashed silverfish stuck to her velour-covered buttock, and Lord knows what's been crawling

over her while she's been sitting here woolgathering. Woolgathering, her mother's word, a word

so old, rooted so far back in time, that although everyone knows what it means nobody knows

where it came from. Why was gathering wool supposed to be lazy? Reading and thinking were

both woolgathering, to her mother. Rosalind! Don't just sit there woolgathering! Sweep the front walk!

Roz's legs have gone to sleep. Every step she takes sends pins and needles shooting into them. She limps towards the cellar steps, pausing to wince. When she gets up to the kitchen

she will open the refrigerator, just to see if there's something in there she might like to eat. She

hasn't had a proper dinner, she often doesn't. Nobody to cook for her, nobody to cook for, not that she ever cooked. Nobody to order in for. Food should be shared. Solitary eating can

be like solitary drinking - a way of dulling the edge, of filling in the blanks. The blank; the empty man-shaped outline left by Mitch.

But there won't be anything in the fridge that she wants; or' rather, a few things maybe, but she will not stoop so low, she will not eat spoonfuls from the jar of chocolate-rum ice cream sauce, as she has done before, or blitz the can of pate de foie gras she's been saving- up for God

knows what mythical occasion, along with the bottle of champagne she keeps tucked away at

the back. There's a bunch of raw vegetables in there, roughage she bought in a fit of nutritional

virtue, but right now they don't appeal. She foresees their fate: they will turn slowly to green and orange goo in the crisper, and then she will buy more.

469

Maybe she could call up Charis or Tony, or both of them, invite them over; order up some red-hot chicken wings from the Indian tandoori take-out on Carlton, or some shrimp balls and

garlic beans and fried won-ton from her favourite Szechuan place on Spadina, or both: have a

sinful little multicultural feast. But Charis will already be back on the Island, and it's dark by now, and she doesn't like the thought of Charis out alone at night, there might be muggers, and

Charis is such an obvious target, a long-haired middle-aged woman walking around

covered

with layers of printed textiles and bumping into things, she might as well have a sign pinned to

her, Snatch my purse, and Roz can rarely persuade her to take taxis even if she offers to pay for

them herself, because Charis goes on about the waste of gasoline. She will take a bus; or worse,

she might decide to walk, through the wilds of Rosedale, past the rows of ersatz Georgian mansions, and get picked up by the police for vagrancy.

As for Tony, she'll be at home in her turreted fortress, cooking up West's dinner for him, some noodle casserole or other from *The Joy of Cooking*, the 1967 edition. It's odd how

Tony's

the only one of them who has actually ended up with a man. Roz can't quite figure it out: tiny Tony, with her baby-bird eyes and her acidulated little smile, and, you'd think, the sex appeal

of

a fire hydrant, with more or less the same proportions. But love comes in odd boxes, as

Roz

has had occasion to learn. And maybe West was so badly frightened by Zenia in his youth that

he's never dared look at any other woman since.

Roz thinks wistfully of the dinnertime tableau at Tony's house, then decides she is not exactly envious, because strawbodied, strange-minded, lantern jawed West isn't her own idea of

what she'd like to have sitting across the table from her. Instead she's glad that Tony has a man, because Tony is her friend and you want your friends to be happy. According to the feminists, the ones in the overalls, in the early years, the only

470

good man was a dead man, or better still none at all; yet Roz continues to wish her friends joy

of them, these men who are supposed to be so bad for you. I met someone, a friend tells her, and

Roz shrieks with genuine pleasure. Maybe that's because a good man is hard to find, so it's a

real occasion when anyone actually finds one. But it's difficult, it's almost impossible, because

nobody seems to know any more what "a good man" is. Not even men.

Or maybe it's because so many of the good men have been eaten, by man-eaters like Zenia.

Most women disapprove of man-eaters; not so much because of the activity itself, or the promiscuity involved, but because of the greed. Women don't want all the men eaten up by man-eaters; they want a few left over so they can eat some themselves.

This is a cynical view, worthy of Tony but not of Roz. Roz must preserve some optimism, because she needs it; it's a psychic vitamin, it keeps her going. "The Other Woman will soon be

with us," the feminists used to say. But how long will it take, thinks Roz, and why hasn't it happened yet?

Meanwhile the Zenias of this world are abroad in the land, plying their trade, cleaning out male pockets, catering to male fantasies. Male fantasies, male fantasies, is everything run by

male fantasies? Up on a pedestal or down on your knees, it's all a male fantasy: that you're strong enough to take what they dish out, or else too weak to do anything about it. Even pretending you aren't catering to male fantasies is a male fantasy: pretending you're unseen,

pretending you have a life of your own, that you can wash your feet and comb your hair unconscious of the ever-present watcher peering through the keyhole, peering through the keyhole in your own head, if nowhere else. You are a woman with a man inside watching a woman. You are your own voyeur. The Zenias of this world have studied this situation and turned it to their own advantage; they haven't let

471

themselves be moulded into male fantasies, they've done it themselves. They've slipped sideways into dreams; the dreams of women too, because women are fantasies for other women, just as they are for men. But fantasies of a different kind.

Sometimes Roz gets herself down. It's her own worthiness that does it, the pressure on her to

be nice, to be ethical, to behave well; it's the rays of good behaviour, of good nature, of cluck-

clucking good-as-gold goody-goodness beaming out from around her head. It's her best intentions. If she is so goldarned worthy, why isn't she having more fun? Sometimes she would

like to cast off her muffling Lady Bountiful cloak, stop tiptoeing through the scruples, cut loose, not in minor ways as she does now - a little swearing inside her head, some bad verbiage

- but something really big. Some great whopping thoroughly despicable sin.

Random sex would have done the trick once, but plain garden-variety sex hardly counts any more, it's just a form of mood therapy or calisthenics, she'd have to go in for bloodthirsty kink.

Or something else, something devious and archaic and complicated and mean. Seduction followed by slow poisoning. Treachery Betrayal. Cheating and lies.

To do that she would need another body, it goes without saying, because the one she has is

too clumsy, too lumberingly honest, and the sort of evil she has in mind would require grace. To be truly malevolent she would have to be thinner.

Mirror, mirror on the wall, Who is the evilest of us all?

Take off a few pounds, cookie, and maybe I can do something for you.

Or maybe she could go in for superhuman goodness, instead. Hair shirts, stigmata, succouring

the poor, a kind of outsized

472

Mother Teresa. Saint Roz, it sounds good, though Saint Rosalind would be classier. A few thorns, one or two body parts on a plate, to show how she'd been martyred: an eye, a hand, a

tit, tits were favourites, the ancient Romans seemed to have a thing about cutting off women's

breasts, sort of like plastic surgeons. She can see herself in a halo, with her hand languidly on

her heart and a wimple, great for sagging chins, and her eyes rolled up in ecstasy. It's the extremes that attract her. Extreme good, extreme evil: the abilities required are similar.

Either way, she would like to be someone else. But not just anyone. Sometimes - for a day at least, or even for an hour, or if nothing else was available then five minutes would do - sometimes she would like to be Zenia.

She hobbles up the cellar stairs on prickling feet, one step at a time, holding onto the banister

and wondering if this is what it will be like to be ninety, should she get that far. She makes it to

the top finally, opens the door. Here is the white kitchen, just as she left it. She feels as if she's

been away from it for a long time. Wandering lost in the dark wood with its twisted trees; enchanted.

The twins are sitting on high stools at the counter, wearing shorts with tights underneath, a fashionable hole in each knee, drinking strawberry smoothies out of tall glasses. Pink moustaches adorn their upper lips. The frozen yogourt container melts near the sink.

"Gollee, Mom, you look like a car accident!" says Paula. "What's that smeary stuff all over your face?"

"It's just my face," says Roz. "It's coming off"

Erin jumps down and runs over to her. "Sit down, sweetie," she says, in a parody of Roz herself in her mothering mode. "Do you have a temperature? Let us feel your forehead!"

The two of them propel her across the floor, up onto a

473

stool. They wet the dishtowel and wipe her face - "Ooh, messy messy!" It's obvious to them she's been crying, but of course they don't mention it. Then they try to get her to drink one of their smoothies, laughing and giggling because it's funny to them, their mother as a big baby,

themselves as mothers. Wait for it, Roz thinks. Wait till I lose my marbles and start to drool, and you find yourselves doing this for real. It won't be so funny then:

But what a burden it must be to them, her bereft condition. Why shouldn't they put on clown faces to cover up their distress? It's a trick they've learned from her. It's a trick that works.

I11XOZ JH.L

Tony is playing the piano but no music comes out. Her feet don't reach the pedals, her hands

don't span the keys, but she plays on because if she stops a terrible thing will happen. In the room is a dry burning smell, the smell of the flowers on the

G" chintz curtains. They are large

pink roses, they open and close their petals, which are now like flames; already they are spreading

to the wallpaper. They aren't the flowers from her own curtains, they've come here from somewhere else, some place Tony can't remember.

Her mother walks into the darkening room, the heels of her shoes ticking on the floor, wearing her maroon hat with the spotted veil. She sits down on the piano bench beside Tony; her

face glimmers, obscured, its features blurring. Her leather hand, cool as mist, brushes Tony's

face, and Tony turns and holds onto her, holds on ferociously because she knows what happens

next; but out of the front of her dress her mother takes an egg, an egg that smells like seaweed. If

Tony can have this egg and keep it safe, the burning in the house will stop, the future can be avoided. But her mother lifts the egg up into the air, teasingly overhead, and Tony isn't tall enough to reach it. "Poor thing, poor thing," says her mother; or is it poor twin? Her voice is like

a pigeon cooing, soothing and inexorable and infinitely mournful.

Somewhere out of sight the flowers have grown out of control and the house is on fire.

Unless Tony can stop it, everything that once was will burn. The unseen flames make a fluttering

sound, like ruffling feathers. A tall man is standing in the corner. It's West, but why is he wearing

those clothes, why is his hair black, why does he have a hat? There's a suitcase beside him on

477

the floor. He picks it up and opens it: it's full of sharpened pencils. Reverof, he says sadly; though what he means is Farewell, because Zenia is there at the door, wound in a silk shawl with a long fringe. In her neck there's a pinkish grey gash, as if her throat's been cut; but as Tony watches, it opens, then closes moistly, and she can see that Zenia has gills. But West is going, he's putting his arm around Zenia. he's turning his back. Outside, the taxi is waiting to take them to the snowy hill. Tony needs to stop them. She holds out her hand once more and her mother puts the egg into it, but the egg is too hot now because of the fire and Tony drops it. It rolls onto a newspaper and breaks open, and time runs out of it, wet and dark red. There are gunshots, coming from the back of the house, and marching boots, and shouting in a foreign language. Where is her father? Frantically she looks around for him but he is nowhere to be seen, and the soldiers are already here to take her mother away. Charis is lying in her white vine-covered bed, arms at her sides, palms open, eyes closed. Behind her eyes she is fully aware. She feels her astral body rise out of her, rise straight up and hang suspended above her like a mask lifted from a face. It too is wearing a white cotton nightgown. How tenuously- we inhabit our bodies, she thinks. In her body of light - clear, like gelatin - she glides out through the window and across the harbour: Below her is the ferry; she swoops and follows in its wake. Around her she hears the rushing of wings. She looks, expecting seagulls, and is surprised to see a flock of chickens flying through the air. She reaches the other shore and floats along over the city. Ahead of her is a large window, the window of a hotel. She fetches up against the glass and beats her arms for a moment, like a moth. Then the window melts like ice and she passes through.

478

Zenia is in here, sitting in a chair, wearing a white nightgown just like Charis's, brushing her cloudy hair in front of the mirror. The hair twists like flames, like the branches of dark cypresses licking heavenwards, it crackles with static electricity; blue sparks play from the tips. Zenia sees Charis and motions to her, and Charis goes close and then closer, and she sees the two of them side by side in the mirror. Then Zenia's edges dissolve like a watercolour in the rain and Charis merges into her. She slides her on like a glove, she slips into her like a flesh dress, she looks out through her eyes. What she sees is herself, herself in the mirror, herself with power. Her nightgown ripples in an invisible wind. Beneath her face are the bones, darker and darker through the glass, like an X-ray; now she can see into things, now she can change herself into energy and

pass' through solid objects. Possibly she's dead.. It's hard to remember. Possibly this is rebirth.

She spreads the fingers of her new hands, wondering what they will do.

She drifts to the window and looks out. Down below, among the fiery lights and many lives, there's a slow smouldering; the smell of it permeates the room. Everything burns eventually, even

stone can burn. In the room behind her is the depth of outer space, where the atoms are blown

like ashes, borne on the restless interstellar winds, the banished souls, atoning ...

There's a knock at the door. She goes to open, because it will be a maid with towels. But it isn't, it's Billy, in striped pyjamas, his body grown older, bloated, his face raw meat. If he touches

her she will fall apart like a bundle of rotted leather. It's her new eyes doing this. She rubs and

pulls at her face, trying to get out of these eyes, these dark eyes she no longer wants. But Zenia's

eyes, won't come off; they're stuck to her own eyes like the scales of a fish. Like smoked glass,

they darken everything.

Roz is walking through the forest, through the shattered trunks and spiky undergrowth, wearing a

sailor dress that is too big for

479

her. She knows this dress isn't hers, she never had a dress like this. Her feet are bare, and cold

too; pain shoots through them, because the ground is covered with snow. There's a track ahead

of her: a red footprint, a white footprint, a red footprint. To the side there's a clump of trees. Many people have been that way; they've dropped the things they were carrying, a lamp, a book,

a watch, a suitcase fallen open, a leg with a shoe, a shoe with a diamond buckle. Paper money

blows here and there, like candy-bar wrappers tossed away. The footprints lead in among the

trees but none come out. She knows not to follow them; there's something in there, something

frightening she doesn't want to see.

She's safe though because here is her garden, the delphiniums drooping, black with mildew,

forlorn in the snow. There are white chrysanthemums too but they aren't planted, they're in big

cylindrical silver vases and she's never seen them before. Nevertheless this is her house.

The back

window is shattered, the door swings loose but she goes in anyway, she walks through the white

kitchen where nothing moves, past the table with three chairs. Dust covers everything. She'll have to clean this up, because her mother is no longer here.

She climbs up the back stairs, her thawing feet tingling with pins and needles. The upstairs hallway is empty and silent; there is no music. Where are her children? They must be grown

up,

they must have gone away, they must be living elsewhere. But how can that be, how can she have

grown-up children? She's too young for that, she's too small. There's something wrong with

time.

Then she hears the sound of the shower. Mitch must be here, which fills her with joy because he has been away so long. She wants to run inside, to greet him. Through the open bedroom door steam billows.

But she can't go in, because a man in an overcoat is blocking her way. Orange light pours from his mouth and nostrils. He opens his coat and there is his sacred heart, orange too like a

480

glowing jack-o'-lantern, flickering in the wind that has sprung up suddenly. He holds up his left

hand to stop her. Nun, he says. Despite appearances, despite everything, she knows this man is

Zenia. From the ceiling it begins to rain.

L

It's after dark. There's a fine chilly drizzle, and the storefronts with their lit-up windows and the black streets with their red neon reflections have the slick, wet look that Tony associates with plastic raincoats and greased hair and freshly applied lipstick - a dubious, exciting look.

Cars sizzle past, filled with strangers, going somewhere unknown. Tony walks.

The Toxique is different at night. The lights are dimmer, and squat candles in red glass holders flicker on the tables; the outfits of the waiters and waitresses are subtly more outrageous. There are a few men in suits, having dinner; businessmen, Tony guesses, though

with their mistresses rather than their wives. She likes to think that such men might still have mistresses, though probably they don't call them that. Lovers. Main squeezes. Special friends.

The Toxique is where you would take a special friend, but maybe not a wife. Though how would Tony know?' It's not a world she moves in. There are more men in leather jackets than there are in the daytime. There's a subdued buzz.

She checks her big-numbers wristwatch: the rock band doesn't come on till eleven, and she hopes she'll be out of there by then. She's had enough noise at home; today she had to listen to a full thirty minutes of aural torture, put together by West and played to her at full volume, with considerable arm-waving and expressions of glee. "I think I've done it," was West's comment. What could she say? "That's good," was what she came out with. It's an all-

occasion phrase, and appeared to suffice.

481

Tony is the first one here. She's never had dinner at the Toxique before, only lunch. This dinner is last-minute: Roz phoned in a state of breathlessness and said there was something she

really needed to tell. At first she suggested that Tony and Charis should come over to her place,

but Tony pointed out that such a thing was difficult without a car.

She's not that keen on going to Roz's anyway, though Roz's twins are - in theory - favourites of hers. She used to regret not having had children, though she wasn't sure she would have been

all that good at it, considering Anthea. But being a godmother has suited her better than being a

mother - for one thing it's more intermittent - and the twins have done her proud. They have a

fine glittering edge to them, and so does her other goddaughter, Augusta. None of them is

what

you would call self-effacing - all three would be at home on horses, riding astride, hair flying, scouring the plains, giving no quarter. Tony isn't sure how they've come by their confidence, their

straightahead level gazes, their humorous but remorseless mouths. They have none of the timidity that used to be so built in, for women. She hopes they will gallop through the world in style, more style than she herself has been able to scrape together. They have her blessing; but

from a distance, because close up Augusta is faintly chilling - she's so intent on success - and the

twins have become gigantic; gigantic, and also careless. Tony is slightly afraid of them.

They

might step on her by mistake.

So it was Tony who suggested the Toxique, this time. Roz may have something to tell, but Tony has something to tell also and it's fitting that it should be told here. She has requested their

usual table, the one in the corner by the smoked mirror. From the young woman, or possibly man, who appears beside her, dressed in a black cat-suit with a wide leather stud-covered belt and

five silver earrings in each ear, she orders a bottle of white wine and a bottle of Evian.

Charis arrives at the same time as the bottles, looking

482

strangely pale. Well, thinks Tony, she always looks strangely pale, but tonight she's even more

so. "Something weird happened to me today," she tells Tony, shedding her damp woollen sweatercoat and her fuzzy knitted hat. But this is not an unusual thing for Charis to say, so Tony merely nods and pours her a glass of Evian. Sooner or later they will get the story of the

dream about shiny people sitting in trees, or the odd coincidence involving street numbers or

cats that look just like other cats that used to belong to someone Charis once knew and doesn't

any more, but Tony would rather have it wait till Roz gets here. Roz is more tolerant of such intellectual wispiness, and better at changing the subject.

Roz comes in, waving and yoo-hooing and wearing a flamed trench coat and matching sou'wester, and shaking herself. "Judas Priest!" she says, pulling off her purple gloves.

"Wait till

you hear! You won't believe!" Her tone is dismayed rather than jubilant.

"You saw Zenia today," says Charis.

Roz's mouth opens. "How did you know?" she says. "Because, so did I," says

Charis.

"And so_ did I," says Tony.

Roz sits heavily down, and stares at each one of them in turn. "All right," she says. "Tell."

Tony waits in the lobby of the Arnold Garden Hotel, which would not have been her own hotel

of choice. It's a graceless fifties construction, cement slabs on the outside and a lot of plate glass.

From her vantage point she can see out through the double doors at the back, into a patio dotted

with chunky planters and with a large circular fountain off in one corner, non-functional at this time of year and overlooked by tiers of balconies with orange-painted sheet-metal railings.

The

postmodern awning and brass at the front is just an add-on: the essence of the Arnold

Garden is

those balconies. Though efforts

483

are being made: above Tony looms a prehensile arrangement of purplish dried flowers and wires

and strange pods, daring the aesthetically uninitiated to call it ugly.

The patio and the fountain must be the garden part of the Arnold Garden, Tony decides; but she wonders about the Arnold. Is it Arnold as in Matthew, he of the ignorant armies dashing by

night? Or Arnold as in Benedict, traitor or hero depending on point of view? Or perhaps it's a

first name, denoting some bygone city councillor, some worthy backroom fixer whose friends

called him Arnie. The lobby, with its framed prints of rotund pink-coated fox-hunting Englishmen, gives no clue.

The chair Tony sits in is leathery and slippery and built for colossi. Her feet don't touch the ground even if she moves well forward, and if she slides herself all the way back, then her knees

can't-bend over the front edge and her legs stick out stiffly like the legs of a china doll. So she has

adopted a compromise - a sort of hunched curvature - but she is far from comfortable.

Also, despite her demure navy blue coat and her sensible walking shoes and her wimpy Peter

Pan collar, she feels conspicuous. Her bad intentions must be sticking out all over, her. She has

the sensation that she's growing hair, little prickles of it pushing out through the skin of her legs

like the quills of a porcupine, hanks of it shoving through in tufts around her ears. It's ' Zenia doing this, the effort of tracking Zenia: it's fusing her neurons, rearranging the molecules in her

brain. A hairy white devil is what she's becoming, a fanged monster. It's a necessary transformation perhaps, because fire must be fought with fire. But every weapon is two-edged, so

there will be a price to pay: Tony won't get out of this unaltered.

In her oversized tote bag is her father's Luger, unearthed from the box of Christmas decorations where it's usually stored, and freshly oiled and loaded according to the instructions

in the manual of forties weaponry she photocopied in the library. She

took care to wear gloves while photocopying, so as not to leave fingerprints, just in case. In case

they try to pin anything on her, afterwards. The gun itself is unregistered, she believes. It is after

all a sort of souvenir.

Beside it is another implement. Tony has taken advantage of one of the many tool circulars littering her front lawn to purchase a cordless drill, with screwdriver attachment, at a third off. She has never used one of these before. Also, she's never used a gun before. But there's a first

time for everything. Her initial idea was that she could use the drill to break into Zenia's room, if

necessary. Unscrew the door hinges, or something. But it occurs to her, sitting here in the lobby,

that the drill too is potentially lethal, and might be put to use. If she could murder Zenia with a cordless drill, what policeman would be smart enough to figure it out?

But the actual scenario is unclear in her mind. Maybe she should shoot Zenia first and then finish her off with the drill: the other way around would be cumbersome, as she would have to

sneak up behind Zenia with the drill and then turn it on, and the whirring noise would be a giveaway. She could always do an ambidextrous murder: gun in the left hand, cordless drill in the

right, like the rapier-and-dagger arrangements of the late Renaissance. It's an appealing thought.

The catch is that Zenia is considerably taller than Tony, and Tony would of course be aiming for the head. Symmetrical retaliation: Zenia's pattern has been to attack her victims at the point

of most vulnerability, and the most vulnerable point is the one most prized, and Tony's most vulnerable point is her brain. That's how she was trapped by Zenia in the first place: that was the

temptation, the bait. Tony got suckered in through her own intellectual vanity. She thought she'd

found a friend who was as smart as she was. Smarter was not a category.

Tony's love for West is her other most vulnerable point, so it stands to reason that it's through West that Zenia will attack her

485

now. It's to protect West that she's doing this, really - he would not survive another slice cut out

of his heart.

She hasn't shared her plans with Roz or Charis. Each of them is a decent person; neither would

condone violence. Tony knows that she herself is not a decent person, she's known that ever

since childhood. She does act like one, most of the time, because there's usually no reason not to,

but she has another self, a more ruthless one, concealed inside her. She is not just Tony Fremont,

she is also Tnomerf Ynot, queen of the barbarians, and, in theory, capable of much that Tony

herself is not quite up to. Bulc egdirb! Bulc egdirb! Take no prisoners, because in order to protect the

innocent, some must sacrifice their own innocence. This is one of the rules of war. Men have to

do hard things, they have to do hard man-things. Hard-man things. They have to shed blood, so

that others may live out their placid lives suckling their infants and rummaging in their gardens

and creating unmusical music, free from guilt. Women are not usually called upon to commit such cold-blooded acts, but this does not mean they are incapable of them. Tony clenches her

small teeth and invokes her left hand, and hopes that she will rise to the occasion.

In front of her face she holds the Globe and Mail, opened to the business section. She's not reading, however: she's watching the lobby for Zenia. Watching, and getting jittery, because it

isn't every day she does something this risky. To cut the tension, to give herself some critical

distance, she folds up the paper and takes her lecture notes out of her bag. It will focus her mind

to review them, it will refresh her memory: she hasn't given this lecture since last year.

The lecture is a favourite among her students. It's the one on the role of female camp-followers through the ages, before and after battles - their handiness as bodies-for-hire, rapees, and producers of cannon fodder, their tension-reducing, nursing, psychiatric, cooking and laundering and post-massacre looting

486

and life-terminating skills - with a digression on venereal diseases. Rumour has it that the students' nickname for this lecture is "Mother Courage Meets Spotted Dick," or "Whores 'n' Sores"; it usually attracts a contingent of visiting engineers, who come for the visuals, because

Tony has an impressive instructional film she always screens. It's the same one the army showed

to its new recruits at the time of the Second World War to promote the use of condoms, and features many a rotted-off nose and green, leaking male organ. Tony is used to the nervous laughter. Put yourself there, she will tell them. Pretend it's you. Now: less funny?

At that time syphilis was considered to be a self-inflicted wound. Some guys used VD to get

themselves invalided home. You could be court-martialled for having a dose, just as you could

for shooting yourself in the foot. If the wound was the disease, then the weapon was the whore.

Yet another weapon in the war of the sexes, the whore of the sexes, the raw of the sexes, the raw

sexes war. A perfect palindrome.

Maybe that's what West found so irresistible about Zenia, Tony used to think: that she was raw, that she was raw sex, whereas Tony herself was only the cooked variety. Parboiled to get the

dangerous wildness out, the strong fresh-blood flavours. Zenia was gin at midnight, Tony was

eggs for breakfast, and in eggcups at that. It's not the category Tony would have preferred.

All these years Tony had refrained from asking West about Zenia. She hadn't wanted to upset

him; also she was afraid of finding out any more about Zenia's powers of attraction, about their

nature and their extent. But after the return of Zenia she couldn't help herself. On the edge of the crisis, she had to know.

"Remember Zenia?" she asked West at dinner, two nights ago. They were having fish, a sole d

la bonne femme from Tony's

487

Basic French Cooking book, bought to go with her battlefield-of-Pourrieres fish platter.

West stopped chewing, just for a moment. "Of course," he said.

"What was it?" said Tony. "What was what?" said West.

"Why you - you know. Why you went with her." Tony felt herself tensing up all over. Instead of me, she thought. Why you abandoned me.

West shrugged, then smiled. "I don't know," he said. "I can't remember. Anyway, that was a long time ago. She's dead now" Tony knew that West knew that Zenia was far from dead.

"True," she said. "Was it the sex?"

"The sex?" said West, as if she'd just mentioned some forgotten but unimportant shopping-list item. "No, I don't think so. Not exactly."

"What do you mean, not exactly?" said Tony, more sharply than she should have.

"Why are we talking about this?" said West. "It doesn't matter now"

"It matters to me," said Tony in a small voice.

West sighed. "Zenia was frigid," he said. "She couldn't help it. She was sexually abused in childhood, by a Greek Orthodox priest. I felt sorry for her."

Tony's mouth dropped open. "Greek Orthodox?"

"Well, she was part Greek," said West. "Greek immigrant. She couldn't tell anyone about the

priest, because nobody would have believed her. It was a very religious community:"

Tony could barely contain herself. She felt a raucous and unseemly merriment building up inside her. Frigid! So that's what Zenia had told poor West! It does not at all accord with certain

confidences Zenia once saw fit to share with Tony on the subject of sex. Sex as a huge plum

pudding, a confection of rich delights, whose pleasures she would enumerate while Tony
488 ,~:

listened, shut out, nose to the glass. Tony could just see whiteknight West, dutifully huffing and

puffing away, giving it his best shot, trying to save Zenia from the evil spell cast by the wicked,

non-existent Greek Orthodox priest, with Zenia having the time of her life. Probably she told him she was faking orgasm to please him. Double the guilt!

It would have been a challenge for him; of course. Warm up the Ice Maiden. The first man ever to successfully explore those polar climes. But of course there was no way he could win,

because Zenia's games were always rigged.

"I never knew that," she said. She fixed West with her large wide-open eyes, trying to look sympathetic.

"Yeah, well," said West. "She found it really hard to talk about."

"Why did you break up with her?" said Tony. "The second time. Why did you move out?"

Now that they'd crossed the border into the never-mentioned, now that West was talking, she

might as well push her advantage.

West sighed. He looked at Tony with something close to shame. "To be honest," he said, and

stopped.

"Yes?" said Tony.

"Well, to be honest, she kicked me out. She said she found me boring."

Tony appalled herself by nearly laughing out loud. Maybe Zenia was right: from a certain point of view, West was boring. But one woman's meat was another woman's boredom, and

West was boring in the same way children were boring, and interesting in the same way, too, and

that's what a woman like Zenia would never see. Anyway, what was true love if it couldn't put up

with a little boredom?

"Are you all right?" West asked. "Choked on a bone," said Tony. West hung his head. "I guess

I am boring," he said.

Tony felt contrite. She was cruel for finding this funny. It

489

wasn't funny, because West had been deeply wounded. She got up from the table and put her

arms around his neck from behind, and laid her cheek against the top of his sparsely covered

head. "You aren't at all boring," she said. "You're the most interesting man I've ever known."

This was correct, since West was in fact the only man Tony had ever known, in any way that counted.

West reached up and patted her hand. "I love you," he said. "I love you much more than I ever loved Zenia."

Which is all very well, thinks Tony, sitting in the lobby of the Arnold Garden Hotel, but if that's really true, why didn't he tell me that Zenia called? Maybe he's already seen her. Maybe she's

already lured him into bed. Maybe her teeth are in his neck, right now; maybe she's sucking out

his life's blood while Tony sits here in this perverse leather chair, not even knowing where to look, because Zenia could be anywhere, she could be doing anything, and so far Tony doesn't

have a clue.

This is the third hotel she's tried out. She's spent two other mornings hanging around in the lobbies of the Arrival and the Avenue Park, with no results whatsoever. Her only lead is the extension number, the one scribbled by West and left beside his phone, but she's hesitated to

call all the hotels and use it because she doesn't want to alert Zenia, she wants to take her by

surprise. She doesn't want to ask for her at the desk either, because she knows in her bones

that Zenia will be using a false name; and once Tony has asked, and has been told there's no

guest of that name, it would look suspicious if she were to keep on sitting in the lobby. Also she doesn't want to be remembered by the staff, should Zenia be found later wallowing in a pool of blood. So she merely sits, trying to look like someone waiting for a business meeting.

Her theory is that Zenia - who is by habit a late riser - must at some point get out of bed, must take the elevator to the main floor, must walk through the lobby. Of course it's not 490

beyond Zenia to stay in bed all day or, sneak down the fire stairs, but Tony is betting on the law

of averages. Sooner or later - supposing Tony is in the right hotel - Zenia will appear.

And then what? Then Tony will leap or slither out of her chair, will patter across the floor to Zenia, will chirp a greeting, will be ignored; will scuttle after Zenia as she sweeps out through the

glass doors. Gasping for breath, her outmoded gun and silly cordless drill clanking together in

her bag, she will catch up to Zenia as she strides along the sidewalk. "We need to talk," Tony will

blurt. -

"What about?" Zenia will say. At that point she will simply walk faster, and Tony will either have to trot ridiculously or give up.

This is the nightmare scenario, just thinking about it makes Tony blush with the sense of her own future humiliation. There's another scenario, one in which Tony is persuasive and dexterous

and Zenia is taken in, one that acts out some of Tony's more violent although hypothetical fantasies and includes a neat red hole placed competently in the exact centre of Zenia's forehead.

But at the moment Tony doesn't have a lot of faith in it.

She isn't having much luck concentrating on her lecture notes, so she switches back to the Globe business section and forces herself to read. Tsol Sboj Erom. Gnisolc Tnalp. This has a

satisfying Slavic ring to it. That, or Finnish, or some wild-haired tribe from Planet Pluto. As Tony

is savouring it she feels a hand on her shoulder.

"Tony! There you are, finally!" Tony looks up, then stifles a small rodent-like shriek: Zenia is bending over her, smiling warmly. "Why didn't you call before? And why are you just sitting here

in the lobby? I gave West the room number!"

"Well," says Tony. Her mind scrabbles, trying to fit all this together. "He jotted it down and then lost it. You know what he's like." Awkwardly she disentangles herself from the leather chair,

which appears to have grown suction cups.

491

"I told him to make you call me right away," says Zenia. "It was just after I saw you in the Toxique. I guess you didn't recognize me! But I called up and told him it was very important:" She's no longer smiling: she's beginning to assume an expression Tony recalls well, something

between a frown and a wince, urgent and at the same time beset. What it means is that Zenia

wants something.

Tony is alert now, on her inner toes. Her darkest suspicions are being confirmed: this is obviously a fallback story, a story Zenia and West have concocted together just in case Tony

should sniff the wind, or should run across Zenia in some unlikely place such as Tony's own bedroom. The story is that the message was for Tony, not for West. It's a cunning story, it has

Zenia's paw-prints all over it, but West must be colluding. Things are worse than Tony thought.

The rot has gone deeper.

"Come on," says Zenia. "We'll go up to my room; I'll order coffee:" She takes Tony's arm. At the same time she glances around the lobby. It's a look of anxiety, of fear even, a look Tony is

not intended to see. Or is she?

She cranes her neck, peering up at Zenia's still-amazing face. Mentally she adds something to

it: a small red X, marking the spot.

Zenia's hotel room is unremarkable except for its largeness and its neatness. The neatness is

unlike Zenia. There are no clothes in evidence, no suitcases strewn around, no cosmetic bags on

the bathroom counter, as far as Tony can see in one sideways glance. It's as if no one is living

here.

Zenia sheds her black leather coat and phones for coffee, and then sits down on the flowered

pastel green sofa, crossing her endless black-stockinged legs, lighting a cigarette. The dress she

wears is a clinging jersey wrap, the purple of stewed blueberries. Her dark eyes are enormous,

and, Tony sees now, shadowed by fatigue, but her plum-coloured smile still quirks up

492

ironically. She seems more at ease here than in the lobby. She raises an eyebrow at Tony.

"Long

time no see," she says.

Tony is at a loss. How should she play this? It would be a mistake to display her anger: that would tip Zenia off, put her on her guard. Tony shuffles her inner deck and discovers that in fact

she's not angry, not at the moment. Instead she's intrigued, and curious. The historian in her is

taking over. "Why did you pretend to die?" she says. "What was all that stuff, with the ashes and

the fake lawyer?"

"The lawyer was real," says Zenia, blowing out smoke. "He believed it too. Lawyers are so gullible."

"And?" says Tony.

"And. I needed to disappear. Trust me, I had my reasons. It wasn't just the money! And I had disappeared, I'd set up about six dead ends for anyone trying to track me down. But that dolt

Mitch was following me around, he just wouldn't stop. He was really messing up my life. He was

so goddamn persistent! He had the money too, he hired people; not amateurs either. He would've

found me, he was right on the verge.

"People knew that; the other people, the ones I didn't really want to see. I was a bad girl, I did

a shell game involving some armaments that turned out not to be where I'd said they'd be. I don't

recommend it - armaments types get snifty, especially the Irish ones. They tend to be vengeful.

They figured out that all they had to do was keep an eye on Mitch and sooner or later he'd dig me

up. He was the one I needed to convince, so he'd quit. So he'd lay off"

"Why Beirut?" says Tony.

"If you were going to get yourself accidentally blown up back then, what better spot to pick?" says Zenia. "The place was festooned with body parts; there were hundreds they never identified."

"You know Mitch killed himself," says Tony. "Because of ,, you. ,,

493

Zenia sighs. "Tony, grow up," she says. "It wasn't because of me. I was just the excuse. You think he hadn't been waiting for one?-All his life, I'd say."

"Well, Roz thinks it was because of you," says Tony lamely. "Mitch told me that sleeping with Roz was like getting into bed with a cement mixer," says Zenia.

"That's cruel," says Tony.

"Just reporting," Zenia says coolly. "Mitch was a creep. Roz is better off without him."

This is a little too close to what Tony thinks herself. She finds herself smiling; smiling, and sliding back down, back in, into that state she remembers so well. Partnership. Pal-ship.

The

team. "Why us, at your funeral?" says Tony.

"Window dressing," says Zenia. "There had to be somebody there from the personal side. You know, old friends. I figured you'd all enjoy it. And anything Roz knew, Mitch would know too. She'd make sure of that! He was the one I wanted. He ducked it though. Prostrate with grief, I guess:"

"The place was crawling with men in overcoats," says Tony. "One of them was mine," says Zenia. "Checking up for me, to see who was there. A couple of them were from the opposition.

Did you cry?"

"I'm not a cryer," says Tony. "Charis sniffled a bit:" She's ashamed, now, of what the three of them had said, and of how jubilant and also how mean-minded they had been.

Zenia laughs. "Charis always did have mush for brains," she says.

There's a knock at the door. "It's the coffee," says Zenia. "Would you mind going?"

It occurs to Tony that Zenia may have a few reasons for not wanting to open doors. A prickle of apprehension runs up her spine.

But it really is the coffee, delivered by a short brown-faced man. The man smiles and Tony takes the tray and scrawls a tip

494

on the bill, and closes the door softly, and puts on the safety lock. Zenia must be protected from

the forces that threaten her. Protected by Tony. Right now, in this room, with Zenia finally incarnate before her, Tony can hardly remember what she's been doing for the past week - the

way she's been sneaking around in a state of cold fury with a gun in her purse, selfishly planning

to bump off Zenia. Why would she want to do that? Why would anyone? Zenia sweeps through

life like a prow, like a galleon. She's magnificent, she's unique. She's the sharp edge:

"You said you needed to talk to me," Tony says, creating an opening.

"Want some rum in your coffee? No?" says Zenia. She unscrews a small bottle from the mini-

bar, pours herself a dollop. Then she frowns a little and lowers her voice confidentially. "Yes.

I

wanted to ask a favour: You're the only one I could go to, really."

Tony waits. She's alarmed again. Watch it, she tells herself. She should get out of here, right

now! But what harm can it do to listen? And she's avid to find out what Zenia wants. Money, probably. Tony can always say no.

"All I need is to stay somewhere," says Zenia. "Not here, here's no good. With you, I thought,

just for a couple of weeks." "Why?" says Tony.

Zenia moves her hands impatiently, scattering cigarette ashes. "Because they're looking! Not

the Irish, they're off my track. It's some other people. They're not here yet, not in this city. But they'll get around to it. They'll hire local professionals:"

"Then why wouldn't they try my house?" says Tony. "Wouldn't that be the first place they'd look?"

Zenia laughs, the familiar laugh, warm and charming and reckless, and contemptuous of the idiocy of others. "The last place!" she says. "They've done their homework, they know you hate

me! You're the wife. I'm the ex-girlfriend. They'd never believe you'd let me in!"

495

"Zenia," says Tony, "exactly who are these people and why are they after you?"

Zenia shrugs. "Standard," she says. "I know too much:" "Oh, come on," says Tony. "I'm not a

baby. Too much about what? And don't say it would be healthier for me not to hear." Zenia leans forward. She lowers her voice. "Does the name Project Babylon mean anything to you?"

she says. She must know it does, she knows what line of knowledge Tony is in. "The Supergun

for Iraq," she adds.

"Gerry Bull," says Tony. "The ballistics genius. Of course. He got murdered:"

"To put it mildly," says Zenia. "Well." She blows out smoke, looking at Tony in a way that is almost coy, a fan dancer's look. "You didn't shoot him!" says Tony, aghast. "It wasn't you!" She

can't believe Zenia has actually killed someone. No: she can't believe that a person sitting in front

of her, in a real room, in the real world, has actually killed someone. Such things happen offstage,

elsewhere; they are indigenous to the past. Here, in this California-coloured room with its mild

furniture, its neutrality, they would be anachronisms.

"Not me," says Zenia. "But I know who did."

She's lighting another cigarette, she's practically chain-smoking. The air around her is grey, and Tony is slightly dizzy. "The Israelis," she says. "Because of Iraq."

"Not the Israelis," says Zenia quickly. "That's a red herring. I was there, I was part of the set-up. I was only what you might call the messenger; but you know what happens to messengers:"

Tony does know. "Oh," she says. "Oh dear."

"My best chance," says Zenia eagerly, "is to tell everything to some newspaper. Absolutely everything! Then there won't be any point in killing me, right? Also I could make a buck, I won't

say that wouldn't be welcome. But nobody's going to believe me without proof. Don't worry, I've

got the proof, it's not in this city but it's on the way. So I figured I could just hole

496

up with you and West until my proof comes through. I know how it's coming, I know when. I'd be really quiet, I wouldn't need more than a sleeping bag, I could stay upstairs, in West's study . .

:'

Tony snaps to attention. The word West cracks across her mind: that's the key, that's what Zenia really wants, and how does Zenia know that West has a study, and that it's on the third

floor? She's never seen the inside of Tony's house. Or has she?

Tony stands up. Her legs are wobbling as if she's just been pulled back from a crumbling, cliff edge. How nearly she was taken in, again! The whole Gerry Bull story is nothing but a huge

he, a custom-designed whopper. Anyone could have cobbled such a thing together just by reading Jane's Defence Weekly and The Washington Post, and Zenia - knowing Tony's weaknesses,

her taste for new twists in weapons technology - must have done just that.

There is no vendetta, there is no them, nobody's after Zenia but the bill collector. What she wants is to break into Tony's castle, her armoured house, her one safe place, and extract West

from it as if he were a snail. She wants him fresh and wriggling, speared on the end of her fork.

"I don't think that will be possible," says Tony, trying to keep her voice even. "I think I should go now"

"You don't believe me, do you?" says Zenia. Her face has gone still. "Well, help yourself to some righteous indignation, you little snot. You always were the most awful two-faced hypocrite,

Tony. A smug dog-in-the-manger prune-faced little shit with megalomaniac pretensions.

You

think you have some kind of an adventurous mind, but spare me! At heart you're a coward, you

hole yourself up in that bourgeois playpen of yours with your warped little battle-scars collection,
you sit on poor West as if he's your very own fresh-laid fucking egg! I bet he's bored out of his skull, with nobody but you to stick his boring dick into! Jesus, it must be like fucking a gerbill!"

497

Zenia's suave velvet cloak has dropped away; underneath is raw brutality. This is what a fist sounds like just as it smashes. Tony stands in the middle of the room, her mouth opening and closing. No sound comes out. The glass walls are closing in on her. Wildly she thinks about the gun in her purse, useless, useless: Zenia is right, she could never pull the trigger. All

her wars are hypothetical: She's incapable of real action.

But Zenia's expression is changing now, from angry to cunning. "You know, I've still got that term paper, the one you., forged. The Russian slave trade, wasn't it? Sounds like your brand

of displaced sadism, all those paper dead bodies. You're an armchair necrophiliac, you know

that? You should try a real dead body some time! Maybe I'll just pop that paper in the mail, send it to your precious History Department, stir up some shit for you, a tiny scandal! I'd like that! What price academic integrity?"

Tony feels the blunt objects whizzing past her head, the ground dissolving under her feet. The History Department would be pleased, it would be more than happy to discredit and disbar. She has colleagues but no allies. Ruin looms. Zenia is pure freewheeling malevolence;

she wants wreckage, she wants scorched earth, she wants broken glass. Tony makes an effort to

step back from the situation, to view it as if it's something that happened long ago; as if she and

Zenia are merely two small figures on a crumbling tapestry. But maybe this is what history is,

when it's really taking place: enraged people yelling at one another.

Forget the ceremony. Forget the dignity. Turn tail.

Tony walks unsteadily towards the door. "Goodbye," she says, as firmly as she can; but her voice, to her own ears, sounds like a squeak. She has a moment of panic with the lock. As she

scuttles out she expects to hear a feral growling, the thud of a heavy body against the door. But there's nothing.

She goes down in the elevator with the odd sensation that

498

she's going up, and meanders across the lobby as if drunk, bumping into the leather furniture.

There's a bunch of men checking in at the front desk. Overcoats, briefcases, must be a convention. In front of her looms the dried flower arrangement. She reaches out, watching her

left hand reaching, she breaks off a stem. Something dyed purple. She makes for the doors, but

finds herself at the wrong set, the ones facing the patio and the fountain. This is not the way out.

She's disoriented, turned around in space: the visual world looks jumbled: She likes to have things

clearly sorted in her head, but they are far from sorted.

She stuffs her filched sprig into her tote bag and aims for the front door, and wavers through it, and is finally outside, breathing in the cold air. There was so much smoke up there. She shakes

her head, trying to clear it. It's as if she's been asleep.

This is not how Tony tells it to Roz and Charis, exactly. She leaves out the part about the term

paper, although she conscientiously includes all the other bad things Zenia said about her. She

includes the gun, which has a certain serious weight, but leaves out the cordless drill, which does

not. She includes her own ignominious retreat. At the end of her account she produces the purple branch, as evidence.

"I must have been a little crazy," she says. "To think I could actually kill her."

"Not so crazy," says Roz. "To want to kill her, anyway. She does that to people. You were lucky to get out of there with both eyes, is what I think:"

Yes, thinks Tony, checking herself over. No obvious parts missing.

499

"Is the gun still in your purse?" Charis asks anxiously. She wouldn't want such a dangerous object colliding with her aura. "No," says Tony. "I went home after that, I put it back:" "Good plan," says Roz. "Now you go, Charis. I'll be last." Charis hesitates. "I don't know whether I should tell all of it," she says.

"Why not?" says Roz. "Tony did. I'm going to. Come on, we have no secrets!"

"Well," says Charis, "there's something in it you won't like." "Heck, I probably won't like any of it," says Roz jovially. Her voice is a little too loud. Charis is reminded of the earlier Roz, the

one who used to draw lipstick faces on her stomach and do the bump-and-grind, in the Common

Room at McClung Hall. Maybe Roz is getting overexcited.

"It's about Larry," says Charis unhappily.

Roz sobers up immediately. "It's okay, sweetie," she says. "I'm a big girl."

"Nobody is," says Charis. "Not really." She takes a deep breath.

After Zenia turned up at the Toxique that day, Charis spent about a week wondering what she

should do. Or rather she knew what she should do, but she didn't know how to go about doing

it. Also she needed to fortify herself spiritually, because an encounter with Zenia would be no

casual thing.

What she foresaw was the two of them locked in a stand-off: Zenia would be shooting out blood-red sparks of energy; her black hair would be crackling like burning fat, her eyeballs would

be cerise, lit up from within like a cat's in headlights. Charis on the other hand would be cool,

upright, surrounded by a gentle glow. Around her would be drawn a circle of white chalk, to keep

the evil vibrations at bay. She would raise her arms upwards, invoking the sky, and out of her

would come a voice like tinkling bells: What have you done with Billy?

500

And Zenia, writhing and twisting and resisting, but mastered by the superiority of Charis's positive force-field, would be compelled to tell.

Charis was not yet strong enough for this trial of strength. All by herself she might never be. She

would have to borrow some weapons from her friends. No, not weapons; merely armour, because she did not see herself attacking. She didn't want to hurt Zenia, did she? She just wanted

Zenia to return stolen property: Charis's life, the part with Billy in it. She wanted what was rightfully hers. That was all.

She went through some of the cardboard boxes in the small room upstairs, once a storeroom,

then Zenia's room, then August's nursery and playroom, now a spare room, for guests if any. It

was still August's room really; that was where she stayed on weekend visits. In the boxes were a

bunch of things Charis never used and had been meaning to recycle. She found a Christmas

present from Roz - a horrifying pair of gloves, leather ones with real fur cuffs, dead animal skin,

she could never wear those. From Tony she found a book, a book written by Tony herself. Four

Lost Causes. It was all about war and killing, septic topics, and Charis has never been able to get

into it.

She took the book and the gloves downstairs and put them on the small table under the main

window in the living room - where the sunlight would shine in on them and dispel their shadow

sides - and set her amethyst geode beside them, and surrounded them with dried marigold petals.

To this arrangement she added, after some thought, her grandmother's Bible, always a potent

object, and a lump of earth from her garden. She meditated on this collection for twenty minutes

twice a day.

What she wanted was to absorb the positive aspects of her friends, the things that were missing in herself. From Tony she wanted her mental clarity, from Roz her high-decibel metabolism and her planning abilities. And her smart mouth, because then if

501

Zenia started insulting Charis she would be able to think up something really neutralizing to say

back. From the garden earth she wanted underground power. From the Bible, what? Her grandmother's presence alone would do; her hands, her blue healing light. The marigold petals

and the amethyst geode were to contain these various energies, and to channel them. What she

had in mind was something concentrated, like a laser beam.

At work, Shanita notices that Charis is more absent-minded than usual. "Something bothering

you?" she says.

"Well, sort of," says Charis. "You want to do the cards?"

They are busy designing the interior for the new store. Or rather Shanita is designing it, and Charis is admiring the results. In the window there will be a large banner made of brown paper

with the store name done on it in crayon, "like kids' writing," says Shanita: Scrimpers. At either

end of the banner will be an enormous bow, also of brown paper, with packing-twine

streamers

coming out of it. "The idea is, everything needs to look totally basic," says Shanita. "Sort of homemade. You know, affordable." She's going to sell the hand-rubbed maple display cabinets

and have different ones made out of raw boards, with the nails showing. The orange-crate look,

she calls it. "We can keep some of the rocks and herbal goop, but we'll put that stuff at the back,

not in the window. Luxury is not our middle name:" Shanita is busy ordering fresh stock items:

little kits for making seedling-transplanting pots out of recycled newspaper, other kits for pasting

together your own Christmas cards out of cut-up magazines, and yet other card kits involving

pressed flowers and shrink wrap that you do with a hair dryer. Kitchenwaste composters with

organic wooden lids are an item; also, needlepoint kits for cushion covers, with eighteenth-century flowers on them, a fortune if you buy them already made. Also coffee grinders that work

by hand, beautiful wooden ones with

502

a drawer for the ground coffee. Minor electrical kitchen items, says Shanita, are no longer the

rage. Elbow grease is back. "What we need is stuff that makes stuff you'd otherwise have to pay a

lot more for," says Shanita. "Saving, is our theme. God, I know this junk backwards, been doing

it all my life. Thing is, nobody ever told me what you can make out of a million rubber bands."

She's decided to change their outfits, too: instead of the flowered pastels they'll be wearing canvas carpenter's aprons, in beige, and square caps made of folded brown paper. A

pencil stuck

behind the ear will complete the look. "Like we mean business," says Shanita.

Despite the admiration she's giving out, because all creativity should be supported and this is

certainly creative, Charis isn't sure she'll fit in. It will be a tight squeeze, but she'll have to give it a

try, because what other jobs are out there, especially for her? She might not even be able to get a

job filing; not that she wants one, she doesn't consider the alphabet to be an accurate way of

classifying things. If she stays she'll have to be more forceful. though; she'll have to seize hold.

Get a grip. Actively sell. Shanita says that service and competitive pricing are the watchwords of

the future. That, and keeping down the overheads. At least they don't have debt. "Thank God I

never borrowed a lot," she says. "Banks wouldn't lend it to me, is why."

"Why wouldn't they?" says Charis.

Shanita tosses her hair - worn hanging down today in a single long shining curl - and gives her

a scornful glance. "Three guesses," she says.

They take a work break in the afternoon and Shanita makes them some Lemon Refresher from

their stockroom and lays out the cards for Charis. "Big event, coming up soon," she says.

"What

I see is - your card is the Queen of Cups, right? It's the High Priestess crossing you. Does this

mean a thing?"

503

"Yes," says Charis. "Will I win?"

"What is this win?" says Shanita, smiling at her. "That's the first time I ever heard that word from you! Maybe it's time you started saying it:" She peers at the cards, lays down a few more.

"Looks something like winning," she says. "Anyway, you don't lose. But! There's a death.

Just

no way around it."

"Not Augusta!" says Charis. She's trying to see for herself the Tower; the Queen of Swords, the Magician, the Fool. But cards are a thing she's never been able to do.

"No, no, nowhere near her," says Shanita. "This is an older person. Older than her, I mean.

Related to you somehow, though. You are not going to see this death happen, but you're going

to be the one finding it out."

Charis is dismayed. Billy, it must be. She will go to see Zenia, and Zenia will tell her that Billy is dead. That's what she's always dreaded. But it will be better than not knowing.

There's a

good side to it, as well, because when it's her own turn to make the transition and she finds herself in the dark tunnel, in the cave, on the boat, and sees the light up ahead of her, it will be

Billy's voice she will hear first. He will be the one helping her, on the other side. They will be together, and he wouldn't be able to meet her like that if he hadn't died first.

It helps her, to know about the High Priestess crossing her. Also it fits, because now, finally, she's come to the chosen day, the right day to confront Zenia. She realized it as soon as she got

up, as soon as she stuck her daily pin into the Bible. It picked out Revelations Seventeen, the

chapter about the Great Whore: And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked

with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of

her fornication: And upon her forehead was written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF

HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

504

Behind Charis's closed eyelids the form took shape, the outline - crimson around the edges,

with scintillations of diamond-hard light. She couldn't see the face; though who else could it be

but Zenia?

"That's why I thought it was such a - well, so right," says Charis to Tony.

"That what was?" says Tony patiently.

"What you said. About Project Babylon. I mean, it couldn't just be a coincidence, could it?"

Tony opens her mouth to say that it could be, but shuts it again because Roz has given her a

nudge under the table. "Go on," says Roz.

Charis wades through the city, breathing airborne sludge. Past the BamBoo Club with its hot-

coloured Caribbean graphics, past Zephyr with its shells and crystals, a place where she usually browses, but today she pushes past it with hardly a look, past the Dragon Lady comic book shop, hurrying because she has a deadline. It's her lunch break. She doesn't usually take much time for lunch because lunchtime is the busiest time, but they've closed the store for a few days while the new counters and the brownpaper bows are being put in place, so today she can make an exception. She's asked Shanita for an extra half-hour; she'll make it up by staying later, some day after they've reopened. That will give her time to get to the Arnold Garden Hotel, to see Zenia and ask what she needs to ask, to extract the answer. Supposing Zenia is at the hotel, of course. She could always be out.

When she was getting dressed this morning, washing herself in her drafty bathroom, it occurred to Charis that although she knew the name of the hotel she didn't know the room number. She could always go to the hotel and poke around, walk up and down the corridors feeling the doorknobs; perhaps she would be able to pick up the electrical currents by touching the metal, 505

sense the presence of Zenia through her fingertips behind the right door. But the hotel would be full of people, and those other people would create static. She could so easily make a mistake.

Then it came to her during the ferry ride to the mainland that there was one person who would be sure to know what room Zenia was staying in. Roz's son Larry would know, because

Charis had seen the two of them go into the hotel together.

"This is the part I didn't want to tell you," says Charis to Roz. "That day at the Toxique? I waited

in the Kafay Nwar, across the street. I saw them come out. I followed them. Zenia and Larry." "You followed them?" says Roz, as if somebody else has followed them too, and she knows who.

"I just wanted to ask her about Billy," says Charis. Roz pats her hand. "Of course you did!" she

says. "I saw them kissing, on the street," says Charis, apologetically. "It's okay, baby," says Roz.

"Don't worry about me:" "Charis!" says Tony, with admiration. "You're a lot more cunning than

I thought!" The idea of Charis tiptoeing around behind Zenia's back fills her with pleasure, because it's so unlikely. Whoever else Zenia might have suspected of shadowing her, it sure as hell wouldn't have been Charis.

When Charis arrived at the store that morning, and after Shanita had gone out to pick up some

small change from the bank, she called Roz's house. If anyone answered at all it would be Larry,

because by this time the twins would be at school and Roz would be at work. She was right, it was Larry.

"Hello, Larry, it's Aunt Charis." she said. She felt stupid calling herself Aunt Charis, but it was

a custom Roz had begun when the kids were little and it had never been abandoned.

"Oh, hi, Aunt Charis," said Larry. He sounded half asleep. "Mom's at work:"

"Well, but it was you I wanted to talk to," said Charis. "I'm

506

looking for Zenia. You know, Zenia, maybe you remember her, from when you were little:'

(How

little had Larry been? she wonders. Not that little. How much had Roz ever told him, about

Zenia? She hopes not much.) "We were all at university together. I'm supposed to meet her

at the

Arnold Garden Hotel, but I've lost the room number." This was a big lie; she felt guilty about it,

and at the same time resentful towards Zenia for putting her in such a position. That was the thing about Zenia: she dragged you down to her own level.

There was a long pause. "Why ask me?" Larry said finally, guardedly.

"Oh," said Charis, playing up her usual vagueness, "she knows what a bad memory I have!

She knows I'm not the best organizer. She said if I lost it, to call you. She said you'd know.

I'm

sorry if I woke you up," she added.

"That was pretty dumb of her," said Larry. "I'm not her answering service. Why don't you just phone the hotel?" This was strangely rude, for Larry. As a rule he was more polite.

"I would have," said Charis, "but, you know, her last name isn't the same as it used to be and

I'm afraid I've forgotten the new one." This is a guess - the new last name - but it's the right guess. Tony once said that Zenia probably had a different name every year. Roz said, No,

every

month, she probably subscribed to the Name-of-the-Month Club.

"She's in 1409," Larry said sulkily.

"Oh, just let me write that down," said Charis. "Fourteenoh-nine?" She wanted to sound as dithery and forgetful as possible; as much like an aging feather-brained biddy, as least like a

a

threat. She didn't want Larry phoning Zenia, and warning her.

The significance of the room number does not escape her. Hotels, she knows, never number the

thirteenth floor, but it exists anyway. The fourteenth floor is really the thirteenth. Zenia is on the

thirteenth floor. But the bad luck of that may

507

be balanced by the good luck of nine, because nine is a Goddess number. But the bad luck will

attach itself to Zenia and the good luck to Charis, because Charis is pure in heart - or she's trying to be - and Zenia is not. Calculating in her head and clothing herself with light, Charis

reaches the Arnold Garden Hotel, and walks under the intimidating awning and in through the

glittering brass-trimmed glass doors as if there is nothing to it.

She stands in the lobby for a moment, catching her breath, getting her bearings. It's not a bad lobby. Although there's a lot of murdered-animal furniture, she's pleased to see that there's

there's

a sort of vegetation altarpiece as well: dried flowers. And through the plate glass doors at the

back there's a courtyard with a fountain, though the fountain isn't turned on. She likes to see urban space moving in a more natural direction.

Then all of a sudden she has a discouraging thought. What if Zenia has no soul? There must be people like that around, because there are more humans alive on the earth right now than have ever lived, altogether, since humans began, and if souls are recycled then there must be some people alive today who didn't get one, sort of like musical chairs. Maybe Zenia is like that:

soulless. Just a sort of shell. In this case, how will Charis be able to deal with her?

This idea is paralyzing. In its grip Charis stands stock-still in' the middle of the lobby. But she

can't turn back now. She closes her eyes and visualizes her altar, with the gloves and the earth

and the Bible, calling upon its powers; then she opens them and waits for an omen. In one corner of the lobby there's a grandfather clock. It's almost noon. Charis watches until both hands

of the clock are aligned, pointing straight up. Then she gets onto the elevator. With every floor

she passes, her heart beats harder.

On the fourteenth floor, really the thirteenth, she stands outside

508 .

1409. A reddish grey light oozes out through the crack under the door, pushing her backwards

with palpable force. She puts her palm against the wood of the door, which vibrates in silent menace. It's like a train going by at a distance, or a slow explosion far away. Zenia must be in

there.

Charis knocks.

After a moment - during which she can feel Zenia's eye on her, through the glass peephole - Zenia opens the door. She's wearing one of the hotel bathrobes, and has her hair wrapped in a

towel. She must have been taking a shower. Even with the terry-cloth turban on her head she is

shorter than Charis remembers. This is a relief

"I was wondering when you'd get here," she says. "You were?" says Charis. "How did you know?"

"Larry told me you were on your way," says Zenia. "Come in." Her voice is flat; her face is weary. Charis is surprised at how old she looks. Maybe it's because she isn't wearing any makeup.

If Charis didn't know better by now than to leap to such conclusions, she would think Zenia is ill.

The room is a mess.

"Just a minute," says Tony. "Go over that part again. You were there at noon and the room was a mess?"

"She was always messy when she lived with me, that time, on the Island," says Charis. "She never helped with the dishes or anything."

"But when I was there earlier, everything was really neat," says Tony. "The bed was made. Everything."

"Well, it wasn't," says Charis. "There were pillows on the floor, the bed was a wreck. Dirty coffee cups, potato chips, clothes lying around. There was broken glass on the coffee table, the

rug too. It was like there'd been a party all night."

"You sure it was the same room?" says Tony. "Maybe she lost her temper and smashed a few glasses:"

509

"She must have gone back to bed," says Roz. "After you left." They all consider that. Charis goes on:

The room is a mess. The flowered drapes are pulled half shut, as if they've been closed recently

against the light. Zenia steps over the items strewn on the floor, sits down on the sofa, and picks up a cigarette from the dozen or so that are scattered around in the broken glass on the

coffee table: "I know I shouldn't smoke," she murmurs, as if to herself, "but it hardly matters, now. Sit down, Charis. I'm glad you've come."

Charis sits down in the armchair. This is not the charged confrontation she's been imagining. Zenia isn't trying to evade her; if anything, she seems mildly pleased that Charis is

here. Charis reminds herself that what she needs is to find out about Billy, where he is, whether

he's alive or dead. But it's hard to concentrate on Billy; she can scarcely remember what Billy

used to look like, whereas Zenia is sitting right here in the room. It's so strange to see her in the

flesh, at last.

Now she's smiling wanly. "You were so good to me," she says. "I've always meant to apologize for going away like that, without saying goodbye. It was very thoughtless of me.

But I

was too dependent on you, I was letting you try to cure me instead of putting the energy into it

myself I just needed to get off somewhere, be alone so I could focus. It was - well, I got a sort

of message, you know?"

Charis is amazed. Maybe she's been misjudging Zenia, all these years. Or maybe Zenia has

changed. People can change, they can choose, they can transform themselves. It's a deep belief

of hers. She isn't sure what to think.

"You didn't really have cancer," she says finally. She doesn't intend it as an accusation. Only she needs to be sure.

"No," says Zenia. "Not exactly. I was sick, though. It was a spiritual illness. And I'm sick now" She pauses, but when Charis doesn't ask, she says, "That's why I'm back here - for the

health

510

care system. I couldn't afford treatment anywhere else. They've told me I'm dying. They've given

me six months."

"Oh, that's too bad," says Charis. She's looking at Zenia's edges, to see what colour her light

is, but she's not getting a reading. "Is it cancer?"

"I don't know if I should tell you," says Zenia

"It's okay," says Charis, because what if Zenia is telling the truth, this time? What if she really

is dying? She does have a greyish tinge, around the eyes. The least Charis can do is listen:

"Well, actually, I've got AIDS," says Zenia and sighs. "It's really stupid. I had a bad habit, a few years back. I got it off a dirty needle."

Charis gasps. This is terrible! What about Larry-then? Will he get AIDS, too? Roz! Roz! Come quickly! But what could Roz do?

"I wouldn't mind spending a little time, somewhere peaceful," says Zenia. 'Just to get my head in order, before, you know. Some place like the Island:'

Charis feels the familiar tug, the old temptation. Maybe there's no hope for Zenia's body, but the body isn't the only factor. She could have Zenia over to stay with her, the way she did before.

She could help her to move towards the transition, she could put light around her, they could meditate together. . .

"Or maybe I'll just check myself out," says Zenia softly. "Pills or something. I'm doomed anyway. I mean, why wait around?" In Charis's throat the familiar sentiments bubble up. Oh no,

you must try, you must try for the positive ... She opens her mouth to issue the invitation, Yes, come,

but something stops her. It's the look Zenia is giving her: an intent look, head on one side. A bird eyeing a worm.

"Why did you pretend to me, about the cancer?" she says. Zenia laughs. She sits up briskly. She must know that she's lost, she must know that Charis won't believe her, about having AIDS.

"Okay," she says. "We might as well get this over. Let's just say I wanted you to let me into your house, and it seemed the quickest way."

"That was mean," says Charis. "I believed you! I was very concerned about you! I tried to save you!"

"Yes," says Zenia cheerfully. "But don't worry, I suffered too. If I'd had to drink one more glass of that foul cabbage juice it would've finished me off. You know what I did when I hit the

mainland? First chance I got, I went out and had a big plate of fries and a nice raw juicy steak. I

would've inhaled it, I was so starved for red meat!"

"But you really were sick, with something," Charis says hopefully. Auras don't lie, and Zenia's

was diseased. Also, she doesn't want to think that every single one of those vegetables went to waste.

"There's a trick you ought to know about," says Zenia. "Just cut out all the vitamin C from your diet and you get the early symptoms of scurvy. Nobody's expecting scurvy, not in the twentieth century, so they don't spot it:"

"But I fed you lots of vitamin C!" says Charis.

"Try sticking your finger down your throat," says Zenia. "Works wonders."

"But why?" says Charis helplessly. "Why did you?" She feels so defrauded - defrauded of her

own goodness, her own willingness to be of service. Such a fool.

"Because of Billy, naturally," Zenia says. "Nothing personal, you were merely the means I wanted to get close to him."

"Because you were in love with him?" says Charis. At least that would be understandable, at least there would be something positive about it, because love is a

positive force. She can understand being in love with Billy. Zenia laughs. "You are such a dipstick romantic," she says. "By your age you ought to know better. No, I was not in love with Billy, though the sex was fun:" "Fun?" says Charis. In her experience, sex was never fun. It

512

was either nothing, or it was painful; or it was overwhelming, it put you at risk; which is why she's avoided it all these years. But not fun.

"Yeah, it may come as a surprise," says Zenia, "that some people think it's fun. Not you, I realize that. From what Billy said, you wouldn't know fun if you fell over it. He was so hungry for

a little good sex that he jumped me almost as soon as I walked into that pathetic shack of yours.

What do you think we were doing when you were over on the mainland teaching that tedious yoga class? Or when you were downstairs cooking our breakfasts, or outside feeding those brain-

damaged hens?"

Charis knows she must not cry. Zenia may have been sex, but Charis was love, for Billy.

"Billy

loved me," she says uncertainly. Zenia smiles. Her energy level is up now, her body's humming

like a broken toaster. "Billy didn't love you," she says. "Wake up! You were a free meal-ticket! He

was eating off you even though he had money of his own; he was peddling hash, but I guess that

one went right past you. He thought you were a cow, if you must know. He thought you were so

stupid you'd give birth to an idiot. He thought you were a stunned cunt, to be exact."

"Billy would never say a thing like that," says Charis. She feels as if a net of hot sharp wires is being pulled tight around her, the hairline burns cutting into her skin.

"He thought having sex with you was like porking a turnip," Zenia goes on relentlessly.

"Now listen to me, Charis. This is for your own good. I know you, and I can guess how you've

been spending your time. Dressing up in hair shirts. Playing hermits. Mooning around after Billy. He's just an excuse for you; he lets you avoid your life. Give him up. Forget about him."

"I can't forget about him," says Charis in a tiny voice. How can she just sit here and let Zenia tear Billy to shreds? The memory of Billy. If that goes, what does she have left of all that

time? Nothing. A void.

513

"Read my lips, he wasn't worth it," says Zenia. She sounds exasperated. "You know what I was really there for? To turn him around. And, believe me, he was easy to turn."

"Turn?" says Charis. She can hardly concentrate; she feels as if she's being slapped in the face,

on one side of the face and then the other. Turn the other cheek. But how often?

"Turn, as in turncoat," says Zenia, explaining as if to a child. "Billy turned informer. He went back to the States and ratted on all his incendiary-minded little friends, the ones who were still

there:"

,

"I don't believe you," says Charis.

"I don't care whether you believe me or not," says Zenia. "It's true, all the same. He traded his

pals in to get himself off the hook and make a bit of cash. They paid him off with a new identity and a sordid little job as a third-rate spy. He wasn't very good at it, though. Last time I ran into him, in Baltimore or somewhere, he was pretty disillusioned. A broken-down acidhead and whining drunk, and bald as well."

"You did that to him," Charis whispers. "You ruined him." Golden Billy.

"Bullshit," says Zenia. "That's what he said, but I hardly twisted his arm! I just told him the choices. Billy's choice was either that, or something quite a lot worse. In the real world most people choose to save their own skins. It's something you can count on, nine times out of ten."

"You were with the Mounties," says Charis. This is the hardest thing to believe - it's so incongruous. Zenia on the side of law and order.

"Not quite," says Zenia. "I've always been a free agent. Billy was just a sort of opportunity I saw. Those sanctimonious liberal help-a-dodger groups were infiltrated up to their armpits, and I

had connections so I got a peek at the files. I remembered you from McClung Hall - they had a

file on you, too, you know, though I told them why waste the paper, not to mention the 514

taxpayers' hard-earned money, it was like having a file on ajar of jelly - and I was counting on it

that you'd remember me. It wasn't hard to get myself a black eye and turn up in your yoga class.

Hell, you did the rest! Now, if you don't mind, I have to get dressed, I've got things to do. Billy lives in Washington, by the way. If you want to stage a joyful reunion with him and his long-lost

daughter, I'd be happy to give you his address:'

"I don't think so," says Charis. Her legs are shaking; she's afraid, for a minute, to stand up. Billy lies shattered in her head. Wipe the tape, she tells herself, but the tape won't wipe. She real-

izes that she has no weapons, no weapons that will work against Zenia. All Charis has on her side

is a wish to be good, and goodness is an absence, it's the absence of evil; whereas Zenia has the real story.

Zenia shrugs. "Up to you," she says. "If I were you, I'd scratch him right off my list."

"I don't think I can," says Charis.

"Suit yourself," says Zenia. She stands up and walks to the closet and starts checking through her dresses.

There is one more thing Charis wants to know, and she summons all of her strength to ask it.

"Why did you kill my chickens?" she says. "They weren't hurting anyone:"

"I did not kill your fucking chickens," says Zenia, turning around. She sounds amused. "Billy killed them. He enjoyed - doing it, too. Tiptoed out before dawn when you were still in dreamland, and slit their throats with the bread knife. Said it was doing them a favour, the way

you kept them in that filthy hen slum of yours. But the truth is, he hated them. Not only that, he had a good laugh, thinking about you going into the henhouse and finding them: Sort of like a

practical joke. He got a kick out of that."

Inside Charis, something breaks. Rage takes her over. She wants to squeeze Zenia,

squeeze

her and squeeze her by the neck until Charis's life, her own life that she has imagined, all of 515

the good things about her life that Zenia has drunk, come welling out like water from a sponge.

The violence of her own reaction dismays her but she's lost control. She feels her body filled and surrounded with a white-hot light; wings of flame shoot out from her.

Then she is over behind the flowered drapes, near the door to the balcony, outside her own body, watching. The body stands there. Someone else is in charge of it now. It's Karen.

Charis

can see her, a dark core, a shadow, with long raggedy hair, grown big now, grown huge.

She's

been waiting all the time, all these years, for a moment like this, a moment when she could get

back into Charis's body and use it to murder. She moves Charis's hands towards Zenia, her

hands that flicker with a blue light; she is irresistibly strong, she rushes at Zenia like a silent wind, she pushes her backwards, right through the balcony door, and broken glass scatters like

ice. Zenia is purple and red and flashing like jewels but she is no match for shadowy Karen. She lifts Zenia up - Zenia is light, she's hollow, she's riddled with disease and rotten, she's insubstantial as paper - and throws her over the balcony railing; she watches her flutter down,

down from the tower, and hit the edge of the fountain, and burst like an old squash. Hidden behind the flowered drapes, Charis calls plaintively: No! No! Not bloodshed, not the dogs eating the pieces in the courtyard, she doesn't want that. Does she?

"Anyway, it's all ancient history," says Zenia conversationally. Charis is back in her own body,

she's in control of it, she's moving it towards the door. Nothing has happened after all.

Surely

nothing has happened. She turns and looks at Zenia. Black lines are radiating out from her, like

the filaments of a spider web. No. Black lines are converging on her, targeting her; soon she

will be ensnared. In the centre of them her soul flutters, a pale moth. She does have a soul after all.

516

Charis gathers up all her strength, all her inner light; she calls on it for what she has to do, because it will take a lot of effort. Whatever Zenia has done, however evil she has been, she

needs help. She needs help from Charis, on the spiritual plane.

Charis's mouth opens. "I forgive you," is what she hears herself saying.

Zenia laughs angrily. "Who do you think you are?" she says. "Why should I give a flying fuck whether you forgive me or not? Stuff your forgiveness! Get a man! Get a life!"

Charis sees her life the way Zenia must see it: an empty cardboard box, overturned by the side

of the road, with nobody in it. Nobody worth mentioning. This is somehow the most hurtful thing of all.

She invokes her amethyst geode, closes her eyes, sees crystal. "I have a life," she says.

She

straightens her shoulders and turns the doorknob, holding back tears.

Not until she is walking unsteadily across the lobby towards the front door does it cross Charis's mind that maybe Zenia was lying. Maybe she was lying about Billy, about the

chickens,
about everything. She has lied to Charis before, and just as convincingly. Why wouldn't she
be
doing it now?

LIII

Roz leans sideways and gives Charis a one-armed hug. "Of course she was lying," she
says. "Billy
wouldn't say such a thing." What does she know from Billy? Not a shred, she never met him,
but
she's willing to give him the benefit of the doubt, because what does it cost, and anyway
she
wants to lighten things up. "Zenia's just malicious. She says stuff like that just for the heck of
it.

She only wanted to bother you."

"But why?" says Charis, on the verge of tears. "Why would

517

she, why did she say that? She was so negative. It really hurt. Now I don't know what to
think."

"V's okay, babe," says Roz, giving Charis another squeeze. "The heck with her! We won't
invite her to our birthday parties; will we?"

"For heaven's sake," says Tony, because Roz always goes too far and Tony is finding this
scene much too infantile for her taste. "This is critical!"

"Yes," says Roz, getting a grip, "I know it is." "I do have a life," says Charis,
blinking wet eyes.

"You have a rich inner life," says Tony firmly. "More than most." She digs into her bag, finds
a crumpled tissue, hands it to Charis. Charis blows her nose.

"Now, here's me," says Roz. "Ms. Mature Fuller Figure meets the Queen of the Night. On
the

enjoyment scale, it didn't get ten out of ten."

Roz is in her office, pacing, pacing. On her desk is a stack of files, project files and
charitable-

donation files both, the Livers, the Kidneys, the Lungs, and the Hearts all clamouring for
atten-

tion, not to mention the Bag Ladies and the Battered Wives, but they will all have to wait,

because in order to give you have to make, it doesn't grow on trees. She's supposed to be
thinking about the Rubicon project, as presented by Lookmakers:° Lipsticks for the Nineties
is the

concept they're proposing; which Boyce says translates as Oral Glues for Nonagenarians.

But

Roz can't get her teeth into it, she's too preoccupied. Preoccupied? Frenzied! Her body's a
hormone-fuelled swelter, the inside of her head's like a car wash, all those brushes whirring
around, suds flying, vision obscured. Zenia's on the prowl, and God knows where! She might
be

climbing up the side of this building even now, with suckers attached to the bottoms of her
feet

like a fly.

Roz has eaten all the Mozart Balls, she's smoked every single

518

cigarette, and one of Boyce's drawbacks, his only one really, is that he doesn't smoke, so
she can't

bum a fag off him, oops, pardon the pun; his lungs at any rate are pure as the driven. Maybe
the

new downstairs receptionist - Mitzi, Bambi? - might have a pack tucked away; she could

call

down, but how demeaning, Ms. Boss clawing the walls for a cig.

She doesn't want to leave the building right now, because it's about time for Harriet the detective

to call. Roz has asked her to call every afternoon at three to fill her in on progress. "We're narrowing it down," was all Harriet said for the first few days. But yesterday she said,

"There's

two possibilities. One's at the King Eddie, the other one's at the Arnold Garden. The people we've been able to - the people who have kindly agreed to identify the photo - each one of them

is sure it's got to be her." "What makes you think you have to choose?" said Roz. "Pardon?" said

Harriet.

"Bet you anything she's got rooms at both of those hotels," said Roz. "It would be just like her! Two names, two rooms." Ald_foxes dig back doors. "What're the room numbers?"

"Let us do a little more checking," said Harriet cautiously. "I'll let you know" She could evidently visualize an undesirable situation: Roz barging into some stranger's room, hurling fur-

niture and accusations and breathing fire, and Harriet getting hit with a lawsuit for having given

her the wrong room number. `

So now Roz is on tenterhooks, whatever those are. Something her mother knew about, because it

was her expression. She makes a mental note to ask Boyce about it, and shakes herself, and sits

down at her desk, and opens up the Lipsticks for the Nineties file that Boyce has annotated for her.

She likes the business plan, she likes the projections; but Boyce is right, the name itself is wrong,

because they'll want to expand the line beyond lipsticks: An eye shadow that would also shrink

puffy hds would be a breakthrough, she'd buy that, and if she would

519

buy a thing it's a cinch that a lot of other women would, as well, if the price is right. For another

thing, the Nineties has to go. The nineties have not been great news so far, even though there's

only been a year of them, so why underline the fact that everyone's stuck in them?

No, Roz is agreed - reading Boyce's tidy notes in the margins of the proposal, he has real talent, that boy - that they should opt for time travel, some history, the big H, via the river names

tiein. Women always find it easier to visualize themselves as having a romantic fling of it in some

other age, an age before flush toilets and jacuzzis and electric coffee grinders, an age in which a

bunch of tubercular, prematurely wrinkled servants would have had to wash the men's undershorts, if any, by hand, and empty the slop pots and heat up the water in big cauldrons, in

filthy ratinfested kitchens, and trample the coffee beans underfoot like grapes. Give Roz appliances any day. Appliances with warranties, and dependable household help that comes in

twice a week.

As for the ads, she wants a lot of lace in them. Lace, and a wind machine, to blow the hair

around for that burning-of-Charleston dramatic-crisis look. It will help to shoot the models on an angle, with the camera slanted up. Statuesque, monumental, as long as you can't see up their

nostrils, which is the problem Roz has always had with bronze heroes on horseback. She's thought of another river name too, another colour: Athabasca. A sort of bronzed pink.

Frostbite

crossed with exposure. How you get in the North without sunblock.

The phone rings and Roz practically falls on it. "Harriet," says Harriet. "It's the Arnold Garden

for sure, Room 1409. I went there myself and pretended to be a chambermaid with towels.

No

doubt about it."

"Great," says Roz, and jots down the room number. "There's one other thing you ought to know," says Harriet. "Before you rush in:"

520

"What, where angels fear to tread?" says Roz impatiently. "What is it?"

"She appears to be having an affair, or something, with ... well, with a much younger man.

He's been with her in her room almost every day, according to our source:"

Why is Harriet sounding so coy? thinks Roz. "That wouldn't surprise me," she says. "Zenia would rob anything, cradles included. As long as he's rich:"

"He is," says Harriet. "So to speak. Or he will be:" There's a hesitation.

"Why are you telling me this?" says Roz. "I don't care who she's screwing!"

"You asked me to find out everything," says Harriet reproachfully. "I don't know quite how to put it. The young man in question appears to be your son:"

"What?" says Roz.

After hanging up, she grabs her purse and hits the elevator and then the sidewalk at a fast trot,

the nearest she can get to a run, what with her wicked shoes. She makes it to the nearest Becker's and buys three packs of du Mauriers and tears one open with trembling fingers, and

lights up so fast she practically sets fire to her hair. She'll kill Zenia, she'll kill her! The effrontery, the brass, the consummate had taste, to go after small helpless Larry Larry son of

Mitch, after doing away with his father! Well, as good as doing away. Pick on somebody your

own size! And Larry, a sitting duck, poor baby; so lonely, so scrambled. Probably he remembers Zenia from when he was fifteen; probably he had a jerk-off crush on her, back then. Probably he thinks she's glamorous, and warm and understanding. Zenia has a good line

in the glamour and understanding department. Plus, she'll tell him a few hard-luck stories of her own and he'll think they're both orphans of the storm together. Roz can't stand it!

Smoke percolates through her, and after a while she feels a

521

little calmer. She walks back to the office, her head sizzling slowly. What exactly, what the fuck, is

she supposed to do now? She knocks on Boyce's door. "Boyce? Mind if I pick your brain for a

minute?" she says.

Boyce stands up courteously and offers her a chair. "Ask, and it shall be given you," he says.

"God."

"Don't I know it," says Roz, "but I haven't been getting such great results from God lately, in

the answer department." She sits down, crosses her legs, and takes the cup of coffee Boyce provides. The part in his hair is so straight it's almost painful, as if done with a knife. His tie has tiny ducks on it. "Let me put a theoretical case to you," she says. "I'm all ears," says Boyce. "Is this about Oral Glues?" "No," says Roz. "It's a story. Once upon a time there was a woman who was married to a guy who used to fool around." "Anyone I know?" says Boyce. "The guy, I mean." "With other women," says Roz firmly. "Well, this woman put up with it for the sake of the kids, and anyway these things never lasted long because the other women were just wind-up sex toys, or that's what the man kept saying. According to him our heroine was the real thing, the apple of his eyes, the fire in his fireplace, and so on. Then one day, along comes this bimbo - excuse me, this person about the same age as the woman in question, only, I have to admit it, quite a lot better-looking; though between you and me and the doorpost her tits were fake." "She walks in beauty, like the blight," says Boyce with sympathy. "Byron:" "Exactly," says Roz. "She was smart, as well, but if she was a guy you'd have to call her a prick. I mean, there is no female name for it, because bitch doesn't even begin to cover it! She tells some story about being a half-Jewish war orphan rescued from the Nazis, and our heroine, who is all heart, falls for it and gets her a job; and Ms. Dirigible-chest pretends to be our pal's grateful buddy, and gives the husband the cold shoulder, implying by her body language that she finds him less attractive than a lawn dwarf; which turned out to be the ultimate truth, in the end. "Meanwhile our two girl chums have a lot of cosy networking lunches together, discussing world affairs and the state of the business. Then the lady starts having it off with Mr. Susceptible, behind Ms. Numskull's back. For Ms. Lollapalooza it's just a thing - worse, a tactic - but for him it's the real item, the grand passion at last. I don't know how she did it, but she did. Considering it was him, and thousands before her had failed, she was nothing short of brilliant:" "Genius is an infinite capacity for causing pain," says Boyce sombrely. "Right," says Roz. "So she cons everyone into putting her in charge of the business in question, which is a medium-hefty enterprise, and before you know it she's moved in with Mr. Sticky Fingers, and they're living together in the Designer Lovenest of the Year, leaving the missus to gnaw her stricken little heart out, which she does. But passion wanes, on Vampira's part, not his, when he finds out she's been having nooners with some stud on a motorcycle and fusses up about it. So she forges a few cheques - using his signature, copied no doubt from countless drool-covered mash notes - and disappears with the cash. Does that cool his ardour?"

Do chickens have tits? He goes raving off after her as if his pants were plugged into the light socket."

"I know the plot," says Boyce. "Happens in all walks of life." "Ms. Lightfingers disappears," says Roz, "but next thing you know, she turns up in a metal soup can. Seems she's met with a nasty accident, and now she's cat food. She gets planted in the cemetery, not that I - not that my friend shed any tears - and Mr. Sorrowful comes creeping back to wee wifey, who stands on her hind legs and refuses to take him in. Well, can you blame

523

her? I mean, enough is enough. So, instead of getting his head shrunk, which was long overdue, or picking up some new little sex gadget, as he has done many times before, what does he do?

He's dying of love, not for Mrs. Domestic but for Ms. Fiery Loins. So he goes out on his boat in

a hurricane and gets himself drowned. Maybe he even jumped. Who knows?"

"A waste," says Boyce. "Bodies are so much nicer alive:" "There's more," says Roz. "It turns

out this woman wasn't dead after all. She was just fooling. She turns up again, and this time she

gets her hooks into the only son - the one and only well-beloved son - I mean, can you imagine?

She must be fifty! She gets her hooks into the son of the woman she ripped off and the man she

as good as killed!"

"This is turgid," Boyce murmurs.

"Listen, I didn't write the plot," says Roz. "I'm just telling you, and a literary criticism I don't need. What I want to know is - what would you do?"

"You're asking me?" Boyce says. "What would I do? First, I'd make sure she was really a woman. It could be a man in a dress:" "Boyce, this is serious," says Roz.

"I am serious," says Boyce. "But what you really mean is, what should you do. Right?"

"In a word," says Roz.

"Obsession is the better part of valour," says Boyce: "Shakespeare."

"Meaning?"

"You'll have to go and see her," Boyce sighs. "Have it out. Oh Roz, thou art sick. Have a scene. Shout and yell. Tell her what you think of her. Clear the, air; believe me, it's necessary.

Otherwise, the invisible worm that flies in the storm will find out thy bed of crimson joy, and its

dark secret love will thy life destroy. Blake."

"I guess so," says Roz. "I just don't trust myself, is all. Boyce, what is a tenterhook?"

524

"A wooden frame covered with hooks, on which cloth was stretched for drying," says Boyce.

"Not a lot of help," says Roz. "Though true," says Boyce.

Roz sets out for the Arnold Garden Hotel. She takes a taxi because she's too keyed up to drive.

She doesn't even need to ask at the desk, which is clogged with what look to her like travelling

salesmen; she just quick-steps through the deplorable lobby, with its tawdry retro leather sofas

and Canadian Woman spraypaint-it-yourself tacky flower arrangement circa 1984, and the view of the tatty little patio and City Hall Modern cement fountain visible through the glass doors, this is to garden as prepackaged microwave meals are to food, and straight into the plastic-leather-padded elevator.

All the time she's rehearsing: Wasn't one enough? You gonna kill my son, too? Get your claws o my child! She feels like a tigress, defending her young. Or this is what tigresses are rumoured to do.

I'll huff and I'll puff, she roars inwardly, and I'll blow your house down!

Except that Zenia was never much of a one for houses. Only for breaking into them.

At the back of her mind is another scenario: what happens when Larry finds out what she's done? He is, after all, twentytwo. That's well over the age of consent. If he wants to screw cheerleaders or St. Bernard dogs or aging vamps like Zenia, what business is it, really, of hers?

She pictures his glance of patient, exasperated contempt, and flinches.

Knock, knock, knock, she goes on Zenia's door. Just making a noise recoups her strength. Open up, you pig, you sow, and let me in!

And clickety-clack, here comes somebody. The door opens a crack. It's on the chain. "Who is it?" says the smoky voice of Zenia.

525

"It's me," says Roz. "It's Roz. You might as well let me in, because if you don't I'm just going to stand here and scream." Zenia opens the door. She's dressed to go out, in the same low-cut

black dress that Roz remembers from the Toxique. Her face is made up, her hair is loose, waving and coiling and uncoiling itself in restless tendrils around her head. There's a suitcase open on the bed.

"A suitcase?" says Tony. "I didn't see any suitcases:" "Me neither," says Charis. "Was the room tidy?"

"Fairly tidy," says Roz. "But this was later in the afternoon. After you were there. Most likely the maid had come:"

"What was in the suitcase?" says Tony. "Was she packing? Maybe she's planning to leave:" "It was empty," says Roz. "I looked."

"Roz!" says Zenia. "What a surprise! Come on in - you're looking terrific!"

Roz knows she is not looking terrific: anyway, looking terrific is what people say about women

her age who are not actually dead. Zenia, on the other hand, really is looking terrific. Doesn't she

ever age? thinks Roz bitterly. What kind of blood does she drink? Just one wrinkle, just a little one,

God; would it be so hard? Tell me again - why do the wicked prosper?

Roz does not beat about the bush. "What do you think you're up to, having a thing with Larry?" she says. "Don't you have any, any scruples at all?"

Zenia looks at her. "A thing? What a delicious idea! Did he tell you that?"

"He's been seen, going into your hotel room. More than once," says Roz.

Zenia smiles gently. "Seen? Don't tell me you've got that Hungarian following me around again. Roz, why don't you sit down? Have a drink or something. I never had anything against

526

you personally." She herself sits demurely down on the flowered sofa, as if there's nothing at all going on; as if they're two respectable matrons about to have afternoon tea. "Believe me, Roz.

My feelings for Larry are only maternal:"

"What do you mean, maternal?" says Roz. She feels stupid standing up, so she sits in the matching chair. Zenia is hunting for her cigarettes. She- finds the pack, shakes it: empty.

"Have

one of mine," says Roz reluctantly.

"Thanks," says Zenia. "I ran into him by accident, in the Toxique. He remembered me - well, he would, he was - what? fifteen? He wanted to talk to me about his father. So touching!

You

really haven't been very forthcoming on that subject with him, have you, Roz? A boy needs to

know something about his father; something good. Don't you think?"

"So, what exactly have you been telling him?" says Roz suspiciously.

"Nothing but the best," says Zenia. She lowers her eyes modestly. "I think it's sometimes in everyone's best interests to bend the truth a little, don't you? It doesn't cost me anything, and poor Larry does seem to want a father he can look up to."

Roz can hardly believe what she's hearing. In fact she doesn't believe it. There must be more,

and there is. "Of course, if this situation goes on much longer it might become more complicated," says Zenia. "I might forget, and tell a little too much of the truth. About what a

twisted

jerk poor Larry's father really was.

Roz sees red. She actually sees it, a red haze obscuring her eyes. It's one thing for her to criticize Mitch, but another thing for Zenia! "You used him," she says. "You cleaned him out, you sucked him dry, then you just threw him away! You're responsible for his death, you know.

He killed himself because of you. I don't think you're in any position to stand in judgment."

"You want to know?" says Zenia. "You really want to know? After I told him it wasn't going to work out, because he was just

527

too besotted - shit, I could hardly breathe, he was a control freak, I had no life of my own, he wanted to know what I had for breakfast, he wanted to come into the bathroom with me

every

time I needed to pee, I mean it! - he practically tried to kill me! I had the marks on my neck for

weeks; good thing I wasn't too squeamish to kick him in the nuts, as hard as I could, to make him

let go. Then he cried all over me; he wanted the two of us to make some stupid suicide pact, so

we could be together in death! Oh, fun! Fuck that, I told him! So don't blame me. I wash my hands:'

Roz can't stand hearing this, she can't stand it! Poor Mitch, reduced to that. An abject groveller.-"You could have helped him," she said. "He needed help!" Roz could have helped him

too, of course. She would have, if she'd known. Wouldn't she?

"Don't be a priss," says Zenia. "You should give me a medal for getting him off your back.

Mitch was a sick lech. What he wanted out of me was sexual twist - he wanted to be tied up, he

wanted me to dress up in leather underwear, and other stuff, stuff he would never ask you to

do

because he thought you were his angel wife. Men get like that after a certain age, but this was too

much. I can't tell you the half of it, it was so ridiculous!"

"You led him on," says Roz, who wants by this time to run out of the room. It's too humiliating for Mitch. It shrinks him too much. It's too painful.

"Women like you make me sick," says Zenia angrily. "You've always owned things. But you didn't own him, you know. He wasn't your God-given property! You think you had rights in him"

Nobody has any rights except what they can get!"

Roz takes a deep breath. Lose her temper and she loses the fight. "Maybe," she says. "But that

doesn't alter the fact that you ate him for breakfast:"

"The trouble with you, Roz," says Zenia, more gently, "is that you never gave the man any credit. You always saw him as a victim of women, just putty in their hands. You babied him.

528

Did it ever occur to you that Mitch was responsible for his actions? He made his own decisions,

and maybe those decisions didn't have much to do with me, or with you either. Mitch did what

he wanted to do. He took his chances."

"You stacked the deck," says Roz.

"Oh please," says Zenia. "It takes two to tango. But why fight about Mitch? Mitch is dead.

Let's get back to the main issue. I have a proposition for you: perhaps, for Larry's sake, I should

leave town. Larry wouldn't be the only reason - I'll be frank with you, Roz, I need to leave town

anyway. I'm in some danger here, so I'm asking you for old times' sake as well. But I can't afford it right now; I won't hide from you that things are getting very tight. I'd go like a shot if I only had, say, a plane ticket and some pocket money."

"You're trying to blackmail me," says Roz.

"Let's not call names," says Zenia. "I'm sure you see the logic."

Roz hesitates. Should she buy it, should she buy Zenia off? And what if she doesn't? What exactly is the threat? Larry is no longer a child; there's a lot he must have guessed, about Mitch.

"I don't think so," she says slowly. "I have a better proposition. How about you leave town anyway? I could still get you for embezzlement, you know. And there is this thing about chequeforging."

Zenia frowns. "Money is too important to you, Roz:" she says. "What I was really offering you was protection for yourself. Not for Larry. But you aren't worth protecting. Here's the real truth, then. Yes, I'm screwing Larry, but that's just a sideshow. Larry isn't primarily my lover, Larry is primarily my pusher. I'm surprised your inept private dick didn't figure that out, and I'm truly surprised you haven't figured it out yourself. You may not be pretty, but you used to be smart. Your mama's boy has been inflating his flat little ego by doing a brisk trade in

the recreational yuppie drug-of-choice. He's dealing, he's retailing to

529

his well-heeled friends. He's been sampling the product pretty heavily too - you'll be lucky if he

ends up with a nose. What do you think he does at the Toxique, night after night? The place is

notorious! He's not doing it just for the money - he enjoys it! And you know what he enjoys most

of all? Sneaking around behind your back! Pulling a fast one on Mom! Like father, like son.

That

boy has a problem, Roz, and his problem is you!"

Roz has gone limp. She doesn't want to believe any of this, but parts of it ring true. She remembers the envelope of white powder she found, she remembers Larry's secrecies, the blanks

in his life that she can't fill in, and her fear comes flooding back, with a big helping of guilt added

in. Has she been overprotective? Is Larry trying to escape from her? Is she a devouring mother?

Worse: is Larry a hopeless addict?

"So I'd think twice, if I were you," says Zenia. "Because if you won't pay for information, there are people who will. I think it would make a nice headline, don't you? Son of

Prominent

Citizen jailed in Hotel Drug Bust. Nothing would be easier for me to arrange. Larry trusts me.

He

thinks I need him. All I have to do is whistle and your sonny-boy comes running with his pockets

full. He's really cute, you know. He's got cute buns. He'll be appreciated in the slammer.

What do

they give them now? Ten years?"

Roz is stupefied; she can't take it all in. She gets up out of her chair and walks to the window,

to the French doors leading onto the balcony. From here she can see a new-moon sliver of the

fountain, down below. It hasn't been drained yet; brown dead leaves are floating in it. Most likely

the hotel has a staff shortage, because of the Recession. "I need to talk to him," she says.

"I wouldn't do that if I were you," says Zenia. "He'll panic, he'll do something rash. He's an amateur, he'll give himself away. And right now he owes his suppliers quite a lot of money. I know who they are and they aren't nice people. They won't

530

like it if he flushes the stuff down the toilet. They won't get paid, and as a rule they react badly to

that. They don't like it either if people get caught and then talk about them. They don't fool around. Your boy Larry could get his fingers burned. Actually, he could end up in a ditch somewhere, minus a few parts:'

This can't be happening, thinks Roz. Sweet, serious Larry, in his boy's room with the school trophies and the pictures of boats? Zenia is a liar, she reminds herself. But she can't afford to

dismiss her story, because what if- for once - it's true? ,

The thought of Larry dead is too much to bear. She would never survive it. This thought is lodged like a splinter of ice in her heart; at the same time she feels as if she's been teleported into

some horrible daytime soap, with hidden iniquities and sinister intrigues and bad camera angles.

She could sneak up behind Zenia, bop her on the head with a lamp or something. Tie her up

with pantyhose. Make it look like a sex killing. She's read enough trashy novels like that, and God

knows it would be plausible, it's just the kind of sordid ending a woman like Zenia deserves.

She

populates the room with detectives; cigar-smoking detectives dusting the furniture for

fingerprints, fingerprints she will have taken care to wipe away...

"I don't have my chequebook with me," she says. "It'll have to be tomorrow"

"Make it cash," says Zenia. "Fifty thousand, and that's a bargain; if it wasn't a recession I'd ask

double. Small old bills, please; you can send it by courier, before noon. Not here though, I'll call

you in the morning and tell you where. Now, if you don't mind, I'm in a bit of a hurry."

Roz takes the elevator down. All of a sudden she has a crashing headache, and on top of that

she feels ill. It's the fear and anger, churning around inside her like a salmonella dinner. So, God,

is this my fault or what? Is this the double-cross I have to bear? So you gave with one hand and now you're

taking away with the

531

other? Or maybe you think it's a joke! It occurs to her, not for the first time, that if everything is part

of the Divine Plan then God must have one heck of a warped sense of humour.

Llv

"What're you going to do?" says Tony.

"Pay up," says Roz. "What are my options? Anyway, it's only money."

"You could talk to Larry," says Tony. "After all, Zenia lies her head off. She could be making it all up."

"First I'll pay," says Roz. "Then Zenia will take a plane. Then I'll talk to Larry. " It strikes her that Tony doesn't always get it, about kids. Even five per cent true would be too much; she can't

take the risk.

"But what are we going to do about her?" says Charis. "About Zenia?" says Roz. "After tomorrow she'll be somewhere else. Personally I would like her permanently removed, like a wart. But I don't see that happening." She's lighting another cigarette, from the candle in its red

glass holder. Charis gives a timid cough and flaps a hand at the smoke.

"I don't see," says Tony slowly, "that there's anything we can` do about her. We can't make her vanish. Even if she does go, she'll be back if she wants to come back. She's a given.

She's just

there, like the weather.

"Maybe we should give thanks," says Charis. "And ask for help:" Roz laughs. "Thanks for what? Thank you, God, for creating Zenia? Only next time don't bother?"

"No," says Charis. "Because she's going away, and we're still all right. Aren't we? None of us

gave in:" She's not sure exactly how to put it. What she means is, they were tempted, each one of

them, but they didn't succumb. Succumbing would have

532

been killing Zenia, either physically or spiritually. And killing Zenia would have meant turning into Zenia. Another way of succumbing would be believing her, letting her in the door, letting her take them in, letting her tear them apart. They did get torn apart some, but that was because they didn't do what Zenia wanted. "What I mean is. . ."

"I think I know what you mean," says Tony.

"Right," says Roz. "So, let's give thanks. I'm always in favour of that. Who're we thanking and what do we do?"

"A libation," says Charis. "We've got everything here for it, even the candle." She lifts her wineglass, in which there's an inch of white wine left, and pours a thimbleful onto the pink

remains of her Assorted Sorbets. Then she bows her head and closes her eyes briefly. "I asked

for help," she says. "For all of us. Now you." She also asked for forgiveness, for all of them too. She feels this is right, but she can't say why, so she doesn't mention it.

"I'm not sure about this," says Roz. She can see the need for a celebration, touch wood it's not premature, but she'd like to know which God is being invoked here - or rather which version of God - so she can guard against lightning strikes by any of the others. But she pours. So does Tony, smiling a little tensely, her bite-your-tongue smile. If this were three hundred years ago, she thinks, we'd all be burned at the stake. Zenia first, though. Without a doubt, Zenia first.

"That's all?" she says.

"I like to sprinkle a little salt, into the candle flame," says Charis, sprinkling it.

"I just hope nobody's watching," says Roz. "I mean, how long before we are three genuine certified batty old crones?" She's feeling slightly light-headed; maybe it's the codeine pills she

took for her headache.

"Don't look now," says Tony.

"Crones is not so bad," says Charis. "Age is just attitude." She's staring dreamily at the candle.

533

"Tell that to my gynecologist," says Roz. "You just want to be a crone so you_ can mix potions."

"She already mixes them," says Tony.

Suddenly Charis sits up straight in her chair. Her eyes widen. Her hand goes over her mouth.

"Charis?" says Roz. "What is it, sweetie?" "Oh my God," says Charis.

"Is she choking?" says Tony. Possibly Charis is having a heart attack, or a fit of some kind.

"Hit her on the back!"

"No, no," says Charis. "It's Zenia! She's dead!" "What?" says Roz.

"How do you know?" says Tony.

"I saw it in the candle," says Charis. "I saw her falling. She was falling, into water. I saw it! She's dead." Charis begins to cry. "Honey, are you sure that wasn't just wishful thinking?" says

Roz gently. But Charis is too absorbed in her grief to hear.

"Come on," says Tony. "We'll go to the hotel. We'll check. Otherwise," she says to Roz, over the top of Charis's head, which is bowed into her hands now and swaying back and forth, "none

of us is going to get a decent night's sleep:" This is true: Charis will worry about Zenia being dead, and Tony and Roz will worry about Charis. It's worth a short car ride to avoid that.

As they get their coats on, as Roz settles the bill, Charis continues to sob quietly. Partly it's the

shock; the whole day has been a shock, and this an even bigger shock. But partly it's because she

saw more than she's told. She didn't only see Zenia falling, a dark shape turning over and over,

the hair spreading like feathers, the rainbow of her life twisting up out of her like grey gauze, Zenia shrinking to blackout. She also saw someone pushing her. Someone pushed Zenia, over

the edge.

Although she couldn't see it clearly, she thinks she knows who that person was. It was Karen,

who was left behind somehow; who stayed hidden in Zenia's room; who waited until Zenia had

opened the door onto the balcony and then came up

534

behind her and shoved her off. Karen has murdered Zenia, and it's Charis's fault for holding Karen away, separate from herself, for trying to keep her outside, for not taking her in, and Charis's tears are tears of guilt.

That is just one way of putting it, of course. What Charis means, she explains to herself, is that she wished Zenia dead. And now Zenia is dead. A spiritual act and a physical one are the

same, from the moral point of view. Karen-Charis is a murderer. She has blood on her hands.

She's unclean.

They go in Roz's car, the smaller one. There is some delay while Roz tries to find someone to

park the car; as Roz complains to the man who is finally provided, the Arnold Garden is not exactly Johnny-on-the-spot when it comes to service. Then the three of them walk into the lobby. Charis has pulled herself together by now, and Tony has a steadying hand on her arm.

"She's in the fountain," Charis whispers.

"Shh," says Tony. "We'll see in a minute. Let Roz do the talking."

"I was here this afternoon, checking out your hotel as a convention possibility, and I think I left my gloves," says Roz. She's decided it would be a mistake to say they are looking for Zenia,

on the outside chance that Charis may be right; not that Roz believes it for an instant, but still.

Anyway, if they call the room and there's no answer, what would it prove? Nothing about death.

Zenia could have checked out.

"Who were you talking to?" says the woman behind the counter.

"Oh, this was just preliminary," says Roz. "I think I left them out there in the courtyard. On the edge of the fountain:" "We keep that door locked at this time of year," says the woman.

"Well, it wasn't locked this afternoon," says Roz belligerently, "so I just had a look around.

It's

such a nice patio for

535

cocktails, out by the fountain, is what I thought. That would be in June. Here's my card:'

The card has an improving effect. "All right, Ms. Andrews, I'll have that unlocked for you right away," says the woman. "As a matter of fact we often use it for cocktails. We could do a

buffet lunch out there for you, too; in the summer there's tables:" She motions to the concierge.

"And could you have the outside lights turned on?" says Roz. "I might have dropped my gloves in the fountain. Or they could've blown in:"

Roz's idea is to have the whole place lit up like a Christmas tree so Charis will be able to see

as plain as day that Zenia is nowhere in view. The three of them go out through the glass patio

door and stand together, waiting for illumination. "It's all right, honey, there's nothing," Roz whispers to Charis.

But when the lights go on, big floodlights from above and also from under the water, there is Zenia, floating face down among the dead leaves, her hair spread out like seaweed.

"My God," Tony whispers. Roz stifles a scream. Charis doesn't make a sound. Time has folded in upon itself, the prophecy has come true. But there are no dogs. Then it comes to her.

We are the dogs, licking her blood. In the courtyard, the Jezebel blood. She thinks she is going to be sick.

"Don't touch her," says Tony, but Charis needs to. She reaches forward, reaches down and tugs, and Zenia revolves slowly, and looks straight at them with her white mermaid eyes.

Lv

She isn't really looking though, because she can't. Her eyes are rolled back into her head: that's

why they're blank, like fish

536

eyes. She's been dead for several hours, or at least that's what the police say when they arrive.

The hotel people are very worried. A dead woman in their fountain is not the kind of publicity they need, especially with business down the way it is. They seem to think it's all Roz's

fault for suggesting that the lights be turned on, as if this is what caused Zenia to materialize in

the fountain. But as Roz points out to the concierge, daylight would have been worse: hotel guests would be having breakfast in their rooms, going out, on the balcony for a little fresh air

and a cigarette, looking down, and you can imagine the uproar then.

Because they were the ones who found the body, Tony and Roz and Charis have to wait around. They have to answer questions. Roz grabs hold of the conversation and quickly sticks in

her story about the gloves; it would not be at all wise to tell the police that they'd rushed over to

the Arnold Garden Hotel because Charis saw a vision while staring into a candle. Roz has read

enough detective novels to know that such a story would immediately cast suspicion on Charis.

Not only would the police think she's a nutbar - well, objectively speaking, Roz can see it - but

they'd also think she's a nutbar capable of shoving Zenia off the balcony herself, and then having

amnesia, followed by an attack of psychedelic vision-producing guilt.

At the back of Roz's mind there's a sliver of suspicion: maybe they'd be right. There was enough time for Charis to come back to the hotel before turning up at the Toxique for dinner.

She could have done it. So could Tony, who has been frank about her murderous intentions. So

could Roz herself, for that matter. No doubt the fingerprints of the three of them are all over the

room.

Maybe it was someone they don't even know, some stranger, one of those pursuing gun-runners or whatever, in that yarn Zenia fobbed off on Tony. But Roz doesn't credit that.

Instead,

there's a worse possibility, much worse: it might have been Larry. If what Zenia said was true, he

would have had a good motive.

537

He was never a violent child, he would walk away from the other kids rather than argue; but Zenia could have threatened him in some way. She could have tried to blackmail him. He could

have been on drugs. What does Roz really know about Larry, now that he's grown up? She

needs

to get home as soon as possible and find out what he's been up to.

Tony has dragged Charis off to one side to keep her out of harm's way. She just hopes Charis

will shut up about her vision, which - Tony has to admit - was accurate enough, though somewhat after the fact. But what really happened? Tony counts the possibilities: Zenia fell, Zenia jumped, Zenia was pushed. Accident, suicide, murder. Tony inclines towards the third:

Zenia was killed - surely - by person or persons unknown. Tony's glad she took her gun home, in

case there are bullet holes, although she didn't see any. She doesn't think Charis could have done

it, because Charis wouldn't hurt a fly - it being her belief that flies might be inhabited by someone

related to you in a previous life - but she's not that sure about Roz. Roz has a temper, and can be

impetuous.

"Did anyone know this woman?" says the policeman. The three of them glance at one another. "Yes," says Tony. "We all came to see her, earlier today," says Roz.

Charis starts to cry. "We were her best friends," she says. Which, thinks Tony, is news to her.

But it will have to do for now.

Roz drives Charis to the ferry terminal, and then she drives Tony home. Tony goes up the stairs

to West's study, where he's plugged into two of his machines via the earphones. She turns off his

switch.

"Did Zenia call here?" she says. "What?" says West. "Tony, what is it?"

"This is important," says Tony. She knows she's sounding fierce but she can't help it. "Have you been talking to Zenia?"

538

Has she been here?" She finds the idea of Zenia rolling around on the carpet with West among

the synthesizers highly distasteful. No: unbearable.

Maybe, she thinks, West did it. Maybe he went over to Zenia's hotel room to beg and plead, hoping to run off with her again, and Zenia laughed at him, and West lost it and heaved her off

the balcony. If that's what happened Tony wants to know. She wants to know so she can shield

West, think up a watertight alibi for him, save him from himself.

"Oh, yeah," says West. "She did call, I don't know - a week ago. But I didn't talk to her, she just left a message on the machine."

"What did it say?" says Tony. "Why didn't you tell me? What did she want?"

"Maybe I should've mentioned it," says West. "But I didn't want you to get hurt. I mean, we both thought she was dead. I guess I would've liked her to stay that way."

"Really?" says Tony.

"She didn't want to talk to me," says West, as if he knows what Tony's been thinking. "She wanted you. If I'd had her on the phone in person I would've told her to forget it; I knew you wouldn't want to see her. I did jot it down - where she was staying - but after I thought things over, I threw it out. She's always been bad news."

Tony feels herself softening. "I saw her, though," she says. "I saw her this afternoon. She seemed to know that your study's on the third floor. How would she know that, if she's never been here?"

West smiles. "It's on my answering machine. `Third floor, Headwinds: Remember?"

By this time he's unwired and standing up. Tony goes over to him and he folds himself up like

a bridge chair and wraps his knotted-rope arms around her, and kisses her on the forehead. "I

like it that you're jealous," he says, "but you don't need to be. She's nothing, any more:"

539

Little does he know, thinks Tony. Or else he does know and he's pretending not to.

Squashed

up against his torso, she takes a sniff of him, to see if he's been drinking a lot. If he has, it will be

a dead giveaway. But there's nothing besides the usual mild scent of beer. "Zenia is dead," she

tells West solemnly.

"Oh, Tony," says West. "Again? I'm really sorry." He rocks her to and fro as if she's the one who needs to be consoled, and not him at all.

When Charis gets back to her house, still shaky but under control, there's a light on in the kitchen. It's Augusta, taking a long weekend break, paying a visit. Charis is glad to see her, though

she wishes she'd had time to tidy up first. She notes that Augusta has washed the dishes from the

last couple of days and has done away with a couple of major spider webs, though she's known

better than to disassemble Charis's meditational altar. She has noted it, however.

"Mom," she says, after Charis has greeted her and has put on the kettle for bedtime tea, "what's this chunk of stone and this pile of dirt and leaves doing on the living-room table?"

"It's a meditation," says Charis.

"Christ;" Augusta mutters. "Can't you put it somewhere else?" "August," says Charis, a little tersely, "it's my meditation, and it's my house."

"Don't snap at me!" says August. "And Mom, it's Augusta. That's my name now"

Charis knows this. She knows she should respect August's new name, because everyone has a

right to rename herself according to her inner direction. But she chose August's original name

with such love and care. She gave it to her, it was a gift. It's hard for her to let it go.

"I'll make you some muffins," she says, attempting to conciliate. "Tomorrow. The ones with the sunflower seeds. You always liked those."

540

"You don't have to keep giving me stuff, Mom," says Augusta, in an oddly grown-up voice. "I love you anyway." Charis feels her eyes watering. Augusta hasn't said anything this affectionate

for some time. And she does find it difficult to believe - that a person would love her even when

she isn't trying. Trying to figure out what other people need, trying to be worthy. "It's just, I worry about you," she says. "About your health." This isn't really the part of Augusta that worries

her, but it stands in for the other, more spiritual things. Though health is a spiritual thing too.

"No kidding," says Augusta. "Every time I come home you try to stuff me full of veggie burgers. I'm nineteen, Mom, I take care of myself, I eat balanced meals! Why can't we just have

fun? Go for a walk or something."

It's unusual for Augusta to want to spend time with Charis. Maybe Augusta isn't totally hard, not lacquered and shiny all the way through. Maybe she has a soft spot. Maybe she is part

Charis,
after all.

"Did you mind a lot, not having a father?" Charis asks. "When you were little?" She's been on the verge of asking this for a long time, although she's feared the answer because surely it was her fault that Billy had left. If he'd run away it was her fault for not being appealing enough to keep him, if he'd been kidnapped it was her fault for not taking better care of him: Now, though, she has some other possible views of Billy. Whether Zenia was lying or not, maybe it's just as well Billy didn't stick around.

"I wish you'd stop feeling so guilty," says Augusta. "Maybe I minded when I was small, but look around you, Mom, this is the twentieth century! Fathers come and go - a lot of the kids on the Island didn't have them. I know some people with three or four fathers! I mean, it could have been worse, right?"

Charis looks at Augusta and sees the light around her. It's a light that's hard like a mineral and also soft, a glow like the

541
luminosity of a pearl. Inside the layers of light, right at the centre of Augusta, there's a small wound. It belongs to Augusta, not to Charis; it's for Augusta to heal.

Charis feels absolved. She puts her hands on Augusta's shoulders, gently so Augusta will not feel seized, and kisses her on the forehead.

Before she goes to bed, Charis does a meditation on Zenia. She needs to do this, because

although she has often thought about Zenia in relation to herself, or to Billy, or even to Tony and Roz, she has never truly considered what Zenia was in and by herself the Zenia-ness of Zenia. She has no object, nothing belonging to Zenia, to focus on, so instead she turns off the

lights in the living room and stares out the window, into the darkness, towards the lake.

Zenia

was sent into her life - was chosen by her - to teach her something. Charis doesn't know what it was yet, but in time she will uncover it.

She can see Zenia clearly, Zenia lying in the fountain, with her cloudy hair floating. As she watches, time reverses itself and life flows back into Zenia, and she lifts out of the water and flies

backwards like a huge bird, up onto the orange balcony. But Charis can't hold her there, and she

falls again; falls down, turning slowly, into her own future. Her future as a dead person, as a person not yet born.

Charis wonders whether Zenia will come back as a human being or as something else. Perhaps the soul breaks up as the body does, and only parts of it are reborn, a fragment here, a

fragment there. Perhaps many people will soon be born with a fragment of Zenia in them. But

Charis would rather think of her whole.

After a while she turns out the other downstairs lights and goes upstairs. Just before she

climbs into her vine-covered bed, she gets out her notebook with the lavender paper and her pen with the green ink, and writes: Zenia has returned to the Light.

542

She hopes this is so. She hopes that Zenia is not still hovering around, alone and lost, somewhere out there in the night.

After Roz takes Tony home she goes home herself, as fast as she can because she's worried sick,

what if there's cocaine stashed all over her house, tucked into the tea leaves or the cookie jar in

little plastic bags, what if she finds the place full of sniffer dogs and men named Dwayne, who

will address her as ma'am and say they are just doing their jobs? She even runs a red light, not a

thing she normally does, although everyone else seems to these days. She shucks her coat in the

hall, kicks off her shoes, and goes on the hunt for Larry.

The twins are in the family room, watching a rerun of Star Trek.

"Greetings, Earthmom," says Paula.

"Maybe she isn't Mom," says Erin. "Maybe she's a Replicant. "Hi, kids," says Roz. "It's way past your bedtime! Where's Larry?"

"Erla's done our homework," says Erin. "This is our reward:" "Mom, what's wrong?" says Paula. "You look like shit." "It's old age," says Roz. "Is he home?"

"He's in the kitchen," says Erin. "We think:" "Eating bread and honey," says Paula.

"That's the Queen, stupid," says Erin. They giggle.

Larry is sitting on one of the high stools, at the kitchen counter, wearing jeans and a black T-shirt and bare feet, and drinking a bottle of beer. Across from him on another high stool is Boyce, neat in his suit; he's got a beer, too. When Roz walks into the room they both look up.

They both seem equally anxious.

"Hi, Boyce," says Roz. "What a surprise! Is something wrong at the office?"

"Good evening, Ms. Andrews," says Boyce. "Not at the office, no:"

543

"I have something to discuss with Larry, " says Roz. "If you don't mind, Boyce:"

"I think Boyce should stay," says Larry. He looks dejected, as if he's failed an exam: there must be something to Zenia's story. But what's Boyce got to do with it?

"Larry, I'm concerned," says Roz. "What are you into with Zenia?"

"Who?" Larry says, too innocently. "I need to know," says Roz.

"I dream of Zenia in her light brown lair," Boyce murmurs as if to himself.

"She told you?" says Larry.

"About the drugs?" says Roz. "Oh God, it's true! If you've got any drugs in this house, I want them out of here, right now! So you were having a thing with her!"

"Thing?" says Larry.

"Thing, fling, whatever," says Roz. "Holy Moly, don't you know how old she was? Don't you know how vicious she was? Don't you know what she did to your father?"

"Thing?" says Boyce. "I don't think so." "What drugs?" says Larry.

"It was only a few times," says Boyce. "He was experimenting. My nose aches, and a drowsy

numbness pains my sense. Keats. He's given it up, as of now - right, Larry?"

"Then you weren't her dealer?" says Roz. "Mom, it was the other way around," says Larry.

"But Charis saw you kissing her, right out on the street!" says Roz. She feels very weird,

talking this way to her own son. She feels like a snoopy old crock.

"Kissing?" says Larry. "I never kissed her. She was whispering in my ear. She was telling me

that we were being followed around by this deranged older woman. Maybe it looked like kissing,

to Aunt Charis, because that woman was definitely her."

544

"Not kissing, but hissing," says Boyce. "Like `not waving but drowning.' Stevie Smith."

"Boyce, shut up for a minute," says Larry irritably. They seem to know each other quite a lot better than Roz has assumed. She's thought they'd just met the one time, at the

Father-Daughter

Dance, and then a few nods at the office, as Larry came and went. Apparently not.

"But you went to her hotel room a lot," says Roz. "I know it for a fact!"

"It's not what you think," says Larry.

"You realize she's dead?" Roz says, playing her ace. "I just came from there, they just fished her out of the fountain!" "Dead?" says Boyce. ",`Of what? A self-inflicted snakebite?" "Who

knows?" says Roz. "Maybe somebody threw her off the balcony."

"Maybe she jumped," says Boyce. "When lovely woman stoops to folly, and finds too late that

men betray, they jump off balconies."

"I just hope to God you had nothing to do with it," says Roz; to Larry.

Boyce says quickly, "He couldn't have, he was nowhere near her tonight. He was with me."

"I was trying to talk her out of it," says Larry. "She wanted money. I didn't have enough, and I could hardly ask you for some.

"Talk her out of what? Money for what?" says Roz. She's almost yelling.

"For not telling you," says Larry miserably. "I thought I could keep it secret. I didn't want to make things any worse - I thought you'd been upset enough, because of Dad, and everything."

"Judas Priest; for not telling me what?" shouts Roz. "You'll be the death of me!" She sounds exactly like her own mother. All the same, so sweet, Larry trying to protect her. He doesn't

want to come home and find her flopping around on the kitchen floor, the way he did before.

"Boyce," she says, more gently, "have you got a cigarette?"

Boyce, ever prepared, hands her the package and flicks his lighter for her. "I think it's time," he says to Larry.

Larry gulps, stares at the floor, looks resigned. "Mom," he says, gay."

Roz feels her eyes bugging out like those of a strangled rabbit. Why didn't she see, why couldn't she tell, what's the matter with her anyway? Nicotine grabs at her lungs, she really must

quit, and then she coughs, and smoke billows from her mouth, and maybe she's about to have a

premature heart attack! That's what she'll do, fall to the floor in a heap and let everyone else deal

with this, because it's way beyond her.

But she sees the distress in Larry's eyes, and the appeal. No, she can handle it, if she can bite

her tongue hard enough. It's just that she wasn't prepared. What's the right thing to say? I love

you anyway? You're still my son? What about my grandchildren?

"But all those bimbos you put me through!" is what she comes out with. She's got it now: he was trying to please her. Trying to bring home a woman, like some kind of dutiful exam certificate, to show Mom. To show he'd passed.

"A man can but do his best," says Boyce. "Walter Scott." "What about the twins?" Roz whispers. They are at a formative stage; how will she tell them?

"Oh, the twins know," says Larry, relieved that he's got at least one corner covered. "They worked it out pretty fast. They say it's cool." That figures, thinks Roz: for them, the fences once

so firmly in place around the gender corrals are just a bunch of rusty old wire.

"Think of it this way," says Boyce affectionately. "You're not losing a son, you're gaining a son."

"I've decided to go to law school," says Larry. Now that the

546

worst is over and Roz hasn't croaked or burst, he looks relieved. "We want you to help us decorate our apartment:" "Sweetie," says Roz, taking a deep breath, I'd be glad to:' It's not that

she's prejudiced, and her own marriage wasn't such a terrific argument for heterosexuality, and

neither was Mitch, and she just wants Larry to be happy, and if this is how he plans to do it, fine,

and maybe Boyce will be a good influence and make him pick his clothes up off the floor and

keep him out of trouble; but it's been a_ long day. Tomorrow she' - 11 be genuinely warm and

accepting. For tonight, hypocrisy will have to do.

"Ms. Andrews, you're the glass of fashion and the mould of form," says Boyce.

Roz spreads her hands wide, raises her shoulders, pulls down the, corners of her mouth.

"Tell

me," she says. "What are my options?"

Men in overcoats come to visit. They want to know a lot of things about Zenia. Which of her three passports is real, if any. Where she actually came from. What she was doing.

Tony is informative, Charis vague; Roz is careful, because she doesn't want Larry involved. But she needn't have worried, because none of these men seems to be the least interested in

Larry. What they are interested in is Zenia's two packed suitcases, left neatly on the bed, one of

them with eleven little plastic bags of white powder in them, or so they say. A twelfth bag was

open, beside the phone. Not nose candy either: heroin, and ninety per cent pure. They look out

from their immobile faces, their eyes like intelligent pebbles, watching for twinges, for hints of

guilty knowledge.

They are also interested in the needle found on the balcony, they continue, and in the fact that Zenia died of an overdose before even hitting the water. Could she have been trying the

stuff out, without knowing the unusual strength of what she was

547

buying, or selling? There were track marks on her left arm, although they looked old.

According to the overcoats, there have been more and more overdoses like that; someone is

flooding the market with high-octane product, and even the experienced aren't prepared.

There were nobody's fingerprints on the needle, except Zenia's, they tell her. As for her swan dive into the fountain, she could have fallen. She was a tall woman, and the

sheet-metal

balcony railings were really too low for safety; standards should be improved. Such a thing

is

possible. If she'd been leaning over. On the other hand, the heroin could have been a plant.

It

might have been murder.

Or it might have been suicide, Tony tells them. She would like them to believe this. She tells them that Zenia may not have been a well person.

Of course, say the men in overcoats politely. We know about that. We found the prescriptions in her suitcase, we traced the doctor. Seems she had a fake health card as well as

some fake passports, but the disease itself was real enough. Six months to live: ovarian cancer.

But there was no suicide note.

Tony tells them there wouldn't have been: Zenia was not really the note-writing kind.

The men in overcoats look at her, their small eyes glinting with scepticism. They don't buy any of these theories, but they don't have another one, not one that holds water.

Tony sees how it will be: Zenia will prove too smart for the men in overcoats. She will outfox them, just as she's always outfoxed everyone else. She finds herself being pleased about

this, elated even, as if her faith in Zenia - a faith she didn't realize she had - is being vindicated.

Let them sweat! Why should everyone know everything? It's not as if there are no precedents:

history teems with people who died in unclear ways.

Still, she feels honour-bound to report the conversation

548

about Gerry Bull and Project Babylon, although it's not merely honour that impels her: she hopes very much that if Zenia was murdered it was by professionals, rather than by anyone she

knows. The men tell her they are retracing Zenia's steps, as best they can, via her plane tickets;

she has certainly been in some very odd places in the last little while. But there's nothing conclusive. They shake hands and depart, asking Tony to call them if she hears anything else.

She says she will.

She's left facing the unlikely possibility that all three of Zenia's most recent stories - or parts of them, at least - may have been true. What if Zenia's cries for help really were cries for help,

this time?

After the police are finished there is a cremation. Roz pays for it, because when she tracks down the lawyer, the one who arranged Zenia's funeral the first time around, he is quite annoyed. He takes it as a personal slight that Zenia has chosen to be alive all this time without

consulting him about it. Her will was probated the first time around, not that there was anything to probate because she didn't leave an estate, only a small bequest to an orphanage

near Waterloo that turned out not to exist any more, and on top of that he never got paid. So what do they expect from him?

"Nothing," says Roz. "It will all be taken care of."

"Well, what about it?" she says to Tony and Charis. "Looks like we got left holding the sack. She doesn't seem to have any relatives."

-

"Except us," says Charis.

Tony sees no point in contradicting her, because it is Charis's belief that everyone is

related

to everyone else through some kind of invisible root system. She says she will take charge of

the ashes until the three of them can figure out something more

549

suitable. She puts the canister with Zenia in it down in the cellar, in her box of Christmas tree

decorations, wrapped up in red tissue paper, beside the gun: She doesn't tell West it is there,

because this is a female matter.

OUTCOME

Lvl

So now Zenia is History.

No: now Zenia is gone. She is lost and gone forever. She's a scattering of dust, blown on the

wind like spores; she's an invisible cloud of viruses, a few molecules, dispersing. She will only be

history if Tony chooses to shape her into history. At the moment she is formless, a broken mosaic; the fragments of her are in Tony's hands, because she is dead, and all of the dead are in

the hands of the living.

But what is Tony to make of her? The story of Zenia is insubstantial, ownerless, a rumour only, drifting from mouth to mouth and changing as it goes. As with any magician, you saw what

she wanted you to see; or else you saw what you yourself wanted to see. She did it with mirrors.

The mirror was whoever was watching, but there was nothing behind the two-dimensional image

but a thin layer of mercury.

Even the name Zenia may not exist, as Tony knows from looking. She's attempted to trace its

meaning - Xenia, a Russian word for hospitable, a Greek one pertaining to the action of a foreign

pollen upon a fruit; Zenaida, meaning daughter of Zeus, and the name of two early Christian martyrs; Zillah, Hebrew, a shadow; Zenobia, the third-century warrior queen of Palmyra in Syria,

defeated by the Emperor Aurelian; Xeno, Greek, a stranger, as in xenophobic; Zenana, Hindu, the

women's quarters or harem; Zen, a Japanese meditational religion; Zendic, an Eastern practitioner

of heretical magic - these are the closest she has come.

Out of such hints and portents, Zenia devised herself. As for the truth about her, it lies out of reach, because - according-to the records, at any rate - she was never even born.

553

But why bother, in this day and age - Zenia herself would say - with such a quixotic notion as the truth? Every sobersided history is at least half sleight-of-hand: the right hand waving its

poor snippets of fact, out in the open for all to verify, while the left hand busies itself with its own devious agendas, deep in its hidden pockets. Tony is daunted by the impossibility of accurate reconstruction.

Also by its futility. Why does she do what she does? History was once a substantial edifice, with pillars of wisdom and an altar to the goddess Memory, the mother of all nine muses.

Now

the acid rain and the terrorist bombs and the termites have been at it, and it's looking less and

less like a temple and more and more like a pile of rubble, but it once had a meaningful structure. It was supposed to have something to teach people, something beneficial; some health-giving vitamin or fortune-cookie motto concealed within its heaped-up accounts, most

of them tales of greed, violence, viciousness, and lust for power, because history doesn't concern itself much with those who try to be good. Goodness in any case is problematic, since

an action can be good in intent but evil in result, witness missionaries. This is why Tony prefers battles: in a battle there are right actions and wrong actions, and you can tell them apart

by who wins.

Still, there was once supposed to be a message. Let that be a lesson to you, adults used to say to

children, and historians to their readers. But do the stories of history really teach anything at all? In a general sense, thinks Tony, possibly not.

Despite this she still plods on, still weaves together her informed guesses and plausible assumptions, still ponders over her scraps of fact, her potsherds and broken arrowheads and

tarnished necklace beads, arranging them in the patterns she thinks they must once have made.

Who cares? Almost nobody. Maybe it's just a hobby, something to do on a dull day. Or else 554

it's an act of defiance: these histories may be ragged and threadbare, patched together from

worthless leftovers, but to her they are also flags, hoisted with a certain jaunty insolence, waving bravely though inconsequently, glimpsed here and there through the trees, on the mountain roads, among the ruins, on the long march into chaos.

Tony is down in the cellar, in the middle of the night, because she doesn't feel like sleeping. She's wearing her dressing gown and her wool work socks and her raccoon slippers, which are

finally on their last legs, although they don't have any legs and the legs they are on are hers. One of them has lost a tail, and they now have only one eye between them. Tony has become

used to having eyes on her feet, like the eyes the ancient Egyptians painted on the prows of their boats. They provide extra guidance - extra spirit guidance, you might say - a thing Tony is

coming to believe she needs. Maybe when these slippers kick the bucket she will buy some other ones, other ones with eyes. There's a choice of animal: pigs, bears, rabbits, wolves.

She

thinks she will get the wolves.

Her sand-table map of Europe has been rearranged. Now it's the second decade of the thirteenth century, and what will later be France is being torn apart by religious wars. By this time it's no longer the Christians versus the Muslims: instead it's the Catholics versus the Cathars. The dualist Cathars held that the world was divided between the forces of good and

the forces of evil, the spiritual and the material, God and the Devil; they believed in reincarnation, and had female religious instructors. Whereas the Catholics ruled out rebirth, thought women unclean, and held by force of logic that since God was by definition all-

powerful, evil was ultimately an illusion. A difference of opinion that cost many lives, though there was more at stake than theology, such as who was to control the trade routes and the olive crops, and the women, who were getting out of hand.

555

Carcassonne, stronghold of Languedoc and the Cathars, has just fallen to the bloodthirsty Simon de Montfort and his brutal army of crusading Catholics, after a siege of fifteen days and

a failure of the water supply. Full-spectrum killing ensued. Tony's main focus of interest is not

Carcassonne, however, but Lavour, which was attacked next. It resisted for sixty days under the

leadership of the castle's chatelaine, Dame Giraude. After the town finally succumbed, eighty

knights were butchered like pigs and four hundred Cathar defenders were burned alive, and Dame Giraude herself was thrown down a well by de Montfort's soldiers, with a lot of stones piled on top of her to keep her down. Nobility in war gets a name for itself, thinks Tony, because -there is so little of it.

Tony has chosen May 2, 1211, the day before the massacre. The besieging Catholics are represented by kidney beans, the defending Cathars by grains of white rice. Simon de Montfort

is a red Monopoly man, Dame Giraude a blue one. Red for the cross, blue for the Cathars: it

was their colour. Tony has already eaten several of the kidney beans, which strictly speaking she

should not have done until after the battle. But nibbling helps her to concentrate. i

What was Dame Giraude thinking as she looked out over the battlements, assessing the enemy? She must have known that this battle was unwinnable, that her town and all the people- -

in it were doomed. Did she despair, was she praying for a miracle, was she proud of herself for

having fought for what she believed in? Watching her co-religionists fry the next day, she must

have felt that there was more evidence in support of her own theories of evil than of de Montfort's.

Tony has been there, she has seen the terrain. She has picked a flower, some sort of tough-stemmed vetch; she has pressed it in the Bible, she has stuck it into her scrapbook, under L for

Lavour. She has bought a souvenir, a small satin pillow stuffed with lavender. According to the

local residents, Dame Giraude

556

is still there, still down in the well. That was all they could think of to do, in those days, with women like her: throw them into wells, or off steep cliffs or parapets - some unrelenting vertical -and watch them splatter. ,

Maybe Tony will write something about Dame Giraude, sometime. A study of female military commanders. Iron Hands, Velvet Gloves, she could call it. But there isn't much material.

She doesn't want to go on with this battle right now; she's not in the mood for slaughter. She gets up from her chair and pours herself a glass of water; then, on top of Europe in the thirteenth century, she spreads out a street map, a map of downtown Toronto. Here is the Toxique, here is Queen Street, here is Roz's renovated office building; here are the ferry docks,

and the flat Island where Charis's house still stands. Over here is the Arnold Garden Hotel,

which is now a big clay-sided hole in the ground, a site of future development, because failing

hotels go cheap and someone cut a good deal. Here is McClung Hall, and, to the north, Tony's

own house, with West in it, upstairs in bed, groaning gently in his sleep; with the cellar in it, with the sand-table in it, with the map on it, with the city in it, with the house in it, with the cellar in it, with the map in it. Maps, thinks Tony, contain the ground that contains them.

Somewhere in this infinitely receding headspace, Zeriia continues to exist.

Tony needs the map for the same reason she always uses maps: they help her to see, to visualize the topology, to remember. What she is remembering is Zenia. She owes her this remembrance. She owes her an end.

LUII

Every ending is arbitrary, because the end is where you write The end. A period, a dot of punctuation, a point of stasis. A pinprick in the paper: you could put your eye to it and see through, to the other side, to the beginning of something else. Or, as Tony says to her students, Time is not a solid, like wood, but a fluid, like water or the wind. It doesn't come neatly cut into

evensized lengths, into decades and centuries. Nevertheless, for our purposes we have to pretend it does. The

end of any history is a lie in which we all agree to conspire.

An ending, then. November 11, 1991, at eleven o'clock in the morning, the eleventh hour of the eleventh day of the eleventh month. It's a Monday. The Recession is thickening, there are

rumours of big-company bankruptcies, famine is rolling over Africa; in what was once Yugoslavia there is ethnic feuding. Atrocities multiply, leaderships teeter, car factories grind to

a halt. The war in the Gulf is over and the desert sands are spackled with bombs; the oil fields

still burn, clouds of black smoke roiling out over the greasy sea. Both sides claim to have won,

both sides have lost. It's a dim day, wreathed in mist.

The three of them stand at the back of the ferry as it churns its way through the harbour, outbound towards the Island, trailing the momentary darkness of its wake. From the mainland

they can hear, faintly, the sound of bugles, and of muffled shots. A salute. The water is quicksilver in the pearl-coloured light, the wind is slight, cool, but mild for the time of year, the

month. The pause month, the month of empty branches and held breath, the fog month, the greyish hush before winter.

Month of the dead, month of returning, thinks Charis. She

558

thinks of the grey weeds waving, under the poisonous, guileless water, at the bottom of the lake; of the grey fish with lumpy chemical growths on them, wafting like shadows; of the lamprey eels with their tiny rasping teeth and sucking mouths, undulating among the husks of wrecked cars, the empty bottles. She thinks of everything that has fallen in, or else been thrown. Treasures and bones. At the beginning of November the French decorate their family

graves with chrysanthemums, the Mexicans with marigolds, making a golden path so the spirits

can find their way. Whereas we go in for poppies. The flower of sleep and forgetting. Petals of

spilled blood.

Each one of them has a poppy stuck into the front of her coat. Flimsy plastic but who can

resist, thinks Roz, though she liked the cloth ones better. It's like those awful daffodils for cancer, pretty soon every single flower will be hooked up with some body part or disease. Plastic lupins for lupus, plastic columbines for colostomies, plastic aspidistras for AIDS,

you
have to buy the darn things though, it protects you from getting hit up every time you walk out the door. I have one already. See?

It was Tony who insisted on this particular day. Remembrance Day. Bloody Poppy Day.

Tony is getting more bizarre by the minute, in Roz's opinion; but then, so are they all.

Remembrance Day is only fitting, thinks Tony. She wants to do Zenia justice; but she's remembering more than Zenia. She's remembering the war, and those killed by it, at the time

or later; sometimes wars take a long time to kill people. She's remembering all the wars.

She

craves some idea of ceremony, of decorum; not that she's getting one whole hell of a lot of cooperation from the others. Roz did wear black, as requested, but she's tarted it up with a red-

and-silver scarf. Black brings out my eye bags, she said. I needed something else right next to my face.

Goes

559

with my lipstick - this is Rubicon, hot off the press. Like it? You don't mind, do you honey?

And as for Charis ... Tony looks sideways at the receptacle Charis is holding: not the chintzy copper urn with the imitation Greek handles peddled by the crematorium, more like a stirrup cup really, but something even worse. It's a handmade ceramic flower vase, heavily artistic, in

mottled shades of mauve and maroon, donated to Charis by Shanita, from the stockroom of Scrimpers, where it had been gathering dust for years. Charis insisted on something more meaningful than the tin can that Tony's been keeping in her cellar, so before they got their ferry tickets they transferred Zenia from canister to vase, in the Second Cup coffee shop.

Roz

poured; the ashes were stickier than Tony had expected. Charis couldn't bear to look, in case

there were any teeth. But she's got her nerve back by now; she stands at the railing of the ferry,

her pale hair spread out, looking like a ship's figurehead going backwards and cradling the lurid

flower vase with Zenia's earthly remains inside it. If the dead come back for revenge, thinks Tony, the flower vase alone will be enough to do it.

"Would you say this is halfway?" asks Tony. She wants them to be over the deepest part.

"Looks right to me, sweetie," says Roz. She's impatient to get this over. When they reach

the Island they are all going to Charis's house for tea, and, Roz trusts and hopes, some form of

lunch: a piece of homemade bread, a whole wheat cookie, anything. Whatever it is will taste like straw - that brown-rice, dauntingly healthy, lipstickless taste that is the base note of everything Charis cooks - but it will be food. She has three Mozart Balls tucked into her purse

as a sort of anti-vitamin supplement and starvation fallback. She intended to bring champagne

but she forgot.

It will be a wake of sorts, the three of them gathered around

560

Charis's round table, munching away at the baked goods, adding to the seven-grain crumbs on

the floor, because death is a hunger, a vacancy, and, you have to fill it up. Roz intends to talk: it will be her contribution. Tony has picked the day and Charis the container, so the vocals will be up to Roz.

The funny thing is, she actually feels sad. Now figure that out! Zenia was a tumour, but she was also a major part of Roz's life, and her life is past the midpoint. Not soon, but sooner than

she wants, she'll begin to set like the sun, to dwiAdle. When Zenia goes into the lake Mitch will

go too, finally; Roz will finally be a widow. No. She'll be something more, something beyond that. What? She will wait and see. But she'll take off her wedding ring, because Charis says it

constrains the left hand and that's the hand Roz needs to draw on, now.

She feels something else she never thought she would feel, towards Zenia. Oddly enough, it's gratitude. What for? Who knows? But that's what she feels.

"Should I just pour it out or throw in the whole thing?" says Charis. She has a sneaking wish to

keep the vase for herself. it has a strong energy.

"What would you do with it afterwards?" says Tony, looking at her sternly, and after a moment - in which she pictures the vase full of flowers, or standing empty on a shelf, giving off a baleful crimson light in both cases - Charis says, "You're right:" It would be a mistake to

keep the vase, it would be holding Zenia to the earth; she has already seen the results of that,

she doesn't want a repeat. The mere absence of a body would not stop Zenia; she would just

take somebody else's. The dead return in other forms, she thinks, because we will them to.

"Heave ho, then," says Roz, "last one in's a rotten stinker!" What on earth is she thinking of? Cold water! Summer camp! Talk about mood swings! Not to mention bad taste. How much 561

more of her life is she going to spend showing off, playing for cheap laughs? How old do you

have to get before wisdom descends like a plastic bag over your head and you learn to keep

your big mouth shut? Maybe never. Maybe you get more frivolous with age. Their eyes, their ancient glittering eyes, are gay.

But this is death, and death is Death, capital D, never mind whose, so sober up, Roz.

Anyway she is sober, it's only the way things come out of her. Bite my tongue, God, I didn't mean

it. It's just the way I am.

Tony gives Roz an annoyed glance. What she herself would like is a little gunfire. A ritual cannon shot, the flag lowering to halfmast, a single bugle note quivering in the silvery air. Other dead fighters get that, so why not Zenia? She thinks of solemn moments, battlefield vignettes: the hero leaning on his sword or spear or musket, gazing down with noble and philosophical grief at his freshly killed opponent. Of equal rank, it goes without saying. I am the

enemy you killed, my friend.

All very well, in art. In real battles, more likely a quick rifling of the watch pocket and the cutting off of ears as souvenirs. Old photographs of hunters with one foot on the bear carcass,

clowning around with the sad sawed-off omnivorous ravenous head. Reduction of your sacred

foe to a rug, with all the paintings and poems a kind of decorous curtain to disguise the

gloating discourse going on behind.

"Okay," she says to Charis, and Charis thrusts both arms and both hands and the flower vase straight out from her body, over the railing, and there is a sharp crack, and the vase splits

in two. Charis gives a little shriek and pulls her hands back as if they've been burned. She looks

at them: there's a slight blue tinge, a flickering. The pieces of the vase splash into the water, and Zenia trails off in a long wavering drift, like smoke.

"Holy Moly!" says Roz. "What did that?" "I think she hit it on the railing," says Tony.

562

"No," says Charis in a hushed voice. "It cracked by itself. It was her." Entities can cause things like that, they can affect physical objects; they do it to get your attention.

Nothing Roz or Tony is likely to say will change her mind, so they say nothing. Charis herself is oddly comforted. It pleases her that Zenia would attend her own scattering, make herself known. It's a token of her continuation. Zenia will now be free, to be reborn for another chance at life. Maybe she will be more fortunate next time. Charis tries to wish her well.

Nevertheless she's shaking. She takes the hands held out to her, one on either side, and grips them tightly, and in this way they glide in to the Island dock. Three dark-coated middle-aged women; women in mourning, thinks Tony. Those veils had a purpose - those outmoded

veils, thick and black. Nobody could see what you were doing in there behind them. You could

be laughing your head off. She isn't, though.

No flowers grow in the furrows of the lake, none in the fields of asphalt. Tony needs a flower, however. A common weed, because wherever else Zenia had been in her life, she had also been

at war. An unofficial war, a guerrilla war, a war she may not have known she was waging, but a

war nevertheless.

Who was the enemy? What past wrong was she seeking to avenge? Where was her battlefield? Not in any one place. It was in the air all around, it was in the texture of the world itself, or it was nowhere visible, it was in among the neurons, the tiny incandescent fires of the

brain that flash up and burn out. An electric flower would be the right kind for Zenia, a bright, lethal flower like a short circuit, a thistle of molten steel going to seed in a burst of sparks.

The best Tony can do is a sprig of Queen Anne's lace from Charis's backyard, already dry and brittle. She picks it surreptitiously as the others go in the back door. She will take it home

and press it as flat as possible, and tape it into her scrapbook.

563

She'll place it at the very end, after Tallinn, after Valley Forge, after Ypres, because she is a sentimentalist about dead people and Zenia is dead, and although she was many other things,

she was also courageous. What side she was on doesn't matter; not to Tony, not any more. There may not even have been a side. She may have been alone.

Tony stares up at Zenia, cornered on the balcony with her failing magic, balancing on the sharp edge, her bag of tricks finally empty. Zenia stares back down. She knows she has lost,

but whatever her secrets are she's still not telling. She's like an ancient statuette dug up from a

Minoan palace: there are the large breasts, the tiny waist, the dark eyes, the snaky hair.

Tony

picks her up and turns her over, probes and questions, but the woman with her glazed pottery face does nothing but smile.

From the kitchen she hears laughter, and the clatter of dishes. Charis is setting out the food, Roz is telling a story. That's what they will do, increasingly in their lives: tell stories. Tonight their stories will be about Zenia.

Was she in any way like us? thinks Tony. Or, to put it the other way around: Are we in any way like her?

Then she opens the door, and goes in to join the others.